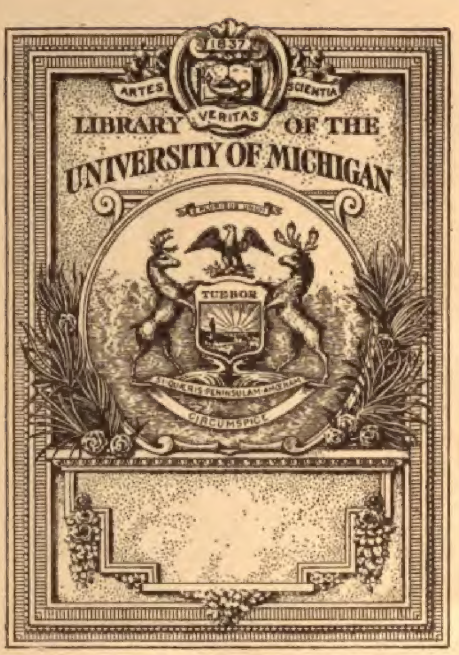
1817
ARTES
VERITAS
SCIENTIA
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
TUEBOR
SI QUAERIS PENINSULAM AMOENAM
CIRCUMSPICE

THE

PARLIAMENTAR

OR

CONSTITUTIONAL

Hiſtory of England

BEING A

FAITHFUL ACCOUNT

Of all the

Moſt remarkable TRANSACTIO

In PARLIAMENT,

From the earlieſt TIMES,

TO THE

Reſtoration of King CHARLES II.

COLLECTED

From the RECORDS, the JOURNALS of both HOUSES, or nal MANUSCRIPTS, ſcarce SPEECHES, and TRACTS; compared with the ſeveral Cotemporary Writers, and c nected, throughout, with the Hiſtory of the Times.

By SEVERAL HANDS.

——*Juvat integros accedere Fontes.*

VOL. XII.

From the Call of the Houſe of Commons, *November* 1, 1642, till Convention at *Oxford*, in *January* 1643.

LONDON,

Printed, and ſold by WILLIAM SANDBY, againſt St. *Dunſ Church, Fleet-ſtreet*, MDCCLIII.

THE

Parliamentary Hiſtory

OF

ENGLAND.

ON the firſt of *November* the Commons *ordered*, That all their Members, living within ſixty Miles of *London*, and not employed in the Service of that Houſe, ſhould attend within three Days; all at a farther Diſtance, within eight Days; and that ſuch as did not appear within the Times limited, ſhould be ſent for by Meſſengers, who were to bring them up.

An. 18. C 1642. Novemb

The Comm require the tendance of Members.

This *Order* was occaſioned by the Thinneſs of the Houſe, for ſome Months paſt, which appears by the following Diviſions extracted from their *Journals*. The moſt material Points, which gave Occaſion to theſe, have been taken Notice of in their proper Order of Time: The Numbers, only, will be therefore ſufficient for this Review.

June 27.	42 againſt 27.		*Aug.* 15.	42 againſt 33.	The State o Houſe at Time.
—— 30.	49 againſt 35.		—— 17.	43 againſt 16.	
July 9.	125 againſt 45.		—— 27.	69 againſt 26.	
—— 19.	69 againſt 51.		*Sept.* 2.	40 againſt 29.	
—— 23.	89 againſt 43.		—— 29.	53 againſt 36.	
—— 26.	50 againſt 33.		In *October* not one Diviſion enter'd.		
—— 28.	82 againſt 32.				

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

It may very justly be inquired, What could c
sion such an Absence, at a Time when so gr
Number of *Resolutions* pass'd, deeply affectin
Constitution of this Kingdom?—A brief Reca
lation of some Transactions in our last Vo
will supply an Answer.

It may be remembered that there was a C
the House on the 16th of *June* last; and, or
Occasion, a *Resolution* pass'd, by a Majority o
Voices against 91, That none of the Abs
should be admitted to take their Seats, till the
made their Excuse to a Committee appoint
that Purpose, and that Excuse reported and all
of by the House. Most of the Members the
sent (whose Names are enter'd in the *Co*
Journals of that Day) were with the King at
and as they could have little Reason to expect
Excuse for their Absence would be accepted
House, it is very probable few of them ever r
ed.—Add to this, That

After the King had issued his *Commission* of
many more Members left the House, and wer
their several Counties to put the same into E
tion: And others were sent, at the same Tir
the Parliament to execute their *Ordinance* f
Militia; most of the Deputy-Lieutenants
Members of the Lower House.

When the Commons, on the eleventh J
August last, *voted*, That they would suppo
Earl of *Essex* with their Lives and Fortune
also *resolved*, That every Member then absent
declare himself at his next coming into the
which undoubtedly kept away many who
Courage enough to do so; whilst some o
a more resolute Disposition lost their Li
both Sides of the Question, at the late B
Edge-Hill. Lastly,

During the Months of *August* and *Se*
last, near fifty Members had been expel
House; and, though Writs were issued
supplying their Places, it is hardly to be in
that many new Elections could be made at

when the *Orders* of the House of Commons were as little regarded by the Sheriffs and returning Officers of some Counties, as the King's *Proclamations* by others; and when a considerable Part of the Kingdom was covered by two opposite Armies. An. 18. Car. 1642. November.

The Names of the Members so expelled, with the Reasons of their Expulsion, and the Places they served for, may not be improper; as they tend to illustrate many Passages in the succeeding Volumes of this Work.†

MEMBERS *expelled in the Month of* August 1642.

4. **Robert Hide*, Serjeant at Law,	*New-Sarum.*
5. *Sir *Ralph Hopton*, Knight of the *Bath*,	*Wells.*
— **Thomas Smith*, Esq;	*Bridgewater.*
8. *Sir *John Pawlett*, Kt. — *Sir *John Stawell*, Knight of the *Bath*,	*Somersetshire.*
9. Sir *Nicholas Slaning*, Kt.	*Penryn.*
10. *John Griffith*, Esq;	*Beaumaris.*
11. **Edward Hyde*, Esq;	*Saltash.*
— **Robert Holborne*, Esq;	*Michell.*
— *Sir *William Penyman*, Bart.	*Richmond.*
— **Edward Kirton*, Esq;	*Milborn-Port.*
12. **John Coventry*, Esq;	*Evesham.*
— *Sir *Edw. Rodney*, Kt.	*Wells.*
16. **Nicholas Weston*, Esq;	*Stafford.*
— *Col *George Goring*,	*Portsmouth.*
20. *Sir *Jo. Packington*, Bart.	*Aylesbury.*
— *Sir *H. Herbert*, Kt.	*Bewdlay.*
— **Samuel Sandys*, Esq;	*Droitwich.*

The three last for executing the *Commission* of *Array*.

22. **Gervase Holles*, Esq;	*Grimsby.*

† For those Places, only, distinguished thus * the *Journals* take Notice of Writs being issued for new Elections; and where we have not mentioned the Reasons for the Expulsion of the respective Members, none are assigned by those Authorities.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Aug. 26. Sir *William Widdrington*, Knt. } *Northumber*

— Sir *Wm Carnaby*, Knt. *Morpeth.*

The laſt two for refuſing to attend the S of the Houſe.

29. *Orlando Bridgeman*, Eſq; *Wigan.*

For aſſiſting Lord *Strange* at *Cheſter.*

— *Roger Kirkby*, Eſq; *Lancaſhire.*

30. Sir *Richard Cave*, Knt. *Litchfield*,

MEMBERS *expelled in* September, 164

2. **Chr. Lukener*, Eſq; *Chicheſter.*

6. Sir *William Saville*, Knt. and Bart. } *Old Sarum.*

— *Henry Bellaſis*, Eſq; *Yorkſhire.*

— *John Bellaſis*, Eſq; *Thirſke.*

— Sir *Henry Slingsby*, Bart. *Knaresbroug*

— Sir *Thomas Danby*, Knt. *Richmond.*

— Sir *George Wentworth*, of *Woolley*, Knt. } *Pontefract.*

— Sir *Thomas Ingram*, Knt. *Thirske.*

— *William Mallory*, Eſq; *Ripon.*

— *Richard Aldburgh*, Eſq; *Aldburgh.*

The laſt nine for neglecting the Servic Houſe, and ſetting their Hands to a contrived in *Yorkſhire*, and ſent u liament. *

— Sir *John Strangeways*, Knt. *Weymout*

For neglecting the Service of Parlian

— Sir *Richard Lee*, Bart. *Salop.*

— Sir *Robert Howard*, Knt. of the *Bath.* } *Biſhops-*

7. Sir *Chriſ. Hatton*, Knt. *Higham*

— Sir *Robert Hatton*, Knt. *Caſtle-R*

Theſe four for executing the *Commiſſ ray* after it was declared illegal, a appearing on Summons.

* See this *Petition* in our Eleventh Volume, p

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Sept. 7. *Jeffrey Palmer*, Esq; *Stamford.*
For not appearing on Summons.

— *Henry Coke*, Esq; *Dunwich.*
— Sir *Tho. Fanshaw*, Knt. *Lancaster.*
These two for neglecting the Service of the House, and not appearing on Summons.

12. *Richard Rogers*, Esq; *Dorsetshire.*
For sending Forces into *Sherborne* Castle.

— *Richard Herbert*, Esq; *Montgomery.*
For putting the *Commission* of *Array* in Execution in the County of *Salop.*

16 **Tho. Chicheley*, Esq; *Cambridgeshire.*
19. Sir *Bevile Grenvile*, Knt. *Cornwall.*
22. Lord Viscount *Falkland*, } *Newport*, Isle of *Wight.*
23. Sir *Frederick Cornwallis*, Knt. of the *Bath.* } *Eye.*
29. Sir *Ralph Sydenham*, Knt. *Bossiney.*

We meet with no Expulsions of Members in *October*; but, on the 24th of that Month one Gentleman was in very great Danger of losing his Seat, if he had not instantly complied with the Terms required by the House for his Continuance in it: For we find in the *Journals* of this Day, That the *Vote* for assisting the Earl of *Essex*, *&c.* being read to Sir *John Evelyn*, Member for *Blechingley*, and his Answer demanded, he desired Time to consider of that *Vote*; upon which he was ordered to withdraw. Then the House fell into Consideration of the Quality of his Offence; and finding, That if any Member might have Liberty, when a Question was proposed, to refuse giving any Answer, it would destroy the Course and Proceedings of Parliament: It was thereupon *resolved*, 'That the said Sir *John Evelyn* shall be suspended from the House, disarmed by the Deputy-Lieutenants of *Surrey*, and committed Prisoner to the *Tower* during the Pleasure of that House.'——But Sir *John Evelyn* desiring to be

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

heard before Judgment given; and, his Requ
ing complied with, he declared himself in th
firmative to the *Vote* concerning the Earl of
and offered to lend 100 *l.* upon the *Propositions.*
House accepted his Answer and his Offer, an
mediately ordered, That the former *Votes* an
tence should be revoked.

Thus much may suffice to give a View
State of the House of Commons during
five Months: We shall, now, proceed w
Business of Parliament.

November 2. Both Houses had been busy
king Orders for opposing Sir *Ralph Hopton*'s
ment, in the West of *England*, and the o
Wales, mentioned in Secretary *Nicholas*'s
which had been communicated to the Citi
London at the *Guildhall*, by the Earl of *Pe*
on the 27th of the last Month.

Proceedings towards a Peace.

These two new raised Armies appeared so
dable to the Parliament, that, in all Probab
stirred up the late Motion for settling a Pea
brought on the further Consideration of
Day. The Result of which was, That to
the further Effusion of Blood, and to se
present Distractions of the Kingdom, a
rence should be held, in which the followi
ter should be communicated to the Co
which the Committee of Safety had receiv
their Lord-General, in answer to one
him on this Occasion.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

The Earl of Essex's Letter on that Occasion.

I Have received a Letter *from you that me*
humble Petition *to be directed to his M*
save the Effusion of more Blood. In the fir
I ought to acknowledge the Favour of your d
hear from me before you send it. In the seco
to declare that an happy Accommodation for
vancement of Religion the Flourishing of th
dom, with its antient Rights, the Saving the

of more Blood, and the Uniting his Majesty to his Parliament, none shall pray for more, nor receive with more Joy, than myself. An. 18. C 1642. Novemb

If I had not, by the Commands of the Parliament, been here to govern this Army, I should have given my Attendance upon you; and should have discharged my Conscience, to the best of my Abilities, honestly and clearly; but, being absent, and not hearing the Debates, nor from whence this hath risen, I must submit myself to their greater Judgments; and shall, with all Obedience, submit both to what they shall do, and to obey their former Commands to advance towards London, *to interpose, with my utmost, between them and all Dangers.*

Your Lordships

Northampton, Nov. 1. 1642.

Humble Servant,

ESSEX.

Notwithstanding the last mentioned Military Preparations, and the Earl of *Essex*'s Declaration of his Readiness to march towards *London*, both Houses thought fit to proceed in their pacifick Measures; and *ordered* a *Petition* to the King to be drawn up for that Purpose: But, previous to this, 'lest the Affections of the People should grow cold,' as Mr *Pymme* expressed himself at the Conference, a *Declaration* was to be published to this Purport:

'Whereas the Lords and Commons have *ordered*, 'That it should be referred to the Committee for 'Safety of the Kingdom, to prepare Heads for an 'humble *Address* to his Majesty, for composing the 'present Differences and Distractions, and settling 'the present Peace of the Kingdom, and to present 'it to the House: Yet, to prevent all Misconstructions or Neglects, whereby our just Defence may 'be hindered, we do *declare*, That the Preparations 'of Forces, and all other necessary Means for the 'Defence of the Protestant Religion, the Privileges 'of Parliament, and the Laws and Liberties of the 'Subject, shall be prosecuted with all Vigour.' Both Hou the same provide fo Defence.

The

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

The Lords agreed to this *Declaration*, and ed it to be forthwith printed and publiſhed.

November.

Nov. 3. A Draught of this *Petition*, or *A* to the King was read by the Lords, and afte agreed to by both Houſes, as follows:

Their Petition to the King for Peace.

WE your Majeſty's moſt loyal Subjects, the and Commons in Parliament aſſembled, affected with a deep and piercing Senſe of the A of this Kingdom, and of the Danger of his M Perſon, as the preſent Affairs now ſtand; an quickened therein with the ſad Conſideration great Effuſion of Blood at the late Battle, and Loſs of ſo many eminent Perſons: And further ing the Addition of Loſs, Miſery, and Danger Majeſty and your Kingdom, which muſt enſue, Armies ſhould again join in another Battle; as, out God's eſpecial Bleſſing, and your Majeſty' currence with your Houſes of Parliament, w probably be avoided; we cannot but believe ſuitable Impreſſion of Tenderneſs and Compa wrought in your Majeſty's Royal Heart, being ſelf an Eye-Witneſs of the bloody and ſorrow ſtruction of ſo many of your Subjects; and th Majeſty doth apprehend what Diminution own Power and Greatneſs will follow; an all your Kingdoms will thereby be ſo weaken to become ſubject to the Attempts of any ill- to this State.

In all which Reſpects we aſſure ourſelves, th Majeſty will be inclined graciouſly to accept t humble Petition, *that the Miſery and Deſol this Kingdom may be ſpeedily removed and pre for the effecting whereof we moſt humbly beſee Majeſty to appoint ſome convenient Place, not f the City of* London, *where your Majeſty will ſed to reſide, untill Committees of both Houſes o liament may attend your Majeſty, with ſome* ſitions *for the Removal of theſe bloody Diſtemp Diſtractions, and ſettling the State of the King in ſuch a Manner, as may conduce to the Pre*

tion of God's true Religion; your Majesty's Honour, Safety, and Prosperity; and to the Peace, Comfort, and Security of all your People.

An. 18. Ca 1642. November

The Houses next considered of the Manner of delivering this *Petition* to the King; and, since the Way they sent their last was so disagreeable to him, it was thought proper, That a Committee of Lords and Commons should be sent with it. But, first, that a *Letter* be wrote to one of the Secretaries of State, or some Peer near his Majesty, to desire a Safe-Conduct for these Persons; and that a Trumpet should be sent before the Messenger, to desire a Safe-Conduct for the Delivery of their *Letter*. Accordingly the Lord *Grey* of *Werk*, Speaker of the House of Lords *pro Tempore*, wrote the following *Letter*, directed to the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, Principal Secretary to his Majesty, or, in his Absence, for Mr. Secretary *Nicholas*, or any of the Lords the Peers attending his Majesty.

Lord Grey's Letter desiring Safe-Conduct for their Messenger.

My Lord,

I Am commanded by the Lords the Peers, and Commons assembled in Parliament, to address, by you, their humble Desires to his Majesty, that he would be pleased to grant his Safe-Conduct to a Committee of Lords and Commons to pass and repass unto his Majesty, that are directed to attend him with an humble Petition *from his Parliament.*

This being all I have in Commission, I rest

Your assured Friend and Servant,

Westminster *this* 3d *of* November, 1642.

GREY of *Werk*,
Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

November 5. Nothing intervened, worth Notice, till this Day; when the Lord *Grey* received an *Answer* to his *Letter* to the Secretary, which was read as follows:

To

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

To the Right Honourable the Lord *Grey* of
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Temp*

My Lord,

Which is granted by the King.

HIS Majesty hath commanded me, in An your Lordship's of the third present, to to you, That he always hath been, and is stil to receive the humble Petition *of either or both of Parliament; and shall take Order, that mittee of Lords and Commons may pass and r him, with the* Petition *of both Houses, as is so as the said Committee consists of Perso have not been by his Majesty either by Name Traitors; or otherwise in some of his* Declara Proclamations *excepted against by Name, Intention declaring to proceed against them as T and so as the said Committee come not with m thirty Persons in their Company, and give N fore-hand of their coming: And for the said tee's better Security, his Majesty, upon the R their Names, will give a Safe-Conduct for the his Hand and Signet. This being all I have mand to deliver to your Lordship, I humbly re*

Your Lordship's

Reading, November 4, 1642.

most humble Se

ED. NICH

To this *Letter*, the Lord *Grey* was dir return the following *Answer*; but since this and the consequent *Rejoinders*, were the cl sinesS of some Days, we shall put them all for the Reader's greater Ease in the Perusa

To the Right Honourable the Lord Viscou *land*, Principal Secretary to his Majesty his Absence, to any of the Lords the tending his Majesty.

My Lord,

Several other Letters in consequence thereof.

I Have received a Command from the Lo Commons in Parliament to send you the N two Lords; that is to say, Algernon *Earl of*

umb

umberland, Philip *Earl of* Pembroke *and* Montgomery, *and of four Members of the House of Commons, Mr.* Pierrepont, *the Lord* Wenman, *Sir* John Evelin *of* Wilts, *and Sir* John Hippisly, *being the Committees of both Houses appointed to attend his Majesty with an humble* Petition *directed from them to his Majesty; desiring your Lordship will be pleased to move his Majesty to send a Safe Conduct, to pass and repass, under his Royal Hand and Signet, for the several Persons aforementioned.* An. 18. C 1642. Novemb

This being all that I have in Commission, I rest

Your Lordship's Friend and Servant,

Westminster, *this* 5*th of* November 1642.

GREY of *Werk*,
Speaker to the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

To the Right Honourable the Lord *Grey* of *Werk*, Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

My Lord,

YOUR Lordship's Letter, of the fifth of November *I shewed his Majesty, who hath expresly commanded me to return your Lordship this* Answer *in these few Words, That his Majesty hath sent (which I have inclosed) a Safe-Conduct, under his Royal Hand and Signet, for the Earl of* Northumberland *and the Earl of* Pembroke *and* Montgomery, *Mr.* Pierrepont, *the Lord* Wenman, *and Sir* John Hippisly; *but hath not admitted Sir* John Evelin *of* Wilts *to attend him, as being included in the Exception made by his Majesty in the Letter sent by Mr. Secretary* Nicholas *to your Lordship of the* 4*th, as by the inclosed* Proclamation, *proclaimed at his Majesty's Court at* Oxford, *and sent, with a* Writ *sealed, into the County of* Wilts, *will appear. His Majesty hath likewise commanded me to signify to your Lordship, That in case the Houses shall think fit to send any other Person in the Place of Sir* John Evelin, *that is not included in the Exception made in Mr. Secretary's Letter beforementioned, his Majesty hath commanded all his Officers, Soldiers and other Subjects to suffer him*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

him as freely to pass and repass as if his Nam been particularly comprised in this Safe-Conduct. This being all that I have in Commission, I r

Reading, *this 6th of* November, 1642.

Your Lordship's humble Serv

FALKLA

His Majesty's SAFE-CONDUCT.

CHARLES *R.*

OUR Will and Pleasure is, and we do strictly charge and command all the Office Soldiers of our present Army, and all our Mi and Subjects whatsoever, to suffer our Right Trus Right Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors Alg *Earl of* Northumberland, *and* Philip *Earl of* broke *and* Montgomery, *and our Right Trust Right Well-beloved Cousin* Thomas *Lord Vi* Wenman, *and our Trusty and Well-beloved* W Pierrepont, *Esq*; *and Sir* John Hippisly, *K (together with their Attendants, not exceedin Number of Thirty) to pass and repass to and fr they being now sent to attend us with a* Petition *both our Houses of Parliament. This our Safe-C under our Royal Hand and Signet, we charg command them, and every of them, punctually to and obey, as they will answer the contrary at uttermost Perils.*

Given at our Court at *Reading* this sixth *vember*, 1642.

The King having objected against Sir John Evelin's being one of the Committee,

Then was read the *Proclamation*, mentio Lord *Falkland*'s Letter, as a Reason why the excepted against Sir *John Evelin* * as one Commissioners; after which a great Debate

* Sir *John Evelin*, Sir *Edward Hungerford*, Sir *Henry L* and *Walter Long*, Esq; all of them Members of the House of mons, were, by Name, excepted in the King's *Proclama* Pardon to the County of *Wilts*, dated at *Oxford*, *Nove* 1642. *Husband's Collections*, p.

in the House of Lords, and the Question being put, Whether the Lord *Falkland*'s last *Answer* should be sent to the Commons with the Sense of this House upon it, or without it? it passed for the latter, and was sent down accordingly. An. 18. 1642 Novem

November 7. The Earl of *Essex* being this Day in the House of Lords, they received a *Message* from the Commons, importing, That now the Lord-General was returned, they ought to remember his great Care of the Army and Hazard of his Person, which he shewed in this Expedition: And, to that Purpose, they desired the Lords to join with them in appointing a Committee of both Houses, to draw up an Acknowledgement of Thanks for his Care, and for his Obedience to their Commands.

A Committee of both Houses was, accordingly, appointed to draw up an Address of Thanks to the Lord-General. The Commons further desired that his Excellency might be commanded to give his Orders to draw out the Army, as speedily and as conveniently as he could, for the Defence of the Kingdom, and to prevent the Outrages of the King's Troopers, *&c.* that House being informed that Prince *Rupert* was now about *Windsor*.

To this the Lord-General said, That the Army had had a long March; but, as soon as they were fit, he would quarter them in such Places as should be most convenient for the Preservation of those Parts.

The same Day the Commons sent up a *Vote* of their House, on the King's Objection to Sir *John Evelin*, to this Purpose:

Resolved, 'That this House holds it to be a Denial in his Majesty, and a Refusal to grant a *Treaty* with the Parliament, in excepting unto one of the Messengers that were to present a *Petition* unto him from both Houses, and denying to grant him a Safe-Conduct.' Both Ho clare this Refusal o on his Pa

The Question being put, by the Lords, Whether this Safe-Conduct should be accepted upon these Terms? It passed in the Negative.

After

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

After this a Committee of both Houses were appointed to go into the City of *London*, to acquaint the Common-Hall with all the Ways the Parliament had used to procure a *Treaty* for a Peace, without being able to effect it; and to quicken them to a Resolution of defending and maintaining their Liberties and Religion, with their Lives and Fortunes. Likewise, the Committee of Safety were ordered to prepare a *Declaration*, upon this Denial of the King's to admit such Members as were appointed, by both Houses, to present their *Petition*; one of the Heads of which was to be, the King's expressing a Readiness to receive a *Petition* from the Rebels in *Ireland*.

And send a Committee to acquaint the City of London therewith.

November 8. Two of the Committees from the Parliament to the City, on the above Occasion, were the Lord *Brooke* and Sir *Henry Vane*, junior; whose Speeches, at the *Guildhall*, being yet preserved, we here subjoin them in their own Words as follows.*

And first Lord *Brooke*.

My Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and the rest of the Gentlemen here assembled,

Lord Brooke's Speech to the Citizens.

'I Am to deliver a Message to you from the Lords and Commons, now assembled in Parliament; but before I do that, I shall crave Leave to excuse something that hath happened: There should have been divers Lords, and some Gentlemen of the House of Commons here, far fitter to have done this Work that is now put upon me, if they could possibly have attended the Service, who were appointed by the House; as the Lord General of the Horse, the Earl of *Bedford*, and some other Lords; but you will all conceive that they, being all Men employed in the Army, could not attend this your Service, tho' they are about your Service and the Good of the Kingdom, which is giving Order for your Safety, and theirs; and therefore, I hope,

(*) From the Collections of the late *Thomas Selater Bacon*, Esq of *Cambridge*, to which we are obliged for many curious Pamphlets of these Times.

hope, you will take it in good Part, that there is no other Appearance here. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Gentlemen, what I have to say to you, in short is this I: suppose at this Time of Action, you will not expect long Prefacings; if you do, I am the unfittest Man in the World to do it: I shall therefore shortly deliver my Message: I doubt not but you have heard some Whisperings of an *Accommodation*; and no Man that is an Honest Man, a Religious Man, a Free Man, that loves Religion and the Kingdom, but would have an *Accommodation*; for nothing is more miserable, and nothing is more distracting than War: But that an *Accommodation* should come upon Terms ignoble and disadvantagious, that never was in the Thought of either House, and I hope never will be; and, I am to tell you, never shall be.

'I am at this Time to intreat you, in the Name of both Houses of Parliament, to go on couragiously, and fight, and prepare yourselves for that that is at Hand: We hear the Enemies approach nearer every Day, who aim at nothing else but to swallow up our Religion, Lives, Liberties, and Estates; and therefore it becomes you to labour to defend them all.

'I have more to say, but it is better said here in the *Votes* of the Houses of Lords and Commons; I desire they should be read unto you, and therein you will fully understand what their Sense is.

Monday, 7th of November, 1642.

The Question being put, Whether a Safe-Conduct shall be accepted upon these Terms? It past with the Negative.

'This was, first, in the House of Commons. The Meaning of this *Vote* is, There was a Safe-Conduct sent by his Majesty to six Persons, two of the House of Lords, *viz.* the Earl of *Pembroke* and the Earl of *Northumberland*, and four of the House of Commons; among these there was one Sir *John Evelin*, of *Wiltshire:* The King would not let him

ave

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

have a Safe-Conduct, because he was one that was named, by him, a Traitor the Day before; and that was done, as is thought, on Purpose to take him off from being one; therefore the House of Commons did look upon that as a Denial, in that he could not have a Safe-Conduct. This *Vote* of theirs was presented to the House of the Lords, and they concurr'd with it, *viz.*

Resolved upon the Question,

This House holdeth this to be a Denial of his Majesty, and a Refusal to grant a Treaty *to the Parliament, in excepting against one of the Messengers that was to present a* Petition *to his Majesty from both Houses to that Purpose, and denying to grant him a Safe-Conduct.*

Resolved, &c.

That Committees of both Houses shall be appointed to go to the City of London, *to acquaint the* Common-Hall *with all the Ways the Parliament hath used to procure a* Treaty *for a Peace, and could not effect it; and to quicken them to a Resolution of defending and maintaining their Liberties and their Religion with their Lives and Fortunes; and that they have appointed a Committee to prepare a* Declaration, *upon this Denial of his Majesty to admit such Members as were appointed by both Houses to present a* Petition *to his Majesty for a* Treaty; *and of his Majesty's expressing his Willingness to receive a* Petition *from the Rebels in* Ireland.

'Here is one Thing more, Gentlemen, that is worth your taking Notice of; this is so well said, I shall not need to say it over again; only here in the latter End you see, there is a Committee appointed to come hither to give you an Account of the Reasons moving them on to this Action; and to shew you all the Ways they have used, if it were possible, to have procured a *Treaty* for a Peace.

'There is another Thing in the End is very remarkable, which you may very well take Notice of: His Majesty will not, but upon Terms altogether unfitting, accept of any *Treaty* from us; yet at

at the same Time, is willing to receive a *Petition* from the Rebels in *Ireland*. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'We are no Rebels; but dutiful in all we do: They are Rebels and Traitors in the Judgment of all Men; and yet he will receive no *Petition* from us; but he will receive a *Petition* from them.'

Sir *Henry Vane*, spoke to this Effect:

My Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and the rest of the Gentlemen here assembled.

'IT is not unknown to you, with what Difficulties, with what Dangers, both Houses of Parliament have a long Time conflicted, for to bring the Liberties, and the Religion, and the Welfare, of this Kingdom into such a Posture as might give all the Inhabitants thereof full Satisfaction. It is not unknown likewise, how busy the Enemies of this great Work have been, to cast Scandals, to cast false Aspersions, upon the Proceedings, upon the Carriage of Parliament; they therefore thought fit (that they might undeceive all Persons of the greatest Malice, and of the greatest Opposition to their Endeavours) not long since to frame a *Petition*; a *Petition* full of Humility, a *Petition* full of Modesty, whereby they did desire his Majesty that they might apply themselves to make such *Propositions* to him, as might effect this great Work. Sir Hen. Vane's.

'This *Petition*, that it might be delivered, they thought fit for to name (as this Noble Lord hath told you) six Persons; two of the Lords House, and four of the House of Commons; Men that they thought altogether without the least Scruple, without the least Exception, knowing that nothing in the Carriage of these Persons could render them liable to Exception, but their Duty and Observance to the Commands of both Houses. When the Names of these Persons were sent to his Majesty, for to have a Safe-Conduct, immediately, I think the very Day before, there came out a *Proclamation* against one of them, excepting him out of the Grace

R. Car. I. 1642. November.

and Favour of his Majesty, as it is termed, and laying him in the Condition of a Rebel and of a Traitor against him, for his Obedience to, and Observance of, the Commands of Parliament.

'This being brought to both Houses, they looked on it as a Business of such great Importance, that if they should suffer any one Member, or any one Person, that, through his Dutifulness and Observance of their Commands, should lie under a Cloud with his Majesty, so as not be admitted to his Presence, but be looked at in such a Condition, as this *Proclamation* put him in: They looked on it, I say, as the greatest Indignity, and the greatest Calumny that could befall a Parliament; and the greatest Discouragement that should lie upon all Men to stand to a Parliament, if they should not be defended and protected: Hereupon they resolved to *declare*, That the Unwillingness lay not in them to make Peace; but it lay in that ill Counsel, and that desperate Counsel, that hath hemm'd in his Majesty; and will not suffer such Points, will not suffer such *Propositions* as these, to take Effect with him; but will labour to destroy all your Estates and Properties, and all that is near and dear to you in this Kingdom.

'The House of Commons, therefore, have thought it fit to acquaint you with these Proceedings; to let you know how careful they are, by all good Ways, and by all good Means, to present their Loyalty and Duty to his Majesty, to take Care of themselves, and all that belongs to you: Bu , when they see all will not take Effect, they doubt not but you will join cordially, and join resolutely, with your Purses, and with your Endeavours, and with all that lies in your Power, to acquit yourselves like Men; to defend yourselves; t defend them that have labour'd in your Work, your Cause, and who are willing to spend the Lives and Blood in your Service to the utmost Mar Therefore they desire this of you, that since th have taken this Care, you will hearken to no ports that shall tend to the Disparagement of t

I

Proceedings; but will unanimously concur to defend yourselves against that Violence and Oppression, that is now almost at your Doors.—— And this is that we have to recommend to you.' An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Then the Lord *Brooke* spoke again.

Gentlemen,

'I Have but one Word more to trouble you with. This Honourable Gentleman, Sir *Henry Vane*, hath expreſt ſo fully all that was in the Meſſage, that, truly, I ſhould wrong him and myſelf too, if I ſhould ſay any more; therefore I ſhall now ſpeak to you of another Thing. It is not fit any Thing that concerns you ſhould be concealed from you. Lord Brooke's ſecond Speech.

'I came this Day to this Place, to this Houſe, about another Buſineſs, which I have already communicated to my Lord Mayor and the Aldermen, and the Committee. I think it will not be unfit you ſhould know it. I have the Conſent of ſome, that underſtand this Buſineſs very well, to what I now ſhall do. Gentlemen, the Meſſage was this, it was a Meſſage from his Excellency; it is to let you know how near the Danger is at Hand, that ſo you may gird up the Loins of your Reſolution, and act like Men of Courage. Gentlemen, Citizens of *London*, (better than whom no Man did in that Army we had lately in the Field) the Enemy's Foot, as we underſtand, are very near *Staines*, their Horſe are about *Kingſton*. We cannot ſay that all are there; but that there are both Horſe and Foot, and it is certain our Foot are going to them: So that the Queſtion is now, What is to be done? This is a certain Truth among all Soldiers, That you muſt keep Evil as far off you as you can; you muſt not let it come near your Doors: You muſt not think to fight in the Sighs, and Tears, and Eyes, and Diſtractions of your Wives and Children; but to go out and meet it valiantly as you have done.

God hath ſhewed himſelf a God of Love and Mercy, and truly we muſt give him all the Honour of that Day; certainly it is the greateſt Victory that

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

ever was gotten; near 2000 (I love to ſpeak with the leaſt) on their Side ſlain, and, I am confident, not 100 on our Side, unleſs you will take in Women and Children, Carmen and Dogs; for they ſlew the very Dogs and all. If you take in Women, Children, Carmen, and Dogs, then they ſlew about 200. But that 100 ſhould be ſlain on one Side, and 2000 on the other Side, is a very miraculous Thing.

'God that dealt ſo wonderfully heretofore, it were to diſtruſt him, if we did not think he would do ſo again. Truly he hath a People among us exceedingly beloved.

'What is it we fight for? It is for our Religion, and for our God, and for our Liberty, and all. And what is it they fight for? For their Luſt, for their Will, and for their Tyranny; to make us Slaves, and to overthrow all.

'Gentlemen, methinks I ſee your Courage by your Faces. I ſpy you ready to do any Thing; and the General's Reſolution is, to go out To-morrow, and do as a Man of Courage and Reſolution; and never Man did like him; for he was not only General, but Common Soldier; for he led up his own Regiment, he led up his own Troop in his own Perſon; and when the Left Troops of Horſe deceived him, he brought up the Right Troops. He himſelf will go out again, and do again as much as he hath done: All this is for your Sakes, for he can be a Free Man, he can be a Gentleman, he can be a great Man, he can go where he will; therefore it is only for your Sakes he is reſolved to go out To-morrow. His Forces are weary, his Forces are ſpent, ſome came but laſt Night into Town, ſome marched above twenty Miles, which is a great March, as ſome that know what it is can tell; but, as weary as they are, he is reſolved to go out; and if you will affect the Cauſe, and join with him Hand and Heart and Sword, he will take it as a Favour; but if you will not, he doubts not but *Gideon*'s Sword will do the Work alone.

'I

'I speak not this that I doubt you, but that you would resolve, that when you hear the Drums beat, (for it is resolved that the Drums shall beat To morrow; our Drums shall beat to lead out our Men, and the Committee's Drums shall beat to lead out their Men) say not, I beseech you, I am not of the Train'd Band, nor this, nor that, nor t'other; but doubt not to go out to the Work, and fight couragiously, and this shall be the Day of your Deliverance.'

An. 18. Car. I 1642. November.

Nov. 9. Notwithstanding the foregoing Speeches to the Citizens of *London* seem to breathe nothing but War, yet the House of Commons thought fit to soften the Harshness of their *Vote* of the 7th; for, this Day, Mr. *Pymme* brought up a different *Resolution*, to which he desired their Lordships Concurrence, *viz.*

Resolved, 'That the *Petition* shall be sent to his Majesty; and the Reasons which induced the Commons to make this *Vote*, he said, were these;

The Commons resolve, again, to send their Petition to the King;

First, 'The great Advantage which should be gained by a settled Peace; for, thereby, they should better attend to the War in *Ireland*; and it would unite the King and Kingdom more closely, and prevent the Loss of our Religion and the Liberties of the Subject; for Peace, upon other Terms than these, they resolved never to accept: That

Secondly, 'The House of Commons did, also, consider the Danger the King's Person was in at the last Battle; and the great Mischiefs that War had already brought upon the Common-Wealth, which would be increased if it should be continued; so much Blood being already spilt and many of great Quality slain; and that Sir *John Evelin* should be left to his Liberty to go along with the rest if he think fit.' *

To this pacific *Vote* the Lords readily agreed; but, as tho' the Commons designed to shew the King the *Olive Branch* in one Hand and the *Sword* in the other,

Which the Lords agree to.

* Lord *Clarendon* remarks, That, by this Expedient, the Commons satisfied themselves, that the leaving Sir *John Evelin* behind them, without bringing another in his Room, was no Submission to the King's Exception.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

other, the subsequent Request came along with it; which was to desire the Lords to join with them in ordering the Lord-General to draw out his Army the next Morning; and that a *Proclamation* should go out that Afternoon for all Soldiers, on Pain of Death, to repair to their Colours: And that the Army might not be at a Loss for Recruits, the Commons sent up the following *Ordinance*.

But, at the same Time, order all Soldiers to join their Regiments,

And pass an Ordinance for encouraging Apprentices to list.

'WHereas, in Times of common Danger and Necessity, the Interest of private Persons ought to give Way to the Public: It is *ordained* and *declared*, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that such Apprentices as have been, or shall be, listed to serve as Soldiers, for the Defence of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom, his Majesty's Royal Person, the Parliament, and the City of *London*; their Sureties, and such as stand engaged for them, shall be secured against their Masters, their Executors, and Administrators, from all Loss and Inconveniences, by Forfeiture of Bonds, Covenants, Infranchisements, or otherwise: And that after this public Service is ended, the Masters of such Apprentices shall be commanded and required to receive them again into their Service, without imposing upon them any Punishment, Loss, or Prejudice for their Absence, in the Defence of the Common-Wealth.

'And the Lords and Commons do further *declare*, That, if it shall appear that the Masters of such Apprentices have received any considerable Loss by the Absence of their Apprentices, they will take care that reasonable Satisfaction shall be made unto them, out of the Public Stock of the Kingdom, according to Justice and Indifferency.'

The Commons, also, desired the Lords to join with them in sending a Committee of both Houses again to the City, to acquaint them with the Reasons that moved the Parliament to send this *Petition* to his Majesty; and to let them know the *Resolution*

tion of the Parliament is, That they will not agree to any Peace, but what shall be fully for the Preservation of Religion, the Liberty of the Subject, and the settling the Quiet of the Kingdom: That if this cannot effectually be done, both Houses are resolved to spend their Lives and Fortunes in the Maintenance thereof.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

To this the Lords agreed, and *ordered*, That the Lord Mayor should be desired to call a Common-Hall, at Six that Evening, if he could, or else at Nine o'Clock next Morning. A Committee of four Lords, with a proportionable Number of Commoners, were appointed to go to the City on this Occasion. At the same Time the Speaker of the House of Lords was ordered to write the following Letter:

To the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, Principal Secretary to his Majesty, or, in his Absence, to any of the Lords the Peers attending his Majesty.

My Lord,

I Am commanded, by the Peers assembled in Parliament, to desire your Lordship to advertise his Majesty, that the late Petition *resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, will be presented unto him; which they believe proper for your Lordship's Knowledge, that so his Majesty may be acquainted with it; and thus I rest*

A Letter sent to inform the King of the said Petition.

Your Lordship's

November *the* 9*th*, 1642.

affectionate Servant,

GREY.

November 10. Committees of both Houses being gone out, on their several Embassies, one to the King, and the other to the City, the House of Lords only met and adjourned to the next Day. In the Committee for the latter, were the Earl of *Holland* and Mr. *Pymme*, whose Speeches at the *Guild-*

And a Committee go to acquaint the City of London therewith.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Guildhall on the Occasion, not being printed in *Rushworth's Collections*, we think deserve a Place in these Enquiries. *

The Earl of *Holland's* Speech.

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen and Inhabitants of the City,

The Earl of Holland's Speech on that Occasion.

'WE are commanded by both Houses of Parliament to come hither, and to deliver to you, that are their great Assistants, an Account of a *Resolution* they have taken to send a *Petition* to his Majesty, grounded upon these Reasons:

'The first is, That there is a Duty towards God to seek Peace, indeed to seek it with all Men; therefore properly and naturally with the King: This they are directed to do. If Peace flies from us, to pursue it, to follow it: This is their holy Duty.

'They have likewise taken into their Thoughts, very seriously, that which may concern the Safety of the King's Person, being engaged in this last Battle, through his own Resolution and Adventures, to put his Person in some Hazard; they have a Tenderness of That, and, amongst other Considerations, it is That which prevails with them, to desire that He may not be in Danger, if it be possible, by a further Pursuance of this Action; which, in all Probability, must come to a second Blow, and that speedily, if there be not some other Way taken for an Accommodation.

'There is another Reason that they are likewise persuaded the more willingly thus to petition and to desire Peace; that is, for the Saving and Recovering the Kingdom of *Ireland* out of the Distress that you have long seen it in. They know the Impossibility for this Kingdom to relieve that, if we continue in these Distractions and Confusions within ourselves; and, therefore, believe nothing can contribute or conduce towards the Recovering of that Kingdom, and the Delivering of those Persons from Danger that you sent thither, but our Quietness and

* *London*, Printed for *Peter Cole*, near the *Royal Exchange*.

and our Peace here. If that Kingdom ſhould fall into other Hands, ſuch Hands as it may likely and probably do, what Inconvenience, what Danger, muſt fall upon this Kingdom, from the Power and the Neighbourhood of that, you all muſt imagine.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'They do likewiſe conſider what Advantages, in the Diſtractions amongſt ourſelves, Foreign States may take, when our own Hands are weakened, and a Deſolation through the whole Kingdom: Thoſe that do malign our Religion, their Conſciences direct them to deſtroy it, as well as their Ambitions to make a Conqueſt of the Nation; how open we ſhall be likewiſe to them for any Prejudice, or any Danger that may fall upon us.

'Beſides, they have a Conſideration of the whole Kingdom, that have ſo long continued in Peace, in the Bleſſings of Peace, ſo long in the Beds of Peace, and in the Arms of Peace, (for theſe hundred Years there have been no Civil Diviſions nor Diſtractions within this Kingdom) and thoſe Abundances that Peace hath procured, and thoſe Happineſſes, which are all likely to be devoured by the Sword of War; as, in every Part of the Kingdom, already you ſee how it begins to deſtroy, with what Height, with what Power, with what Inſolency.

'Theſe are Conſiderations, that have made them believe, that as it is a Duty to God, it is that which they owe likewiſe to the King; it is that which they owe to the Kingdom, in which they have been born and bred; it is likewiſe a Diſcharge of their own Conſciences, that every Body may ſee that it is not their Faults, if Peace be not procured.

'But though they are thus reſolved, and upon theſe Reaſons, to offer a *Petition*, and to ſeek Peace by all the Ways that is poſſible, yet they have commanded me to let you know, that as they deſire Peace, they will prepare for War; they have given Directions that this Day my Lord-General ſhall carry his Army out of the City; there is a Rendezvous appointed; they ſhall there draw themſelves together in ſuch a Condition, as, we are very confident

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

fident and very hopeful, we ſhall be able to defend it.

'We are likewiſe reſolved, and ſo I am commanded to deliver to you, That as we have long kept together with Reſolutions to defend our Privileges, our Religion, our Liberties, and Laws; ſo we will continue in the ſame Reſolution, and the ſame Purpoſe to do ſo; nothing ſhall deter us from it. If we can find Peace from his Majeſty upon theſe Conditions, that Religion, and Laws, and our Liberties, and all, may be happily ſecured to the Kingdom and to you all, we ſhall be glad of it; and it will be a Bleſſing to us, and to you all: If it cannot be done, we are reſolved, and ſo I am commanded to let you know, nothing ſhall diſcourage us, neither Danger, nor Power, nor any Thing; but if we cannot maintain our Religion, our Laws, and our Liberties, we will periſh and die for it.'

Mr. *Pymme*'s Speech.

My Lord Mayor and Gentlemen,

And Mr Pymme's

'THere is little to be added to that which was ſaid by this Noble Lord, who hath repreſented to you (to you of this famous City of *London*, who will make it much more famous by theſe noble Affections, which you have ſhewed ſtill to the Public Good, and by yielding ſo much Aid, and ſo much Encouragement as you have done, to the Parliament in maintaining it) the Senſe of both Houſes, the Reaſons and Motives upon which they did deſire Peace: Motives indeed, that have wrought with us from the Beginning of this War to this Time; for we ſhould never have ſtepped one Step towards War if we might have had, or hoped for, ſuch a Peace as might have ſecured Religion and Liberty, and the Public Good of the Kingdom; but truly ill Counſel did exclude us from ſuch Hope.

'We now conceive that the King, having ſeen the Courage of his Subjects, having ſeen the Danger of

of his own Perſon, and ſo much Blood ſhed about him, he will be more tractable to good Conditions of Peace, than he would have been before; and that is the Reaſon why we do think fit to try him, once more, after this Battle that hath been lately fought, before it come to another Battle.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'It is true, that this may ſeem a Reſolution contrary to that which was opened to you within theſe few Days; but you will conceive, that all great Councils are ſubject to alter their Reſolutions, according as Matters alter, and as the Apprehenſions of Matters alter; for if Things appear more clear and hopeful to them at one Time than at another, it is no Diſhonour for them to vary according to their Appearance, Judgments, and beſt Reaſons; ſo long as they do it with Affections to the beſt Purpoſe; which you may reſt aſſured the Parliament hath done: And though we deſire Peace very much, yet a Peace to betray Religion, or to betray our Liberties, we ſhall always eſteem worſe than War; therefore we ſhall put it to a very quick Iſſue, if the King receive the *Petition*, to make ſuch *Propoſitions* as you may ſee:

'*Firſt*, Whether you ſhall be ſecured in your Religion; in your Religion with a Hope of Reformation; ſuch a Reformation as may maintain the Power of Religion, and the Purity of Religion, as well as the Name of Religion; for we ſhall not be contented with the Name, nor without a Reformation that ſhall maintain the Power of it.

'*Next*, We ſhall purſue the Maintenance of our Liberties; Liberties that may not only be in Laws and Statutes; but Liberties that may be in Practice and in Execution; and to take ſuch Courſe, that you may have the Effects of them in Truth: For to have printed Liberties, and not to have Liberties in Truth and Reality, is but to mock the Kingdom; and I hope we ſhall take Care for that in the ſecond Place.

'*Thirdly*, We ſhall take Care to maintain the Dignity and the Honour of Parliament; for that is

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

is what will be a lasting Security to you in your Liberty and Religion.

'We shall take Care, in the *fourth* Place, to answer the Affections of the City of *London*, That we will not consent to any Thing that shall be prejudicial to them: We will preserve them in the highest Degree of Honour, that ever this City of *London* was in; and truly it is now in the highest Degree of Honour that ever it was; for you have carried yourselves in such a Regard to the Public, that never any of your Predecessors did so before; and therefore we shall, in a Peace, be as careful of you as of ourselves; and you may be assured of this, that if we have not this Peace, our Lives, our Pains, our Estates, they shall all join with you, in maintaining that with the Sword, which we shall not get in an humble Way by *Petition*; and this we shall bring to a quick Issue.

'Therefore I shall only move you, as I am commanded to do from the Parliament, that you will not think there is any Fainting on our Parts; that we are more cold, or less affectionate to any of these good Ends than heretofore we have been; but that we would compass them with more secure Advantage: For if you can get these by Peace, you will have great Advantages by it; you will hinder foreign Invasions from beyond the Seas; you will quickly be able to master the Rebels in *Ireland*; you will quickly be able to suppress the *Papists* that begin to rise in *England*; then you shall have a perpetual Security, that they shall never be able to hurt you more: Therefore, if we can have such a Peace, without further Hazard and Blood-shedding, we shall praise God, and esteem it as a great Blessing; but if not, pray lay not down the same Spirits, for we have the same Hearts, and Multitudes of Spirits, and the Kingdom inclinable to us. Where the King has been, many, to save their Estates and Lives, have shewed themselves but Men; for it was not to be thought that single Counties should maintain themselves against an Army; but they have

have Hearts as they had before; and no doubt but they will join with us, with more Alacrity, when they see we have desired Peace by all the Ways we could, and cannot have it. An. 18. Car. I. 1642 November.

'We shall, by this Means, satisfy our own Consciences; we shall satisfy many Members of Parliament, that desired it might be put on this Way; we shall satisfy many of the Kingdom too, that have held themselves indifferent; but when they see there is no Hope of Peace, in such a Way, without Blood, certainly they will stand to us for Religion and Liberty; which must be destroyed if we cannot secure them without War: Therefore, I shall commend to you, that you would not let fall any Part of your Contributions, for it is That which must maintain the Army; nor entertain ill Apprehensions of the Parliament; but go on so as you have done, and I hope it will be such an End as God may have all the Glory, and you all the Comfort.'

November 11. A Letter was read in the House of Lords, directed to their Speaker *pro Tempore*.

My Lord,

WE were got near Maidenhead *when Sir* Peter Killegrew *met us, and told us that his Majesty was on Horse-back, on his Way towards* Colebrook; *and that his Pleasure was, we should return thither and attend him there. When, soon after his Arrival, his Majesty sent for us, and we presented the* Petition *as we were commanded. His Majesty returned an* Answer *which we here inclose, in the same Words, or as near as we can recollect them. This is all the Account that can be given by* Account of the Petition's being presented to the King.

Your Lordship's Servants,

Uxbridge, Nov. 10, 1642.

A. NORTHUMBERLAND,
PEMBROKE and MONTGOMERY.

The

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

November.

His Majesty's first Answer.

The King's *Answer*, referred to in the foregoing *Letter*, was then read.

I Know you do not expect that I should give you an Answer now to this, which is of so great Importance; but something I will say, at this present, to the Preamble, mentioning the saving of the Effusion of Blood. I have often professed, and called God and Man to Witness, that if other Men (whom a short Time will discover) had been as careful as myself, this War had not happened. What I have done was for my own Safety, and to maintain that Government with Honour, which my Father left me. I will not hinder your Return to London; *but will, in Part, deliver my Answer to you To-morrow, and send it more fully, by some Messengers of my own.*

Amongst other Business done this Day, in the House of Lords, we find a Form of Thanks drawn up to be presented to their Lord-General; which, for its extraordinary Style, and high Expressions of Gratitude, deserves our Notice.

Both Houses return Thanks to the Earl of Essex for his Conduct,

'THE Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament having, upon mature Deliberation, and assured Confidence in the Wisdom, Courage, and Fidelity of *Robert* Earl of *Essex*, chosen and appointed him Captain-General of the Forces raised by the Authority of Parliament, for the Defence of the true Protestant Religion, the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, now in great and apparent Danger; do find, That the said Earl hath managed this Service, of so high Importance, with so much Care, Valour, and Dexterity; as well as by the extremest Hazard of his Life, in a bloody Battle, near *Keynton*, in *Warwickshire*, as, by all the Actions of a most excellent and expert Commander, in the whole Course of this Employment, as doth deserve their best Acknowledgement. We do, therefore, declare and publish, to the lasting Honour of the said Earl, the great and acceptable Service which he hath, herein, done to the Common-Wealth; and shall be ready

'and

'and willing, upon all Occasions, to express the 'due Sense which we have of his Merit, by assisting 'and protecting him, and all others employed under 'his Command, in this Service, with our Lives 'and Fortunes, to the uttermost of our Power. 'This to remain, upon Record, in both Houses of 'Parliament, as a Mark of Honour to his Person, 'Name, and Family, and for a Monument of his 'singular Virtue, to Posterity.' *

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

But the Commons were of Opinion, that the Earl of *Essex* deserved more than an Address of Thanks; for they resolved, That 5000 *l.* be forthwith presented to his Excellency from that House.

And the Commons vote him 5000 l.

The last Thing we shall take Notice of, in the Business of this long Day, is an *Order* of Parliament for a strict Search to be made, in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and their Suburbs, *Southwark*, &c. for all Officers and common Soldiers, belonging to the Earl of *Essex*'s Army; and to bring them to the Palace-Yard, *Westminster*, that they might be sent forthwith from thence to the Army. And all Alehouse-Keepers, or other Housholders, were strictly prohibited from harbouring any such, on very severe Penalties. This to be published, by beat of Drum, throughout the Places above-mentioned. And, for a greater Inducement for all the Soldiery to repair to their Colours, at the Time appointed, the Commons ordered every Foot-Soldier Half a Crown, and the Horse Five Shillings a-piece, over and above their Pay.

Orders for assembling all the Soldiers of the Parliament's Army.

November 12. The Earls of *Northumberland* and *Pembroke* reported to the Lords, That they had waited on the King, Yesterday, who, to save Time, had returned a full *Answer*, by them, to their *Petition*.

His Majesty's ANSWER *to the aforesaid* PETITION.

'WE take God to Witness how deeply we 'are affected with the Miseries of this King-'dom, which, heretofore, we have strove, as much

The King's further Answer to the Parliament's Petition for Peace.

* It is accordingly entered in both *Journals*.

'as

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'as in us lay, to prevent; it being sufficiently 'known to all the World, That as we were not the 'first that took up Arms, so we have shewed our Readiness of composing all Things in a fair Way, by 'our several Offers of Treaty; and shall be glad, 'now at length, to find any such Inclination in others: The same Tenderness to avoid the Destruction of our Subjects, whom we know to be 'our greatest Strength, which would always make 'our greatest Victories bitter to us, shall make us 'willingly hearken to such Propositions whereby 'these bloody Distempers may be stopped, and the 'great Distractions of this Kingdom settled, to 'God's Glory, our Honour, and the Welfare and 'Flourishing of our People; and, to that End, shall 'reside at our own Castle at *Windsor*, if the Forces 'there shall be removed, till Committees may 'have Time to attend us with the same; which, 'to prevent the Inconveniences that will intervene, 'we wish may be hastened, and shall be ready there; 'or, if that be refused us, at any Place where we shall 'be, to receive such Propositions as aforesaid, from 'both Houses of Parliament. Do you your Duty, 'we will not be wanting in ours: God of his 'Mercy give a Blessing.'

After the reading of this *Answer*, it was resolved to communicate the Contents of it to the Commons. Then the Lord-General stood up and desired he might receive Directions from the House how he should order his Forces during the Time of this Treaty: For, if he should advance his Quarters towards the King, it might be thought an Act of Hostility; and, if he should omit any Thing, then he might be looked upon as remiss. Thereupon the House *resolved* to write a Letter to the King's Secretary, to know his Majesty's Pleasure concerning a Cessation of Arms, during the Time of this Treaty; and gave the Lord-General Directions to forbear doing any Act of Hostility while further Orders. The Commons having given their Concurrence, a Letter was sent to the Secretary in these Words:

My

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

November.

My Lord,

I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons, in Parliament, to signify to your Lordship, that, with much Joy, they received his Majesty's Gracious Answer *unto their* Petition; *expressing his pious Inclinations unto Peace. They do resolve, with all Diligence, to send their humble* Propositions *unto his Majesty, and, likewise, their* Answer *concerning* Windsor Castle; *in the mean Time, they desire to know his Majesty's Pleasure, how the Armies shall govern themselves, and whether he does not resolve on a Cessation of all Acts of Hostility, upon the Overture of a Cessation of Peace. This is all I have, at present, unto your Lordship, adding Duty unto it, and an Assurance of being*

Lord Grey's Letter concerning a Cessation of Hostilities.

Your Lordship's

most affectionate Friend

and humble Servant,

GREY.

The House of Commons, however, did not wait for any Answer from the King; for this Day, they agreed to send a Message to the Lord-General, to desire him to proceed according to his best Advantages, notwithstanding the foregoing *Letter* sent to the King by Sir *Peter Killigrew*, or any Proceedings thereon; in regard the other Side had begun to act Hostilities since that *Letter* was agreed upon. The General answered, That he did not intend to be amused by Treaties; but, since they have begun the Acts of Hostility, to pursue and see what they would do.

Nov. 13. The Parliament had now the City of *London* so much at their Devotion, that, this Day, the Commons being informed, That several Citizens were at the Door, who desired to offer something to their Consideration, they were called in: And one Mr. *Shute*, a Merchant, in the Name of the rest, addressed the House in a Speech, which appears to have been a very long one, by the following

A Petition and Proposals from the City of London to the Commons.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

lowing Heads of it taken and entered in the *Commons Journals*:

'That they did acknowledge, with all Thankfulness, the continued and unwearied Care and Pains of this House, for the Preservation of the true Protestant Religion, the Liberty of the People, and the Privileges of Parliament.

'They have presented a *Petition* of ten Particulars; to which they expect an Answer in convenient Time.

'They speak in the Language of many Thousands; That they fear they are bought and sold.

These Things they present:

1. 'That in a Case of so much Danger, and so great Concernment, that there should be but one Army to rely upon.

2. 'That, in all this Time, the King's Strength lying in Horse, that the City should not appear in a considerable Body of Horse.—Though it has been offered, and not effectually yet put in a Way, they do now again offer it.

3. 'That *Windsor* Castle should not be provided for, as it ought.

4. 'That Colonel *Holles*'s Regiment, Men of that Courage, and so considerable, should be exposed to a Place of so imminent Danger, lying next to the Enemy's Forces, and almost naked.

5. 'The Point of Accommodation is another Reason of their Grief.

They are come to this *Resolution*;

'That they will man out every Man his Man, and make their own Captains and Officers, and live and die with the House of Commons, and in Defence thereof: And if there be any in the Lords House, that do any way retard or hinder this public Defence, they wish they would declare themselves; and that they were with the King.

6. 'Another Matter of their Grief was, That the *Sabbath* Day should be so long profaned by public Authority; and the Book that injoins it, not yet burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman.

They

They obſerve, that this Day they have ſo profaned, has been the Day of their Ruin. * An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

7. 'The Bloodſhed of the Martyrs, in Queen *Mary*'s Days, done by public Act of Parliament, and no Expiation as yet made for it.

8. 'The Officers in the Army (though they muſt always mention my Lord-General with Honour, as one in whom they abſolutely confide) not ſo careful and diligent as they ought, nor all of them ſo truſty.

9. 'The Numbers of the Priſoners very great, and of dangerous Condition; and the Maſters and Keepers of thoſe Priſons not to be confided in. †

10. 'The good Miniſters in Time paſt ſilenced, and put out by the Biſhops.

'You have our Perſons, Purſes, and Eſtates, all at your Command: You may do with us at your Pleaſure.

'We come in the Name of the Godly and Active Part of the City.'

The Citizens being withdrawn, the Commons came to the following *Reſolutions:*

1. 'That the Book concerning Injoining and Tolerating of Sports upon the *Sabbath* Day, be forthwith burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman, in the uſual Places.

2. 'That this Houſe doth accept of this Offer of the Citizens, of furniſhing Horſe and Foot; and doth account it to be a Service much importing the Safety of the Common-Wealth; and doth return them public and hearty Thanks.'

The Citizens being called in again, the Speaker, by the Command of the Houſe, told them, 'They found, that what was ſaid was expreſſed with a zealous and earneſt Care of the Common-Wealth; for which they return them public and hearty Thanks.

* He means, we ſuppoſe, the Battle of *Edge-Hill*, fought on a *Sunday*

† About this Time the Commons *reſolved*, That the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*'s Houſe, in *Southwark*, ſhould be appointed as a Priſon for Delinquents; probably for the Reaſon here aſſigned.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'For the Particular of Horse and Foot, they accept; and have appointed a particular Committee to treat about it.

'The Book of Sports they have voted to be burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman.'

Mr. *Shute* having desired to speak again, said, 'That the Coming of the Lord-General's Army into the City of *London*, and staying here so long as they did, is another Thing troubles them; which they forgot to express before.

'Another Thing is, That some present and more severe Course might be taken with Malignants; and, amongst them, with the malignant Ministers.'

And then the Citizens withdrew.

November 14. A *Letter* from the King, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read; which was only a Command to him to communicate the inclosed Paper to the whole House; the Purport of which was this:

The King's Message concerning his Marching to Brentford;

'WHereas the last Night, being the 11th of *November*, after the Departure of the Committee of both our Houses, with our gracious *Answer* to their *Petition*, we received certain Information (having till then heard nothing of it, either from the Houses Committee, or otherwise) that the Earl of *Essex* had drawn his Forces out of *London* towards us, which hath necessitated our sudden Resolution to march with our Forces to *Brentford*; we have thought fit hereby to signify to both our Houses of Parliament, that we are no less desirous of the Peace of the Kingdom, than we expressed in our aforesaid *Answer*, the Propositions for which we shall willingly receive, wherever we are: and desire, if it may be, to receive them at *Brentford* this Night, or early To-morrow Morning, that all possible Speed may be made in so good a Work, and all Inconveniences, otherwise likely to intervene, may be avoided.'

The

The House was likewise informed, That Sir *Peter Killigrew*, who was to carry the Letter sent last from the Parliament to the King, went as far as *Brentford*, where he found the King's Army engaged with some Regiments of the Lord-General's; and that then endeavouring to go by *Uxbridge*, was there also stopp'd by some Dragoons belonging to the King's Army; and upon that he returned back with the Letter, which he desired to know what to do with.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Where both Armies engage.

The Lord-General saying, at the same Time, That he had placed three Regiments at *Brentford*, before the Committee of Lords and Commons came from the King, it was resolved to have a Conference with the Commons on all these Matters; and to appoint a Committee to draw up a *Declaration*, which, with the Letters *pro* and *con*, were to be forthwith printed and published, in order to vindicate the Actions and Desires of both Houses, concerning Peace and a Cessation of Arms. At this Conference, however, it was recommended to the Lord-General, by both Houses, to take all Advantage against the Enemy wherever he found them.

The Parliament desire the Earl of Essex to make use of all Advantages.

November 15. The Commons *resolved* to accept of an Offer of the Citizens of *London*, whereby they engaged to raise 1000 Light Horse and 3000 Dragoons, for the Service of the Parliament, to be commanded by the Lord-General alone, and to be accountable to none but himself by the Advice of both Houses. They also recommended Serjeant-Major-General *Skippon*, who formerly had commanded the Guard appointed to attend both Houses, to command those Horse and Dragoons in Chief under the Lord-General; and Col. *Hurrey* under Mr. *Skippon*.* Mr. *Whitlocke* gives us the following Speech of the latter to his Soldiers; who, he says,

The Citizens of London raise Light Horse and Dragoons.

* Both Lord *Clarendon* and Mr. *Whitlocke* agree in ascribing this extraordinary Offer of the Citizens, to the indefatigable Zeal and Activity of the Lord Mayor *Pennington*, who succeeded to that Office by the Removal of Sir *Richard Gurney*, and was again elected for the Year 1643.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

November.

says, were more taken with it than with a formal Oration:

Mr. Skippon's Speech to those Troops.

COME my Boys, my brave Boys, let us pray heartily and fight heartily, I will run the same Fortunes and Hazards with you. Remember the Cause is for God, and for the Defence of yourselves, your Wives, and Children. Come my honest brave Boys, pray heartily and fight heartily, and God will bless us.

November 16. The Committee of Safety having drawn up an *Answer* to the King's last *Message*, it was this Day read and agreed to by both Houses, and was *in hæc Verba:*

The Parliament's Answer to the King's last Message.

'TO your Majesty's *Message* of the twelfth of this Month of *November*, we the Lords and Commons in Parliament do make this humble 'Answer, That this *Message* was not delivered to 'us till *Monday* the fourteenth. We thought it a 'strange Introduction to Peace, that your Majesty 'should send your Army to beat us out of our 'Quarters at *Brentford*, and then appoint that Place 'to receive our *Propositions*; which yet it plainly 'appears your Majesty intended not to receive, till 'you had first tried whether you could break thro' 'the Army, raised for the Defence of this Kingdom 'and Parliament; and take the City, being unpro-'vided and secure in Expectation of a fair Treaty 'made to secure the City: If herein your Majesty 'had prevailed, after you had destroyed the Army 'and master'd the City, it is easy to imagine what 'a miserable Peace we should have had; and whe-'ther those Courses be suitable to the Expressions 'your Majesty is pleased to make, in your *Answer* 'to our *Petition*, of your Earnestness to avoid any 'further Effusion of Blood, let God and the World 'judge.

'As for our Proceedings, they have, in all 'Things, been answerable to our Professions: We 'gave Directions to the Earl of *Essex* to draw the 'Army under his Command, out of the City and 'Suburbs, before we sent any *Message* to your Ma-'jesty,

'jesty, so that part of it was quarter'd in *Brentford* 'before the Committee returned with your *Answer*; 'and immediately upon the Receipt thereof, that 'very Morning, Order was taken that the Soldiers 'should exercise no Acts of Hostility against any of 'your Majesty's People: We sent a Letter by Sir '*Peter Killigrew* to know your Majesty's Pleasure, 'whether you intended the like Forbearance of Ho-'stility; but the Fury of your Soldiers, thirsting 'after Blood and Spoil, prevented the Delivery of 'the Letter; for coming, upon *Saturday*, in his 'Way towards your Majesty, as far as *Brentford*, 'he found them in fight there, and could pass no 'farther. God who sees our Innocency, and that 'we have no Aims but at his Glory and the Public 'Good, will, we hope, free your Majesty from 'these destructive Counsels of some, who labour to 'maintain their own Power by Blood and Rapine; 'and bless our Endeavours, who seek nothing but 'to procure and establish the Honour, Peace, and 'Safety of your Majesty and Kingdoms, upon the 'sure Foundation of Religion and Justice.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The Lord *Grey*, as Speaker, was ordered to send this *Answer* to the King, inclosed in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, by Sir *Peter Killigrew*.

November 18. Tho' both Houses were so much employed in the Military Service, that little or nothing else can be found in the *Journals* of either of them; yet, this Day, an Accident happened which diverted them a little from that Pursuit, and turned their Thoughts towards Law Affairs and Courts of Justice. The Lords were informed, That a Messenger had been apprehended by the Lord-General, who finding about him a Proclamation and Writs for the Adjournment of the present Term, the said Papers were sent to the House of Commons; and, upon opening, they found the Proclamation for Adjournment was to take Place as this Day. This the Commons conceived to be very destructive and prejudicial to the whole Kingdom, if it should be so; there being three Days in the Law, one for Essoigns, an-

His Majesty having proposed to adjourn Michaelmas Term,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

another for Returns, and a third for Appearances. And if the Term ſhould be adjourned, according to this Proclamation and Writ, it would be obſtructive to the whole Proceedings of the Law, and many Evils would enſue. For,

1. All former Proceedings, at the laſt Aſſizes, would be loſt, ſo that no Judgment could be given therein.

2. No original Writs, or meſne Proceſs can iſſue out, on any Occaſion, tho' it be to deliver any out of Priſon.

3. If the Term ſhould be adjourned, there being an Army in the Field, and the King's Colours flying, it would be accounted *Tempus Belli*, when all Laws ſleep, are ſilent and diſſolved; and then there would be no Property, nor any Violence counted an Injury.

4. No Fines nor Recoveries could be taken, whereby Men may paſs common Aſſurances for ſetling their Eſtates; beſides many other Evils would enſue, to the Obſtruction of the whole Law.

Therefore the Houſe of Commons deſire, that their Lordſhips would give Direction to the Judges to keep this Term, and not to make Adjournments of it, either by virtue of theſe Writs, or any other Writs whatſoever they ſhall receive.

The Writs were not opened, but the Proclamation was read, as follows:

And iſſued a Proclamation for that Purpoſe,

'WHereas his Majeſty did adjourn Part of this Term of *St Michael* from the firſt Return, called *A Die S. Michaelis in tres Septimanas*, 'untill the Return, *Octab. S. Martini*; his Majeſty, 'conſidering the preſent Diſtractions of this Kingdom, doth declare, That the Reſidue of the ſaid 'Term, beginning at the ſaid Return of *Octab. S. Martini*, be wholly adjourned as to all Appearances, Cauſes, Matters, and Things, which 'ſhould have been made or done in any of his 'Majeſty's Courts at *Weſtminſter*, untill *Octab. Hilarii* next following; and that Writs of Adjournment ſhall be made by one Judge of each 'Bench,

'Bench, giving them Power to adjourn the Resi-
'due of the said Term of St. *Michael's*; and the
'said Adjournment shall be made on the first Day
'of the said *Octab. S. Michaelis*, commonly called
'the Day of Essoigns.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Given at Oatlands, *the* 15*th of* November, *in the* 18*th Year of his now Majesty's Reign.*

The Lords taking these Matters into serious Consideration, as a Thing of great Importance to the Good of the whole Kingdom, agreed with the House of Commons in the Matter of this *Message*, and made the following *Order*:

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, 'That the Judges of the King's Bench, Court of Common Pleas, and Barons of the Exchequer, are hereby enjoined that they do not, neither by virtue of these Writs of Adjournment now sent, nor any other Writs whatsoever which shall be sent, adjourn this Term of St. *Michael*; but that they shall sit and proceed to dispatch the public Justice of the Kingdom, according as is usual in their several Courts.'

The Parliament forbid the Judges to adjourn the said Term.

This *Order* was read in the House; and the Judges present commanded to take Notice and obey it.

There had been some Intimations, for several Days last past, entered in the *Journals*, for calling in the *Scots* to the Assistance of Parliament; and this Day a *Declaration* was sent up from the Commons, whereby one Mr. *Pickering* was authorized and required to deliver the same to the Council of State in that Kingdom, and otherwise to publish it as he should see Occasion; and that Instructions be sent to him to solicit the Effects of it. It was also *ordered*, That the said *Declaration* should be delivered to the *Scots* Commissioners residing here. To all which the Lords agreed, and is as follows:

They resolve to call in the Assistance of the Scots.

'WE the Lords and Commons assembled in
'the Parliament of *England*, considering
'with what Wisdom and public Affection our Bre-
'thren

Their Declaration to that Kingdom.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'thren of the Kingdom of *Scotland* did concur with 'the Endeavours of this Parliament, and the Desires of the whole Kingdom, in procuring and establishing a firm Peace and Amity between the 'two Nations; and how lovingly they have since 'invited us to a nearer and higher Degree of Union, 'in Matters concerning Religion and Church Government, which we have most willingly and affectionately embraced and intend to pursue, cannot doubt but they will, with as much Forwardness and Affection, concur with us in settling Peace 'in this Kingdom, and preserving it in their own; 'that so we may mutually reap the Benefit of that 'Amity and Alliance, so happily made and strongly confirmed betwixt the two Nations. Wherefore, as we did about a Year since, in the first Appearance of Trouble then beginning amongst them, 'actually declare, That, in our Sense and Apprehension of the National Alliance betwixt us, we 'were thereby bound to apply the Authority of 'Parliament and Power of this Kingdom to the 'Preservation and Maintenance of their Peace: 'And seeing now that the Troubles of this Kingdom are grown to a greater Height, and the subtle 'Practices of the common Enemy of the Religion 'and Liberty of both Nations do appear with more 'Evidence, Strength, and Danger than they did at 'that Time: We hold it necessary to declare, That, 'in our Judgment, the same Obligation lies upon 'our Brethren by the aforementioned Act, with 'the Power and Force of that Kingdom to assist 'us, in repressing those amongst us who are now in 'Arms and make War, not only without Consent 'of Parliament, but even against the Parliament, 'and for the Destruction thereof.

'Wherefore we have thought good to make 'known to our Brethren, that his Majesty hath given Commission to divers eminent and known '*Papists*, to raise Forces and compose an Army in 'the *North*, and other Parts of this Kingdom; 'which is to join with divers foreign Forces intend-

'ed

'ed to be transported from beyond the Seas, for the 'Destruction of this Parliament, and of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom. And that 'the Prelatical Part of the Clergy, and their Adherents, have likewise invited his Majesty to raise 'another Army; which, in his Person, he doth 'conduct against the Parliament and the City of *London*, plundering and robbing sundry well-affected 'Towns within their Power: And that, in Prosecution of their Malice, they are so presumptuous 'and predominant of his Majesty's Resolutions, 'that they forbear not those Outrages in Places to 'which his Majesty hath given his Royal Word 'and Protection. A great Cause and Incentive of 'which Malice proceeds from the Design they 'have to hinder the Reformation of Ecclesiastical 'Government in this Kingdom, so much longed 'for by all true Lovers of the Protestant Religion.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'And hereupon we further desire our Brethren of 'the Nation of *Scotland*, to raise such Forces as they 'shall judge sufficient for the securing the Peace of 'their own Borders, against the ill-affected Persons 'there; as likewise to assist us in suppressing the 'Army of *Papists* and Foreigners, which, as we 'expect, will shortly be on Foot here; and, if they 'be not timely prevented, may prove as mischievous and destructive to that Kingdom as to ourselves.

'And though we seek nothing from his Majesty, 'that may diminish his just Authority or Honour; 'and have, by many humble *Petitions*, endeavoured 'to put an End to this unnatural War and Combustion in the Kingdom; and to procure his Majesty's Protection and Security for our Religion, 'Liberty, and Persons, according to that great Trust 'which his Majesty is bound to by the Laws of the 'Land; and shall still continue to renew our Petitions in that Kind: Yet, to our great Grief, we 'see the Papistical and Malignant Counsel so prevalent with his Majesty, and his Person so engaged 'to their Power, that we have little Hope of better

'Success

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

another for Returns, and a third for Appearances. And if the Term ſhould be adjourned, according to this Proclamation and Writ, it would be obſtructive to the whole Proceedings of the Law, and many Evils would enſue. For,

1. All former Proceedings, at the laſt Aſſizes, would be loſt, ſo that no Judgment could be given therein.

2. No original Writs, or meſne Proceſs can iſſue out, on any Occaſion, tho' it be to deliver any out of Priſon.

3. If the Term ſhould be adjourned, there being an Army in the Field, and the King's Colours flying, it would be accounted *Tempus Belli*, when all Laws ſleep, are ſilent and diſſolved; and then there would be no Property, nor any Violence counted an Injury.

4. No Fines not Recoveries could be taken, whereby Men may paſs common Aſſurances for ſetling their Eſtates; beſides many other Evils would enſue, to the Obſtruction of the whole Law.

Therefore the Houſe of Commons deſire, that their Lordſhips would give Direction to the Judges to keep this Term, and not to make Adjournments of it, either by virtue of theſe Writs, or any other Writs whatſoever they ſhall receive.

The Writs were not opened, but the Proclamation was read, as follows:

And iſſued a Proclamation for that Purpoſe,

'WHereas his Majeſty did adjourn Part of this Term of *St Michael* from the firſt Return, called *A Die S. Michaelis in tres Septimanas*, untill the Return, *Octab. S. Martini*; his Majeſty, conſidering the preſent Diſtractions of this Kingdom, doth declare, That the Reſidue of the ſaid Term, beginning at the ſaid Return of *Octab. S. Martini*, be wholly adjourned as to all Appearances, Cauſes, Matters, and Things, which ſhould have been made or done in any of his Majeſty's Courts at *Weſtminſter*, untill *Octab. Hilarii* next following; and that Writs of Adjournment ſhall be made by one Judge of each Bench,

'Bench, giving them Power to adjourn the Resi-
'due of the said Term of St. *Michael*'s; and the
'said Adjournment shall be made on the first Day
'of the said *Octab. S. Michaelis*, commonly called
'the Day of Essoigns.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Given at Oatlands, *the* 15*th of* November, *in the* 18*th Year of his now Majesty's Reign.*

The Lords taking these Matters into serious Consideration, as a Thing of great Importance to the Good of the whole Kingdom, agreed with the House of Commons in the Matter of this *Message*, and made the following *Order:*

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, 'That the Judges of the King's Bench, Court of Common Pleas, and Barons of the Exchequer, are hereby enjoined that they do not, neither by virtue of these Writs of Adjournment now sent, nor any other Writs whatsoever which shall be sent, adjourn this Term of St. *Michael*; but that they shall sit and proceed to dispatch the public Justice of the Kingdom, according as is usual in their several Courts.'

The Parliament forbid the Judges to adjourn the said Term.

This *Order* was read in the House; and the Judges present commanded to take Notice and obey it.

There had been some Intimations, for several Days last past, entered in the *Journals*, for calling in the *Scots* to the Assistance of Parliament; and this Day a *Declaration* was sent up from the Commons, whereby one Mr. *Pickering* was authorized and required to deliver the same to the Council of State in that Kingdom, and otherwise to publish it as he should see Occasion; and that Instructions be sent to him to sollicit the Effects of it. It was also *ordered*, That the said *Declaration* should be delivered to the *Scots* Commissioners residing here. To all which the Lords agreed, and is as follows:

They resolve to call in the Assistance of the Scots.

'WE the Lords and Commons assembled in
'the Parliament of *England*, considering
'with what Wisdom and public Affection our Bre-
'thren

Their Declaration to that Kingdom.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'thren of the Kingdom of *Scotland* did concur with 'the Endeavours of this Parliament, and the De'sires of the whole Kingdom, in procuring and e'stablishing a firm Peace and Amity between the 'two Nations; and how lovingly they have since 'invited us to a nearer and higher Degree of Union, 'in Matters concerning Religion and Church Go'vernment, which we have most willingly and af'fectionately embraced and intend to pursue, can'not doubt but they will, with as much Forward'ness and Affection, concur with us in settling Peace 'in this Kingdom, and preserving it in their own; 'that so we may mutually reap the Benefit of that 'Amity and Alliance, so happily made and strong'ly confirmed betwixt the two Nations. Where'fore, as we did about a Year since, in the first Ap'pearance of Trouble then beginning amongst them, 'actually declare, That, in our Sense and Appre'hension of the National Alliance betwixt us, we 'were thereby bound to apply the Authority of 'Parliament and Power of this Kingdom to the 'Preservation and Maintenance of their Peace: 'And seeing now that the Troubles of this King'dom are grown to a greater Height, and the subtle 'Practices of the common Enemy of the Religion 'and Liberty of both Nations do appear with more 'Evidence, Strength, and Danger than they did at 'that Time: We hold it necessary to declare, That, 'in our Judgment, the same Obligation lies upon 'our Brethren by the aforementioned Act, with 'the Power and Force of that Kingdom to assist 'us, in repressing those amongst us who are now in 'Arms and make War, not only without Consent 'of Parliament, but even against the Parliament, 'and for the Destruction thereof.

'Wherefore we have thought good to make 'known to our Brethren, that his Majesty hath gi'ven Commission to divers eminent and known '*Papists*, to raise Forces and compose an Army in 'the *North*, and other Parts of this Kingdom; 'which is to join with divers foreign Forces intend-

'ed

'ed to be transported from beyond the Seas, for the 'Destruction of this Parliament, and of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom. And that 'the Prelatical Part of the Clergy, and their Adherents, have likewise invited his Majesty to raise 'another Army; which, in his Person, he doth 'conduct against the Parliament and the City of *London*, plundering and robbing sundry well-affected 'Towns within their Power: And that, in Prosecution of their Malice, they are so presumptuous 'and predominant of his Majesty's Resolutions, 'that they forbear not those Outrages in Places to 'which his Majesty hath given his Royal Word 'and Protection. A great Cause and Incentive of 'which Malice proceeds from the Design they 'have to hinder the Reformation of Ecclesiastical 'Government in this Kingdom, so much longed 'for by all true Lovers of the Protestant Religion.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'And hereupon we further desire our Brethren of 'the Nation of *Scotland*, to raise such Forces as they 'shall judge sufficient for the securing the Peace of 'their own Borders, against the ill-affected Persons 'there; as likewise to assist us in suppressing the 'Army of *Papists* and Foreigners, which, as we 'expect, will shortly be on Foot here; and, if they 'be not timely prevented, may prove as mischievous and destructive to that Kingdom as to ourselves.

'And though we seek nothing from his Majesty, 'that may diminish his just Authority or Honour; 'and have, by many humble *Petitions*, endeavoured 'to put an End to this unnatural War and Combustion in the Kingdom; and to procure his Majesty's Protection and Security for our Religion, 'Liberty, and Persons, according to that great Trust 'which his Majesty is bound to by the Laws of the 'Land; and shall still continue to renew our Petitions in that Kind: Yet, to our great Grief, we 'see the Papistical and Malignant Counsel so prevalent with his Majesty, and his Person so engaged 'to their Power, that we have little Hope of better

'Success

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Success of our *Petitions* than we formerly had; 'and are thereby necessitated to stand upon our just 'Defence, and to seek this speedy and powerful 'Assistance of our Brethren of *Scotland*, according 'to that Act agreed upon in the Parliament of both 'Kingdoms, the common Duty of Christianity, 'and the particular Interests of their own King-'dom: To which we hope God will give such a 'Blessing, that it may produce the Preservation of 'Religion; the Honour, Safety, and Peace of his 'Majesty, and all his Subjects; and a more strict 'Conjunction of the Counsels, Designs, and En-'deavours of both Nations, for the Comfort and 'Relief of the Reformed Churches beyond the 'Seas.'

JOHN BROWN, *Cler. Parl.*

Nov. 7. 1642. HEN. ELSYNGE, *Cler. Par. D. Com.*

In *Answer* to the foregoing *Declaration* of Parliament, the King sent the following *Message* to the Lords of his Privy Council of *Scotland*, some time after: But we bring it in here for the Sake of Connection.

Right Trusty and Right Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors, and Right Trusty and Well-beloved Counsellors, we greet you well,

The King's Answer, addressed to the Privy-Council of Scotland.

'WE have lately seen a Paper, presented to us 'by the Earl of *Lindsay*, as a *Declaration* 'of the Lords and Commons assembled in the Par-'liament of *England*, of the seventh of *November*, 'to our Subjects of our Kingdom of *Scotland*; 'which, after many high Taxes of us and our Go-'vernment, very earnestly invites, and in a Man-'ner challenges, Assistance from that our Native 'Kingdom, of Men and Arms for making a War 'against us; making a Claim to that Assistance, by 'virtue of the late Act of *Pacification*, to the which 'out of our Desire to make a perpetual Union be-'tween our two Kingdoms, for the Happiness of 'both, and by it the more firmly to establish our

'own

'own Greatness and just Power) we chearfully con-
'sented.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

November.

'As we are, at our Soul, afflicted that it hath been 'in the Power of any factious, ambitious, and 'malicious Persons, so far to possess the Hearts of 'many of our Subjects of *England*, as to raise this 'miserable Distemper and Distraction in this King-'dom, against all our real Actions and Endeavours 'to the contrary; so we are glad that this Rage 'and Fury hath so far transported them, that they 'apply themselves, in so gross a Manner, to our 'Subjects of *Scotland*; whose Experience of our 'Religion, Justice, and Love of our People, will 'not suffer them to believe those horrid Scandals 'laid upon us; and their Affection, Loyalty, and 'Jealousy of our Honour, will disdain to be made 'Instruments to oppress their Native Sovereign, by 'assisting an odious Rebellion.

'We have, from Time to Time, acquainted our 'Subjects of that Kingdom with the Accidents and 'Circumstances which have disquieted this; how '(after all the Acts of Justice, Grace, and Favour 'performed on our Part, which were, or could be, 'desired to make a People completely happy) we 'were driven, by the Force and Violence of rude 'and tumultuous Assemblies, from our City of '*London*, and our two Houses of Parliament: How 'Attempts have been made to impose Laws upon 'our Subjects without our Consent, contrary to the 'Foundation and Constitution of this Kingdom: 'How our Forts, Goods, and Navy were seized 'and taken from us by Force, and employed against 'us: Our Revenue and ordinary Subsistence wrested 'from us: How we have been pursued with scan-'dalous and reproachful Language; bold, false, and 'seditious Pasquils and Libels publickly allowed 'against us; and been told, *That we might, with-'out Want of Modesty and Duty, be deposed.*

'Now, after all this, before any Force was raised 'by us, an Army was raised, and a General ap-'pointed to lead that Army against us; with a 'Commission to kill, slay, and destroy all such who

'should

An. 18. Car. 1. 1642. November.

'should be faithful to us. That when we had been, 'by these Means, compelled, with the Assistance 'of our good Subjects, to raise an Army for our 'necessary Defence; we sent divers gracious *Mes-* '*sages*, earnestly desiring that the Calamities and 'Miseries of a Civil War might be prevented by a 'Treaty, and so we might know the Ground of 'this Misunderstanding. How we were absolutely 'refused to be treated with; and how at last the 'Army (raised, as was pretended, for the Defence 'of our Person) was brought into the Field against 'us, gave us Battle; and (though it pleased God to 'give us the Victory) destroyed many of our good 'Subjects, with as imminent Danger to our own 'Person and our Children, as the Skill and Malice of 'desperate Rebels could contrive. Of all which, 'and the other Indignities which have been offered 'us, we doubt not the Duty and Affection of our '*Scots* Subjects will have so just a Resentment, that 'they will express to the World the Sense they 'have of our Sufferings. And our good Subjects 'of *Scotland* are not, we hope, so great Strangers 'to the Affairs of this Kingdom, to believe that 'this Misfortune and Distraction is begot and brought 'upon us by our two Houses of Parliament; tho', 'in Truth, no unwarrantable Action against the 'Law can be justified even by that Authority. 'They well know how the Members of both 'Houses have been driven thence, in so much that 'of above five hundred Members of the House of 'Commons, there are not now there above eighty, 'and of above one hundred of the House of Peers 'not above fifteen or sixteen. All which are so 'awed by the Multitude of *Anabaptists*, *Brownists*, 'and other Persons, desperate and decayed in their 'Fortunes, in and about the City of *London*, that, 'in Truth, their Consultations have not the Free-'dom and Privilege which belongs to Parliaments.

'Concerning any Commissions granted by us to '*Papists* to raise Forces, we must refer our good 'Subjects to a *Declaration*, lately set forth by us 'upon the Occasion of that Scandal, which we

'send

'ſend together with this; and for our own true and 'zealous Affection to the Proteſtant Religion, (the 'Advancement whereof our Soul deſires) we can 'give no other Inſtance, than our conſtant Practice, 'on which Malice itſelf can lay no Blemiſh, and 'thoſe many *Proteſtations* we have made in the 'Sight of Almighty God; to whom we know we 'ſhall be dearly accountable, if we fail in the 'Obſervation.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'For that ſcandalous Imputation of our Intention of bringing in foreign Forces; as the ſame 'is raiſed without the leaſt Colour or Shadow of 'Reaſon, and ſolemnly diſavowed by us in many of 'our *Declarations*; ſo there cannot be a clearer Argument to our Subjects of *Scotland*, that we have 'no ſuch Thought, than that we have hitherto 'forborne to require the Aſſiſtance of that our Native Kingdom; from whoſe Obedience, Duty, 'and Affection we ſhould confidently expect it, if 'we thought our own Strength here too weak to 'preſerve us; and of whoſe Courage and Loyalty 'we ſhall look to make uſe, before we ſhall think 'of any foreign Aid to ſuccour us. And we know 'no reaſonable or underſtanding Man can ſuppoſe 'our good Subjects of *Scotland* are obliged, or enabled by the late Act of Parliament in both Kingdoms, to obey the Invitation which is made to 'them by this pretended *Declaration*; when it is 'ſo evidently provided for by that Act, *That as the 'Kingdom of* England *ſhall not make War againſt 'the Kingdom of* Scotland, *without Conſent of the 'Parliament of* England; *ſo the Kingdom of* Scotland *ſhall not make War againſt the Kingdom of* England, *without the Conſent of the Parliament of* Scotland;' and when they have always declared 'themſelves ſo careful of our Honour, Safety, 'and juſt Rights, which now undergo ſo great Violation.

'This we have thought fit to ſay upon Occaſion of this late *Declaration*, and do commend it 'to you the Lords of our Privy-Council of our 'Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be communicated and

'pub-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'published to all our loving Subjects there: And if 'the grave Counsel and Advice, which you derived 'hither by your Act of the 22d of *April* last*, had 'been followed here, in a tender Care of our Royal 'Person, and of our Princely Greatness and Au-'thority, then would not this Face of Confusion 'have appeared, which now threatens this King-'dom: And therefore we require you to use your 'utmost Endeavours to inform our Subjects of that 'our Kingdom of the Truth of our Condition; 'and that you suffer not the Scandals and Imputa-'tions, laid on us by the Malice and Treason of 'some Men, to make any Impression in the Minds 'of our People, to the lessening or corrupting their 'Affection and Loyalty to us; but that you assure 'them the Hardships we now undergo, and the 'Arms we have been compelled to take up, are for 'the Defence of our Person, and the Safety of our 'Life; for the Maintenance of the true Protestant 'Religion; for the Preservation of the Laws, Li-'berties, and Constitutions of this Kingdom; and 'for the just Privileges of Parliament; and we 'look no longer for the Blessing of Heaven, than 'we endeavour the Defence and Advancement of 'all these: And we doubt not a dutiful Concur-'rence in our Subjects of *Scotland*, in the Care of 'our Honours and just Rights, will draw down a 'Blessing upon that Nation too.'

Nov. 9. A Letter was read, directed to the Lord *Grey* of *Werk*, as Speaker, from the Lord *Falkland*, with his Majesty's *Reply*, inclosed, to the *Answer* of both Houses to his Majesty's *Message* of the 12th Inst. which was also read as follows:

The King's Reply to the Parliament's last Answer.

'THAT his *Message* of the 12th, though not 'received by them till the 14th, was sent to 'them, first, upon the same Day on which it was 'dated; and, meeting with Stops by the Way, was 'again sent upon the 13th, and taken upon that 'Day,

* In our Tenth Volume, p. 504.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Day, at Ten in the Morning, by the Earl of *Essex*; and, though not to him directed, was by him 'opened; so the Slowness of the Delivery is not 'so strange, as the Stop of that Letter said to be sent 'by Sir *Peter Killigrew*, which his Majesty hath 'not yet received; but concludes, from the Matter 'expressed to have been contained in that Letter, '(to wit, to know his Pleasure, whether he intend-'ed the Forbearance of Hostility) and by the Com-'mand of such Forbearance, said to be sent to the 'Lord of *Essex*'s Army, that no such Forbearance 'was already concluded; and, consequently, neither 'had his Majesty Cause to suppose that he should 'take any of their Forces unprovided and secure, in 'an Expectation of a fair Treaty; neither could 'any hostile Act of his Majesty's Forces have been 'a Course unsuitable to his Expressions; much less 'could an Endeavour to prepossess that Place, (for so 'he hop'd he might have done, which might have 'stopp'd the further March of these Forces to-'wards him; which, for ought appeared to him, 'might as well have been intended to *Colebrook* as '*Brentford*; and, by that, the further Effusion of 'Blood) deserve that Style.

'His Majesty further conceives, That the print-'ting, so out of Time, such a *Declaration* as their '*Reply* to his *Answer* to theirs of the 26th of *May*,* 'but the Day before they *voted* the Delivery of 'their *Petition*; and the March of the Earl of *Es-'sex*'s Forces to *Brentford*, so near to his Majesty, 'when the Committee at the same Time attended 'him with a *Petition* for a Treaty, (the Earl of '*Essex* being before possess'd of all the other Ave-'nues to his Army, by his Forces at *Windsor*, *Ac-'ton*, and *Kingston*) was a more strange Introduc-'tion to Peace, than for his Majesty not to suffer 'himself to be coop'd up on all Sides, because a 'Treaty had been mentioned; which was so really

* This *Reply*, which, on account of the Length of it, we omit, was not ordered to be printed till the 2d of *November*, tho' passed by both Houses in *July*. It may be found both in *Rushworth* and *Husband*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Success of our *Petitions* than we formerly had; 'and are thereby necessitated to stand upon our just 'Defence, and to seek this speedy and powerful 'Assistance of our Brethren of *Scotland*, according 'to that Act agreed upon in the Parliament of both 'Kingdoms, the common Duty of Christianity, 'and the particular Interests of their own King-'dom: To which we hope God will give such a 'Blessing, that it may produce the Preservation of 'Religion; the Honour, Safety, and Peace of his 'Majesty, and all his Subjects; and a more strict 'Conjunction of the Counsels, Designs, and En-'deavours of both Nations, for the Comfort and 'Relief of the Reformed Churches beyond the 'Seas.'

JOHN BROWN, *Cler. Parl.*

Nov. 7. 1642. HEN. ELSYNGE, *Cler. Par. D. Com.*

In *Answer* to the foregoing *Declaration* of Parliament, the King sent the following *Message* to the Lords of his Privy Council of *Scotland*, some time after: But we bring it in here for the Sake of Connection.

Right Trusty and Right Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors, and Right Trusty and Well-beloved Counsellors, we greet you well,

The King's Answer, addressed to the Privy-Council of Scotland.

'WE have lately seen a Paper, presented to us 'by the Earl of *Lindsay*, as a *Declaration* 'of the Lords and Commons assembled in the Par-'liament of *England*, of the seventh of *November*, 'to our Subjects of our Kingdom of *Scotland*; 'which, after many high Taxes of us and our Go-'vernment, very earnestly invites, and in a Man-'ner challenges, Assistance from that our Native 'Kingdom, of Men and Arms for making a War 'against us; making a Claim to that Assistance, by 'virtue of the late Act of *Pacification*, to the which '(out of our Desire to make a perpetual Union be-'tween our two Kingdoms, for the Happiness of 'both, and by it the more firmly to establish our

'own

'own Greatness and just Power) we chearfully con-
'sented.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

November.

'As we are, at our Soul, afflicted that it hath been 'in the Power of any factious, ambitious, and 'malicious Persons, so far to possess the Hearts of 'many of our Subjects of *England*, as to raise this 'miserable Distemper and Distraction in this King-'dom, against all our real Actions and Endeavours 'to the contrary; so we are glad that this Rage 'and Fury hath so far transported them, that they 'apply themselves, in so gross a Manner, to our 'Subjects of *Scotland*; whose Experience of our 'Religion, Justice, and Love of our People, will 'not suffer them to believe those horrid Scandals 'laid upon us; and their Affection, Loyalty, and 'Jealousy of our Honour, will disdain to be made 'Instruments to oppress their Native Sovereign, by 'assisting an odious Rebellion.

'We have, from Time to Time, acquainted our 'Subjects of that Kingdom with the Accidents and 'Circumstances which have disquieted this; how '(after all the Acts of Justice, Grace, and Favour 'performed on our Part, which were, or could be, 'desired to make a People completely happy) we 'were driven, by the Force and Violence of rude 'and tumultuous Assemblies, from our City of '*London*, and our two Houses of Parliament: How 'Attempts have been made to impose Laws upon 'our Subjects without our Consent, contrary to the 'Foundation and Constitution of this Kingdom: 'How our Forts, Goods, and Navy were seized 'and taken from us by Force, and employed against 'us: Our Revenue and ordinary Subsistence wrested 'from us: How we have been pursued with scan-'dalous and reproachful Language; bold, false, and 'seditious Pasquils and Libels publickly allowed 'against us; and been told, *That we might, with-'out Want of Modesty and Duty, be deposed.*

'Now, after all this, before any Force was raised 'by us, an Army was raised, and a General ap-'pointed to lead that Army against us; with a 'Commission to kill, slay, and destroy all such who

'should

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'should be faithful to us. That when we had been, 'by these Means, compelled, with the Assistance 'of our good Subjects, to raise an Army for our 'necessary Defence; we sent divers gracious *Mes-* '*sages*, earnestly desiring that the Calamities and 'Miseries of a Civil War might be prevented by a 'Treaty, and so we might know the Ground of 'this Misunderstanding. How we were absolutely 'refused to be treated with; and how at last the 'Army (raised, as was pretended, for the Defence 'of our Person) was brought into the Field against 'us, gave us Battle; and (though it pleased God to 'give us the Victory) destroyed many of our good 'Subjects, with as imminent Danger to our own 'Person and our Children, as the Skill and Malice of 'desperate Rebels could contrive. Of all which, 'and the other Indignities which have been offered 'us, we doubt not the Duty and Affection of our '*Scots* Subjects will have so just a Resentment, that 'they will express to the World the Sense they 'have of our Sufferings. And our good Subjects 'of *Scotland* are not, we hope, so great Strangers 'to the Affairs of this Kingdom, to believe that 'this Misfortune and Distraction is begot and brought 'upon us by our two Houses of Parliament; tho', 'in Truth, no unwarrantable Action against the 'Law can be justified even by that Authority. 'They well know how the Members of both 'Houses have been driven thence, in so much that 'of above five hundred Members of the House of 'Commons, there are not now there above eighty, 'and of above one hundred of the House of Peers 'not above fifteen or sixteen. All which are so 'awed by the Multitude of *Anabaptists*, *Brownists*, 'and other Persons, desperate and decayed in their 'Fortunes, in and about the City of *London*, that, 'in Truth, their Consultations have not the Free-'dom and Privilege which belongs to Parliaments.

'Concerning any Commissions granted by us to '*Papists* to raise Forces, we must refer our good 'Subjects to a *Declaration*, lately set forth by us 'upon the Occasion of that Scandal, which we 'send

'ſend together with this; and for our own true and 'zealous Affection to the Proteſtant Religion, (the 'Advancement whereof our Soul deſires) we can 'give no other Inſtance, than our conſtant Practice, 'on which Malice itſelf can lay no Blemiſh, and 'thoſe many *Proteſtations* we have made in the 'Sight of Almighty God; to whom we know we 'ſhall be dearly accountable, if we fail in the 'Obſervation.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'For that ſcandalous Imputation of our Intention of bringing in foreign Forces; as the ſame 'is raiſed without the leaſt Colour or Shadow of 'Reaſon, and ſolemnly diſavowed by us in many of 'our *Declarations*; ſo there cannot be a clearer Argument to our Subjects of *Scotland*, that we have 'no ſuch Thought, than that we have hitherto 'forborne to require the Aſſiſtance of that our Native Kingdom; from whoſe Obedience, Duty, 'and Affection we ſhould confidently expect it, if 'we thought our own Strength here too weak to 'preſerve us; and of whoſe Courage and Loyalty 'we ſhall look to make uſe, before we ſhall think 'of any foreign Aid to ſuccour us. And we know 'no reaſonable or underſtanding Man can ſuppoſe 'our good Subjects of *Scotland* are obliged, or enabled by the late Act of Parliament in both Kingdoms, to obey the Invitation which is made to 'them by this pretended *Declaration*; when it is 'ſo evidently provided for by that Act, *That as the 'Kingdom of* England *ſhall not make War againſt 'the Kingdom of* Scotland, *without Conſent of the 'Parliament of* England; *ſo the Kingdom of* Scotland *ſhall not make War againſt the Kingdom of* England, *without the Conſent of the Parliament of* Scotland;' and when they have always declared 'themſelves ſo careful of our Honour, Safety, 'and juſt Rights, which now undergo ſo great Violation.

'This we have thought fit to ſay upon Occaſion of this late *Declaration*, and do commend it 'to you the Lords of our Privy-Council of our 'Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be communicated and 'pub-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'should be faithful to us. That when we had been, 'by these Means, compelled, with the Assistance 'of our good Subjects, to raise an Army for our 'necessary Defence; we sent divers gracious *Mes-* '*sages*, earnestly desiring that the Calamities and 'Miseries of a Civil War might be prevented by a 'Treaty, and so we might know the Ground of 'this Misunderstanding. How we were absolutely 'refused to be treated with; and how at last the 'Army (raised, as was pretended, for the Defence 'of our Person) was brought into the Field against 'us, gave us Battle; and (though it pleased God to 'give us the Victory) destroyed many of our good 'Subjects, with as imminent Danger to our own 'Person and our Children, as the Skill and Malice of 'desperate Rebels could contrive. Of all which, 'and the other Indignities which have been offered 'us, we doubt not the Duty and Affection of our '*Scots* Subjects will have so just a Resentment, that 'they will express to the World the Sense they 'have of our Sufferings. And our good Subjects 'of *Scotland* are not, we hope, so great Strangers 'to the Affairs of this Kingdom, to believe that 'this Misfortune and Distraction is begot and brought 'upon us by our two Houses of Parliament; tho', 'in Truth, no unwarrantable Action against the 'Law can be justified even by that Authority. 'They well know how the Members of both 'Houses have been driven thence, in so much that 'of above five hundred Members of the House of 'Commons, there are not now there above eighty, 'and of above one hundred of the House of Peers 'not above fifteen or sixteen. All which are so 'awed by the Multitude of *Anabaptists*, *Brownists*, 'and other Persons, desperate and decayed in their 'Fortunes, in and about the City of *London*, that, 'in Truth, their Consultations have not the Free-'dom and Privilege which belongs to Parliaments.

'Concerning any Commissions granted by us to '*Papists* to raise Forces, we must refer our good 'Subjects to a *Declaration*, lately set forth by us 'upon the Occasion of that Scandal, which we

'send

'ſend together with this; and for our own true and 'zealous Affection to the Proteſtant Religion, (the 'Advancement whereof our Soul deſires) we can 'give no other Inſtance, than our conſtant Practice, 'on which Malice itſelf can lay no Blemiſh, and 'thoſe many *Proteſtations* we have made in the 'Sight of Almighty God; to whom we know we 'ſhall be dearly accountable, if we fail in the 'Obſervation.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'For that ſcandalous Imputation of our Intention of bringing in foreign Forces; as the ſame 'is raiſed without the leaſt Colour or Shadow of 'Reaſon, and ſolemnly diſavowed by us in many of 'our *Declarations*; ſo there cannot be a clearer Argument to our Subjects of *Scotland*, that we have 'no ſuch Thought, than that we have hitherto 'forborne to require the Aſſiſtance of that our Native Kingdom; from whoſe Obedience, Duty, 'and Affection we ſhould confidently expect it, if 'we thought our own Strength here too weak to 'preſerve us; and of whoſe Courage and Loyalty 'we ſhall look to make uſe, before we ſhall think 'of any foreign Aid to ſuccour us. And we know 'no reaſonable or underſtanding Man can ſuppoſe 'our good Subjects of *Scotland* are obliged, or enabled by the late Act of Parliament in both Kingdoms, to obey the Invitation which is made to 'them by this pretended *Declaration*; when it is 'ſo evidently provided for by that Act, *That as the 'Kingdom of* England *ſhall not make War againſt 'the Kingdom of* Scotland, *without Conſent of the 'Parliament of* England; *ſo the Kingdom of* Scotland *ſhall not make War againſt the Kingdom of* England, *without the Conſent of the Parliament of* Scotland;' and when they have always declared 'themſelves ſo careful of our Honour, Safety, 'and juſt Rights, which now undergo ſo great Violation.

'This we have thought fit to ſay upon Occaſion of this late *Declaration*, and do commend it 'to you the Lords of our Privy-Council of our 'Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be communicated and 'pub-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'published to all our loving Subjects there: And if 'the grave Counsel and Advice, which you derived 'hither by your Act of the 22d of *April* last*, had 'been followed here, in a tender Care of our Royal 'Person, and of our Princely Greatness and Au-'thority, then would not this Face of Confusion 'have appeared, which now threatens this King-'dom: And therefore we require you to use your 'utmost Endeavours to inform our Subjects of that 'our Kingdom of the Truth of our Condition; 'and that you suffer not the Scandals and Imputa-'tions, laid on us by the Malice and Treason of 'some Men, to make any Impression in the Minds 'of our People, to the lessening or corrupting their 'Affection and Loyalty to us; but that you assure 'them the Hardships we now undergo, and the 'Arms we have been compelled to take up, are for 'the Defence of our Person, and the Safety of our 'Life; for the Maintenance of the true Protestant 'Religion; for the Preservation of the Laws, Li-'berties, and Constitutions of this Kingdom; and 'for the just Privileges of Parliament; and we 'look no longer for the Blessing of Heaven, than 'we endeavour the Defence and Advancement of 'all these: And we doubt not a dutiful Concur-'rence in our Subjects of *Scotland*, in the Care of 'our Honours and just Rights, will draw down a 'Blessing upon that Nation too.'

Nov. 9. A Letter was read, directed to the Lord *Grey* of *Werk*, as Speaker, from the Lord *Falkland*, with his Majesty's *Reply*, inclosed, to the *Answer* of both Houses to his Majesty's *Message* of the 12th Inst. which was also read as follows:

The King's Reply to the Parliament's last Answer.

'THAT his *Message* of the 12th, though not 'received by them till the 14th, was sent to 'them, first, upon the same Day on which it was 'dated; and, meeting with Stops by the Way, was 'again sent upon the 13th, and taken upon that 'Day,

* In our Tenth Volume, p. 504.

'Day, at Ten in the Morning, by the Earl of *Essex*; and, though not to him directed, was by him 'opened; so the Slowness of the Delivery is not 'so strange, as the Stop of that Letter said to be sent 'by Sir *Peter Killigrew*, which his Majesty hath 'not yet received; but concludes, from the Matter 'expressed to have been contained in that Letter, '(to wit, to know his Pleasure, whether he intend-'ed the Forbearance of Hostility) and by the Com-'mand of such Forbearance, said to be sent to the 'Lord of *Essex*'s Army, that no such Forbearance 'was already concluded; and, consequently, neither 'had his Majesty Cause to suppose that he should 'take any of their Forces unprovided and secure, in 'an Expectation of a fair Treaty; neither could 'any hostile Act of his Majesty's Forces have been 'a Course unsuitable to his Expressions; much less 'could an Endeavour to prepossess that Place, (for so 'he hop'd he might have done, which might have 'stopp'd the further March of these Forces to-'wards him; which, for ought appeared to him, 'might as well have been intended to *Colebrook* as '*Brentford*; and, by that, the further Effusion of 'Blood) deserve that Style.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'His Majesty further conceives, That the print-'ting, so out of Time, such a *Declaration* as their '*Reply* to his *Answer* to theirs of the 26th of *May*,* 'but the Day before they *voted* the Delivery of 'their *Petition*; and the March of the Earl of *Es-'sex*'s Forces to *Brentford*, so near to his Majesty, 'when the Committee at the same Time attended 'him with a *Petition* for a Treaty, (the Earl of '*Essex* being before possess'd of all the other Ave-'nues to his Army, by his Forces at *Windsor*, *Ac-'ton*, and *Kingston*) was a more strange Introduc-'tion to Peace, than for his Majesty not to suffer 'himself to be coop'd up on all Sides, because a 'Treaty had been mentioned; which was so really

* This *Reply*, which, on account of the Length of it, we omit, was not ordered to be printed till the 2d of *November*, tho' passed by both Houses in *July*. It may be found both in *Rushworth* and *Husband*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'and so much desired by his Majesty, that this Proceeding seems to him, purposely, by some intended to divert, which it could not do, that his Inclination.

'That his Majesty had no Intention to master the City by so advancing, besides his Profession, which how meanly soever they seem to value it, he conceives a sufficient Argument, especially being only opposed by Suspicions and Surmises, may appear by his not pursuing his Victory at *Brentford*; but giving Order to his Army to march away to *Kingston* as soon as he heard that Place was quitted, before any Notice or further Appearance of Forces from *London*; nor could he find a better Way to satisfy them before-hand, that he had no such Intention, but that his Desire of Peace and of Propositions that might conduce to it still continued, than by that *Message* of the twelfth; for which Care of his he was requited by such a Reception of his *Message* and Messenger, as was contrary at once both to Duty, Civility, and the very Customs and the Law of War and Nations; and such as theirs, though after this Provocation, have not found from him. †

'His Majesty wonders that his Soldiers should be charged with thirsting after Blood, who took above 500 Prisoners in the very Heat of the Fight, his Majesty having since dismissed all the common Soldiers, and entertained such as were willing to serve him, and required only from the rest an Oath not to serve against him. * And his Majesty supposes such most apt and likely to maintain their Power by Blood and Rapine, who have got it only by Oppression and Injustice; that his is vested in him by the Law, and by that only (if the destructive

† Mr. *White*, the King's Messenger, was very roughly used by the Earl of *Essex*, and the Parliament committed him to the *Gatehouse*, not without the Motion of some Men. That he might be executed as a Spy. *Clarendon*. 8vo. Vol. III. p. 76.

* Two of the Parliament's most eminent Chaplains, Dr. *Downing*, and Mr. *Marshal*, publickly avowed, That those Men were not obliged by that Oath. *Ibid.* p. 81.

'ſtructive Counſels of others would not hinder ſuch 'a Peace, in which that might once again be the 'univerſal Rule, and in which Religion and Juſtice 'can only flouriſh) he deſires to maintain it. And 'if Peace were equally deſired by them, as it is by 'his Majeſty, he conceives it would have been pro-'per to have ſent him ſuch a Paper, as ſhould have 'contained juſt Propoſitions of Peace, and not an 'unjuſt Accuſation of his Counſels, Proceedings, and 'Perſon. And his Majeſty intends to march to ſuch a 'Diſtance from his City of *London*, as may take away 'all Pretence of Apprehenſion from his Army, that 'might hinder them, in all Security, from yet prepa-'ring them to preſent to him; and will there be rea-'dy either to receive them, or end the Preſſures and 'Miſeries which his Subjects, to his great Grief, 'ſuffer through this War, by a preſent Battle.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

When this was read, the Earl of *Northumberland* informed the Houſe, That he had received a Packet of Letters, taken about Mr. *Murray*, who brought this *Reply* from the King; and deſired to be directed what to do with them. Hereupon the Lords opened and peruſed the Papers, and found a Copy of the *Reply*, with a *Declaration* of his Majeſty, and a Warrant ſent to the King's Printer to print them. Upon which a Conference was reſolved on with the other Houſe, to deſire them to join in appointing a Committee, to conſider what *Anſwer* was fit to be given to this *Reply* of the King's; it being a Buſineſs of ſo great Conſequence, that either a great deal of Miſery or a great deal of Happineſs would follow upon the Reſolution to be taken thereupon.

A Conference thereupon.

November 21. Mr. *Shute*, at the Head of ſeveral Citizens of *London*, appeared this Day again before the Commons. What he had to offer ſtands thus upon their *Journals*, 'That he came to ſpeak to them from the moſt Active and the moſt Religious Part of the City, to acquaint the Houſe they underſtood that an Accommodation was on Foot; which grieved their Hearts, conſidering what follow-

Farther Propoſals from the Citizens of London.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

ed on the last. But if the Accommodation went not on, then to consider how Monies might be raised, in such sort as that the whole Charge might not lye upon the Good and Godly Party; but that the Malignant Party might be forced to bear their Share, fully, according to their Abilities.

'Another Thing which troubled them, he said, was an Imputation cast upon the Godly Party of the City, by the Malignant Party, as if they desired an Independent Government should be set up in the Church, which they desired might be wiped off.'

After returning Thanks to the Citizens for their Propositions and the Affection expressed in them, the King's last *Message* was read; and the Question being put, Whether the House would, forthwith, resolve itself into a Committee to take it into Consideration? it passed in the Affirmative, only by 75 against 65; when, after some Debate on the *Message*, the Question being again put, Whether the House should be resolved into a Committee Tomorrow Morning to resume this Debate? The House divided, when the Numbers were 67 for the Question and 66 against it: Two small Majorities to carry such important Questions, upon which, as the Lords had before observed, depended the Good or the Misery of the Kingdom.

November 22. This *Answer* took up a great deal of Time in perfecting; for tho' a Committee of both Houses went immediately upon it, yet, this Day, we find Mr. *Murray*, the King's Messenger, was discharged from Attendance, and sent back; because, it is said, it was uncertain how long it might be ere the *Answer* would be ready; and the Speaker was ordered to write to the Lord *Falkland* to acquaint the King with the Reason for this Delay.

The same Day the Commons being informed, That divers Citizens were at the Door, they were called in, and Mr. *Shute*, once more, told them, in the Name of the rest, That one Thing, which exceedingly troubled them, was, the Point of Accommodation

modation of Peace, more to be feared than their Power.——If the Accommodation proceeded not, Monies then to be raised. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

They would propound three Ways:

1. Concerning Plate in the Halls of *London*.

2. Subscriptions in the several Wards underwritten, not yet brought in.

3. Weekly Subscriptions to be advanced.

The Means for saving of Monies.

1. To cut off superfluous Charges by unnecessary Officers in the Army.

2. That there may be due Musters.

3. Indifferent honest Men to be chosen in every Ward, to raise and advance the Subscriptions.——Foreign Merchants to be brought in, to give their Assistance to the Public.—Then they withdrew.

And being again call'd in, Mr. Speaker, by Command of the House, returned them Thanks, as before.

November 23. A Report was made to the Lords of a Conference held Yesterday; where Mr. *Pymme* said, he was appointed by the House of Commons to acquaint their Lordships with some *Votes* pass'd by that House, in *Answer* to the King's *Reply*, to which they desired the Lords Concurrence. These were divided into two Parts:

1. 'That, in the *Answer* to his Majesty's *Message*, the Houses should desire the King to return to his Parliament; to the end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties may be secured by the Advice of Parliament; that the Process and Justice of Parliament, being the supream Court of Judicature, might have its free Course, and be executed on Delinquents; and that they might not be protected and kept from Justice by Force. In particular, that the Lord *Digby* and Mr. *Henry Wilmot*, be, presently, delivered over to the Justice of Parliament. That the Commons remember what Misfortune lately befell the two Regiments, at *Brentford*, upon the last Treaty; therefore they now think fit to *declare*, That both Armies shall be left to take all Advantage they can, on both Sides, in the mean Time.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

2. Concerning the Challenge; the House of Commons say, They think it strange that the King of *England* should send a Challenge and Invitation to a Battle with his own Subjects, seeing, heretofore, his Majesty seemed to decline the Effusion of Blood, and professed using all Means to prevent the same: Therefore the House of Commons resolve to be in Readiness; but if his Majesty will withdraw himself from his Cavaliers and the Army, he shall be received; if not, they will not decline, if he has a Mind to give a Battle, the Time and Place being first appointed.

'These are the Heads the House of Commons have resolved on; which, if their Lordships should concur with, they desired that Committees of both Houses might be appointed to put them into a Form fit to be sent to his Majesty.'

A Petition drawn up by the Lords, in Answer to the King's last Reply.

This Report being made, the Lords *ordered*, That the Consideration of this Matter should be put to a Committee of their whole House then present; and immediately the House was adjourned, during Pleasure, the Lords going into the Prince's Lodgings to debate it. And, in the Afternoon of this Day, the Earl of *Holland*, one of the Committee appointed, in the Morning, to consider of the foregoing *Votes*, delivered in a Draught of a *Petition*, to be presented to the King, in which they thought fit to leave out the whole, relating to the Challenge, and only to send the following:

May it please your Majesty,

IT is humbly desired by both Houses of Parliament, That your Majesty would be pleased to return to your Parliament with your Royal, not your Martial, Attendants; to the end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties, may be settled and secured by their Advice; finding, by a late and sad Accident, that your Majesty is invironed by some such Counsels, as do rather persuade a desperate Division, than a Joining and a good Agreement with your Parliament and People; and we shall be ready to give your Majesty Assurances of such

such Security, as may be for your Honour and the Safety of your Royal Person. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Or else we shall, in convenient Time, consider of fit Propositions *to be sent to your Majesty, such as may be for the Preservation of God's true Religion, your Majesty's Honour, Safety, and Prosperity, and to the Peace and Happiness of this and your other Kingdoms.*

The Lords, on the Question, agreed to this *Petition*, and ordered it to be sent down to be communicated to the Commons at another Conference.

Next Day a Report of this second Conference was made in the House of Lords, That the Commons said, They studied nothing more than the good Correspondency between the two Houses, and they desired a Continuance of it; though they differed somewhat in Opinion, about the Conference last Night, on the last *Petition* intended to be sent to his Majesty. That they agreed to the first; but had *resolved*, That the latter Part, beginning with the Words, *Or else*, &c. should be left out. To this the Lords consented; and also to another *Vote* of that House, to send to the Lord-General, the Earl of *Essex*, to desire him to go on, notwithstanding, with all Advantages, in prosecuting the War. Accordingly, the former Part of the *Petition* was sent in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, to be by him presented to the King. Which, after [illegible] by the Commons, is sent to the King.

The same Day we meet with, in the *Commons Journals*, a *Vote* and *Division* of that House, which shews the great Jealousy they had of any Intelligence being carried to the King: For the Question being propounded, Whether Mr. *Jessy*, the King's Servant, should have Mr Speaker's Warrant to go to the King, to carry him Stockings, and other Necessaries; it passed in the Affirmative by 26 against 18, but this on Condition of Mr. *Wheeler*'s undertaking, that Mr. *Jessy* should carry nothing else. The Tellers upon this Occasion were Sir *Ed-*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. *Edward Ascough*, and Mr. *Trenchard*, for the Yeas; Mr. *Marten* and Mr. *Long*, for the Noes.

November.

A Committee appointed to desire a farther Supply from the Citizens of London.

November 25. An *Order* had been made, the Day before, for sending to the Lord Mayor to call a Common Hall, and this Day a Committee of five Lords, with a proportionable Number of Commoners were appointed to go thither. At this Meeting the Earl of *Manchester*,† one of the Committee, and Mr. *Pymme* another, were the Mouths of the rest; whose Speeches best explain the Errand they were sent upon. * And first the Earl:

The Earl of Manchester's Speech to them, proposing an Assessment for that Purpose.

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,

'I Am commanded to come hither upon an Errand, that I know, in the general, is never pleasing; which is, to express Wants and Necessities; but I know very well to whom I speak, it is to the Worthy, the Generous, and the Loyal Citizens of *London*; who have exceeded all Story, in their Care for the Life and Preservation both of the Parliament and the whole Kingdom; therefore it would imply a Distrust of your present Care to make a Supply, if I should use any Arguments to you: I shall only say this, That if there be not an Enlargement of yourselves in some Measure at the present, I shall be very unwilling to express the Condition that I fear our Army will be reduced to: This is all that I shall say, that if there be a present Supply, I do not doubt but the Army will move with that Effect, as it will prevent all those barbarous and savage Plunderings of the Forces that are now under the Command of those Officers of the King.

'I confess the Burthen hath lain very heavy upon the City of *London* only; but you shall have the Grace and the Honour of the Preservation both of

† This Lord has been formerly spoken of under the Title of Lord *Kimbolton*; but, about this Time, succeeded to the Earldom of *Manchester* by the Death of his Father.

* *London*, printed for *Peter Cole*, near the *Royal Exchange*, 1642.

of Religion and the Laws and Liberties of this Kingdom.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'This Gentleman, that is by me, will let you know that it is already in Proposition, (and I do not doubt but it will speedily have the Concurrence of the Lords with it) to take that Care, that the future Burthen shall not lie upon those here in the City of *London*, that have been careful to make Supplies, even to the exhausting of themselves; but that it shall go generally to all those that have shrowded themselves under a Kind of Neutrality here in *London*; and that it shall go generally throughout all the Counties of *England*; that so the common Calamities shall be prevented, or supported by the common Burden laid upon the whole Kingdom.'

Then Mr. *Pymme* spoke to this Effect:

My Lord Mayor and Gentlemen,

And Mr. Pymme's in Support thereof.

'WE come not to tell your Lordship and these worthy Citizens only our Wants and Dangers, but we come to speak the Thanks of the Parliament to you, for that which you have already done; that you have shewed so much Affection to the Public, and that it hath produced so good Effects throughout the whole Kingdom, as that now you have an Army raised, most out of this City, able to defend (with God's Blessing) the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom, if it may be upheld: And we come not only to give you Thanks for that which you have done, but to stir you up to join with us in giving Thanks to God that hath given such a Blessing to our Endeavours, that when, by Letters sent into all Parts almost, they did presume before-hand to triumph in the Ruin and Plundering of this City, God prevented it, and hath kept you safe; kept your Houses, your Walls, your Suburbs safe from that that was intended against you; and truly as we have sought for this Blessing, by Fasting and by Prayer, so it is

fit

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

fit that we ſhould teſtify our Thankſgiving for it, and this is a neceſſary Part of our Errand which we are ſent about: And that we may be ſerviceable to God's Providence ſtill, as he hath ſtirred up your Hearts to do ſo much already, ſo that he would ſtir you up ſtill to continue to do that which is fit to be done for the future; and that you will do it in ſuch a Way as may be moſt pleaſing to yourſelves.

'We come not hither that, by any Conſent here in public, you ſhould bind yourſelves in particular; but we come to let you know the Dangers of the Kingdom, the Senſe the Parliament hath of it, and of the City eſpecially, that you may not loſe that which hath been already done; but that you may go on ſtill chearfully to do the full Work. And we come to tell you, that the Parliament doth intend the Burden ſhall not lie upon you that are well affected and come in voluntarily; but that they have thought upon a Way, and have begun it already, and I hope, within two or three Days at the moſt, it ſhall be publiſhed to you, that all that are indiſpoſed ſhall be forced to do that, which, out of Readineſs and Chearfulneſs to the Public Good, they will not do of themſelves: Neither limit we it to the City and Suburbs; but we are in a Courſe to draw in all the Counties of the Kingdom, that as the Burden is univerſal, ſo the Aid may be univerſal; for this is the Thoughts of the Parliament.

'If it pleaſe God to bleſs your Forces that are already raiſed and continued, we hope you ſhall not only ſee Peace again in the Kingdom, and Security for your Religion, but ſee that the Burden ſhall lie upon thoſe who have been the Engines and Actors of the Miſchiefs and Troubles that are come upon us, that they ſhall recompence the Charges you have been at already.

This is the Intention of the Parliament, only for the preſent do ſomewhat; every Man, as God ſhall enable him, do ſomewhat that may meet the preſent

present Necessities; and prevent the Dangers that require a present Subsistance, and present Supply of the Army; without which what is it will follow, but the Danger of the City, the Ruin of the Countries about, the Stopping up of the River which is almost taken from you, and the Loss of the Sea Coasts? You cannot have better Hearts than you have; God hath enabled many of you with Purses, I hope it will be so readily disposed that we shall have a full Joy in the Recompence of it, and the Retribution; which we shall all pray God to bring to pass.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The Result of this was, That the Citizens desired a Committee of both Houses might be sent to them, with a Power to call some Citizens and others to their Assistance, and then they hoped this Request of Parliament would prove successful.

The Want of Money to carry on the War being now so very urgent, an *Ordinance* was sent up this Day from the Commons, For *Assessing* Non-Contributors upon the *Propositions* for lending Money and raising of Horse and Arms: This being the first Instance of any *Assessment* laid upon the Subject without the Royal Assent, is too remarkable to be pass'd over.

An Ordinance passed accordingly, for Assessing Non-Contributors to the Parliament's Army.

'WHereas the King, seduced by wicked Counsel, hath raised an Army, and levied War against the Parliament, and great Numbers of Forces are daily raised under the Command of Papists, and other ill-affected Persons, by Commission from his Majesty: And whereas divers Delinquents are protected from public Justice by his Majesty's Army; and sundry Outrages and Rapines are daily committed by the Soldiers of the said Army, who have no respect to the Laws of God or the Land, but burn and plunder the Houses, and seize and destroy the Persons of divers of his Majesty's good Subjects: And whereas, for the Maintenance of the said Army, divers Assessments are made upon several Counties, and his Ma-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Majesty's Subjects are compelled by the Soldiers 'to pay the same; which said Army, if it should 'continue, would soon ruin and waste the whole 'Kingdom, and overthrow Religion, Law, and 'Liberty: For suppressing of which said Army 'and ill-affected Persons, there is no probable Way, 'under God, but by the Army raised by Authority 'of Parliament; which said Army so raised cannot 'be maintained without great Sums of Money; yet 'for raising such Sums, by reason of his Majesty's 'withdrawing himself from the Advice of the Par-'liament, there can be no Act of Parliament pas-'sed with his Majesty's Assent, albeit there is great 'Justice that the said Money should be raised; the 'Lords and Commons in Parliament having taken 'the same into their serious Considerations, and 'knowing that the said Army, so raised by them, 'hath been hitherto, for the most, maintained by 'the voluntary Contributions of divers well-affected 'Persons, who have freely contributed according 'to their Abilities:

'But considering there are divers others within 'the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Sub-'urbs of the same, and also within the Borough of '*Southwark*, that have not contributed at all towards 'the Maintenance of the said Army; or if they 'have, yet not answerable to their Estates, who, 'notwithstanding, receive Benefit and Protection 'by the said Army, as well as others; and there-'fore it is most just that they should, as well as o-'thers, be charged to contribute to the Mainte-'nance thereof:

'Be it therefore *ordained* by the Lords and Com-'mons in Parliament assembled, and by Authority 'thereof, That *Isaac Pennington*, Lord Mayor of 'the City of *London*, Sir *John Woolaston*, Knight and 'Alderman, Alderman *Towes*, Alderman *War-'ner*, Alderman *Andrews*, Alderman *Chambers*, 'Alderman *Fowke*, Sir *Thomas Soame*, Knight and 'Alderman; *Samuel Vassal*, *John Ven*, *Morris* '*Thompson*, and *Richard Warring*, Citizens, or any

'four

'four of them, shall hereby have Power and Au-
'thority to nominate and appoint, in every Ward
'within the City of *London*, six such Persons as they,
'or any four of them, shall think fit; which said six
'so nominated, or any four of them, shall hereby
'have Power to enquire of any that shall remain,
'or be within the said several Wards, that have not
'contributed upon the *Propositions* of both Houses
'of Parliament, concerning the raising of Money,
'Plate, Horse, Horsemen, and Arms, for Defence
'of the King and both Houses of Parliament, and
'also of such as are able Men, that have contributed,
'yet not according to their Estates and Abilities.

An. 18 Car. I. 1642. November.

'And the said six Persons so nominated, or any
'four of them, within their several and respective
'Wards and Limits, shall have Power to assess such
'Person and Persons, as are of Ability and have not
'contributed, and also such as have contributed,
'yet not according to their Ability, to pay such
'Sum or Sums of Money, according to their Estates,
'as the said Assessors, or any four of them, shall
'think fit and reasonable, so as the same exceed
'not the twentieth Part of their Estates, and to
'nominate and appoint fit Persons for the Collec-
'tion thereof.

'And if any Person so assessed shall refuse to pay
'the Money assessed upon him, it shall be lawful
'to and for the said Assessors and Collectors, or any
'of them, to levy the said Sum so assessed by Way
'of Distress and Sale of the Goods of the Person
'so assessed, and refusing.

'And if any Person so distrained shall make Re-
'sistance, it shall be lawful to and for the respective
'Assessors and Collectors, or any of them, to call
'to their Assistance any of the Trained Bands of the
'said City of *London*, or any other his Majesty's
'Subjects, who are hereby required to be aiding and
'assisting to the said Assessors and Collectors in the
'Premises.

'And it is hereby further *ordained*, That the re-
'spective Burgesses of *Westminster* and *Southwark*,
'to-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'together with the several Committees appointed 'for the Subscriptions of Money, Plate, Horse, 'Horse-Men, and Arms within the said City and 'Borough, shall respectively have Power hereby to 'nominate Assessors for the same City and Borough, 'in such Manner as the Lord Mayor, *&c.* hath for 'the City of *London*; and the said Assessors, or 'any four of them, to name Collectors as afore-'said; which said Assessors and Collectors shall 'have the same Power respectively, within their re-'spective Limits, as those to be nominated within 'the said City of *London* have hereby limited to 'them.

'And for the Suburbs of *London* and *Westminster*, 'the respective Knights of the Shire where the said 'Suburbs are, shall have hereby the like Power to 'name Assessors; and they so named, or any four 'of them, and the Collectors by them to be nomi-'nated, or any of them within their respective Li-'mits, shall have the like Power respectively, as 'the Assessors and Collectors for *London* have by 'virtue of this *Ordinance*.

'And be it *ordained*, That the Sums so assessed 'and levied as aforesaid, shall be paid in at *Guild-'hall*, *London*, to the Hands of Sir *John Wolaston*, 'Knight, *John Warner*, *John Towes*, and *Thomas 'Andrews*, Aldermen, or any two of them; and 'the Assessors and Collectors, to be nominated by 'virtue hereof, shall Weekly report to the Commit-'tee of the House of Commons for the *Propositions* 'aforesaid, what Sums of Money have been assessed 'and what Sums have been levied Weekly, accord-'ing to the Purport hereof; and the said Monies so 'levied and paid in, shall be issued forth in such 'Sort, as the other Monies raised upon the *Propo-'sitions* aforesaid, and not otherwise.'

Which being reinforced by several others;

In consequence of this *Ordinance* the Parliament proceeded to raise Money by an *Assessment*: But meeting with some Difficulties in the Collection thereof, they made another *Ordinance* to explain the

the First; whereby it was *ordained*, That if the Collectors could not find sufficient Assets to distrain upon the Refusers, they had Power to enquire what Rents, Tithes or Debts were owing to them, and to demand the same of their respective Tenants or Debtors. This was followed by a Third *Ordinance*, for the speedy Execution of the First. Soon after came out another, impowering the Collectors to break open any Chests, Trunks, Boxes, Doors, or other Things, whereby to take a Distress for the Sums assessed. But all these not answering the urgent Necessities of the Parliament, yet another *Ordinance* was made; whereby, in such Cases where the Collectors should certify that a sufficient Distress was to be had, but they could not come at it without Opposition, two Colonels and three Captains, named in the said *Ordinance*, and such Captains, Lieutenants, Officers, and Soldiers as they should appoint, were authorized to search for the Refusers of such Assessment; and bring them before the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations, who had Power given them, by this last *Ordinance*, to imprison the Refusers in such Places of the Kingdom, and for so long Time, as they should appoint and order; and that the Families of all such Persons, so imprisoned, should no longer remain within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, the Suburbs, and the Counties adjacent.—But at the same Time that the Parliament took such effectual Care to raise this Assessment upon the Subjects at large, they made an *Ordinance*, That the several and respective Assessors shall not assess any of the Members of either of the Houses of Parliament, or the Assistants of the House of Peers; any Thing in the preceeding *Ordinances*, or any of them, to the contrary notwithstanding: But that the Members of either House shall be assessed by that House whereof they are Members, and the Assistants of the Peers by the House of Peers.* This last

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

* The above-mentioned *Ordinances* may be seen at Length in *Husband's Collections* from p. 766, to p. 777.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

last *Ordinance*, however, for impowering the Members to tax themselves, was carried in the House of Commons by a Majority of only 43 Voices against 40.

On occasion of all these *Ordinances* the King published the following *Declaration*, addressed to all his loving Subjects:

The King publishes an Answer to them.

'IT would not be believed (at least great Pains have been taken that it might not) that the 'pretended *Ordinance* of the *Militia*, (the first Attempt that ever was to make a Law by *Ordinance* 'without our Consent) or the keeping us out of '*Hull*, and taking our Arms and Munition from 'us, could any Way concern the Interest, Property, or Liberty of the Subject; and it was confessed by that desperate *Declaration* itself of the '26th of *May*, *That if they were found guilty of 'that Charge of destroying the Title and Interest of 'our Subjects to their Lands and Goods, it were indeed 'a very great Crime.** But it was a strange fatal 'Lethargy which had seized our good People, and 'kept them from discerning, that the Nobility, 'Gentry, and Commonalty of *England*, were not 'only stripped of their Pre-eminences and Privileges, but of their Liberties and Estates, when 'our just Rights were denied us; and that no Subject could, from thenceforth, expect to do well 'at home, when we were driven from our Houses 'and our Towns.

'It was not possible that a Commission could be 'granted to the Earl of *Essex*, to raise an Army against us; and, for the Safety of our Person and 'Preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, to 'pursue, kill, and slay us, and all who wish well 'to us; but that, in a short Time, inferior Commanders, by the same Authority, would require 'our good Subjects. for the Maintenance of the Property of the Subject, to supply them with such 'Sums of Money as they think fit, upon the Pe-

'nalty

* This *Declaration* is in our Eleventh Volume, p. 89.

'nalty of *being plundered with all Extremity of War*; (as the Style of Sir *Edward Baynton*'s Warrant runs against our poor Subjects in *Wiltshire*) and by such Rules of unlimited Arbitrary Power, as are inconsistent with the least Pretence or Shadow of that Property it would seem to defend.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'If there could be yet any Understanding so unskilful and supine to believe, that these Disturbers of the Public Peace do intend any Thing but a general Confusion, they have brought them a sad Argument to their own Doors to convince them: After this *Ordinance* and *Declaration* it is not in any sober Man's Power to believe himself worth any Thing, or that there is such a Thing as Law, Liberty, or Property left in *England*, under the Jurisdiction of these Men; and the same Power that robs them now of the twentieth Part of their Estates, hath, by that, but made a Claim, and intitled itself to the other nineteen, when it shall be thought fit to hasten the general Ruin.

'Sure, if the Minds of all Men be not stubbornly prepared for Servitude, they will look on this *Ordinance*, as the greatest Prodigy of Arbitrary Power and Tyranny that any Age hath brought forth in any Kingdom: Other Grievances, and the greatest, have been conceived intolerable, rather by the Logic and Consequence, than by the Pressure itself; this, at once, sweeps away all that the Wisdom and Justice of Parliaments have provided for them. Is their Property in their Estates, (so carefully looked to by their Ancestors, and so amply established by us against any Possibility of Invasion from the Crown) which makes the meanest Subject as much a Lord of his own, as the greatest Peer, to be valued or considered? Here is a twentieth Part of every Man's Estate (or so much much more as four Men will please to call the twentieth Part) taken away at once; and yet a Power left to take a twentieth still of that which remains; and this to be levied by such Circumstances of Severity, as no Act of Parliament ever consented to. Is their Liberty, which

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'distinguishes Subjects from Slaves, and in which 'this Free-born Nation hath the Advantage of all 'Christendom, dear to them? They shall not only 'be imprisoned in such Places of this Kingdom, (a 'Latitude of Judgment no Court can challenge to 'itself in any Cases) but for so long Time as the 'Committee of the House of Commons for Exa-'mination shall appoint and order; the House of 'Commons itself having never assumed, or, in the 'least Degree, pretended to a Power of Judicature; 'having no more Authority to administer an Oath, '(the only Way to discover and find out the Truth 'of Facts) than to cut off the Heads of any of our 'Subjects; and this Committee, being so far from 'being a Part of the Parliament, that it is destructive 'to the whole, by usurping to itself all the Power 'of King, Lords, and Commons.

'All who know any thing of Parliaments, know 'that a Committee of either House ought not, by 'the Law, to publish their own Results; neither are 'their Conclusions of any Force without the Confir-'mation of the House, which hath the same Power 'of controling them, as if the Matter had never 'been debated: But that any Committee should be 'so contracted (as this of Examination, a Style no 'Committee ever bore before this Parliament) as to 'exclude the Members of the House, who are equal-'ly trusted by their Country, from being present 'at their Counsels, is so monstrous to the Privileges 'of Parliament, that it is no more in the Power of 'any Man to give up that Freedom, than of him-'self to order, that, from that Time, the Place for 'which he serves shall never more send a Knight 'or Burgess to the Parliament; and, in Truth, is no 'less than to alter the whole Frame of Government, 'to pull up Parliaments by the Roots, and to com-'mit the Lives, Liberties, and Estates of all the 'People of *England*, to the Arbitrary Power of a few 'unqualified Persons: who shall dispose thereof ac-'cording to their Discretion, without Account to 'any Rule or Authority whatsoever.

'Are

'Are their Friends, their Wives, and Children (the greatest Blessings of Peace, and Comforts of Life) precious to them? Would their Penury and Imprisonment be less grievous by those Cordials? They shall be divorced from them, banished, and shall no longer remain within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, the Suburbs and the Counties adjacent; and how far those adjacent Counties shall extend no Man knows.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Is there any Thing now left to enjoy, but the Liberty to rebel, and destroy one another? Are the outward Blessings only of Peace, Property, and Liberty, taken and forced from our Subjects? Are their Consciences free and unassaulted by the Violence of these Fire-brands? Sure the Liberty and Freedom of Conscience cannot suffer by these Men. Alas! all these Punishments are imposed upon them, because they will not submit to Actions contrary to their natural Loyalty, to their Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and to their late voluntary *Protestation*, which obliges them to the Care of our Person and our just Rights.

'How many Persons of Honour, Quality, and Reputation, of the several Counties of *England*, are now imprison'd without any Objections against them, but Suspicion of their Loyalty? How many of the gravest and most substantial Citizens of *London*, by whom the Government and Discipline of that City was preserved, are disgraced, robbed, and imprisoned, without any Process of Law, or Colour of Accusation, but of Obedience to the Law and Government of the Kingdom; whilst *Anabaptists* and *Brownists*, with the Assistance of vitious and debauched Persons of desperate Fortunes, take upon them to break up and rifle Houses, as public and avowed Ministers of a new invented Authority? How many godly, pious, and painful Divines, whose Lives and Learning hath made them of reverend Estimation, are now slandered with Inclination to Popery; discountenanced and imprisoned, for discharging their Consciences, instructing the People in the Christian Duties of Re-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'ligion and Obedience; whilst schismatical, illiterate, and scandalous Preachers fill the Pulpits and Churches with Blasphemy, Irreverence, and Treason, and incite their Auditory to nothing but Murder and Rebellion?

'We pass over the vulgar Charm, by which they have captivated such who have been contented to dispence with their Consciences for the Preservation of their Estates; and by which they persuade Men, chearfully, to part with this twentieth Part of their Estates to the good Work in hand; for whoever will give what he hath, may escape robbing: *They shall be repaid upon the Public Faith, as all other Monies lent upon the* Propositions *of both Houses*. It may be so; but Men must be condemned to a strange Unthriftiness who will lend upon such Security. The Public Faith indeed is as great an Earnest as the State can give, and engages the Honour, Reputation, and Honesty of the Nation, and is the Act of the Kingdom; it is the Security of the King, the Lords, and Commons, which can never need an Executor, can never die, never be bankrupt; and therefore we willingly consented to it for the Indemnity of our good Subjects of *Scotland* (who, we hope, will not think the worse of it, for being so often and so cheaply mentioned since); but that a *Vote* of one or both Houses should be an Engagement upon the Public Faith, is as impossible as that the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations should be the High Court of Parliament.

'And what is or can be said, with the least Shadow of Reason, to justify these Extravagances? We have not lately heard of the old Fundamental Laws which used to warrant the Innovations; this needs a Refuge even below those Foundations. They will say, They cannot manage their great Undertakings without such extraordinary Ways. We think so too; but that proves only they have undertaken somewhat they ought not to undertake; not that it is lawful for them to do any Thing that is convenient for those Ends.

'We

'We remembered them long ago, and we can- An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.
'not do it too often, of that excellent Speech of
'Mr. *Pymme*: *The Law is that which puts a Dif-*
'*ference betwixt Good and Evil, betwixt Just and*
'*Unjust*; *if you take away the Law, all Things will*
'*fall into Confusion, every Man will become a Law*
'*unto himself*; *which, in the depraved Condition of*
'*human Nature, must needs produce many great E-*
'*normities*; *Lust will become a Law, and Envy will*
'*become a Law*; *Covetousness and Ambition will be-*
'*come Laws*; *and what Dictates, what Decisions,*
'*such Laws will produce, may easily be discerned.* It
'may indeed, by the sad Instances over the whole
'Kingdom: But will Posterity believe, that, in
'the same Parliament, this Doctrine was avowed
'with that Acclamation, and these Instances after
'produced? That, in the same Parliament, such
'Care was taken, that no Man should be commit-
'ted, in what Case soever, without the Cause of his
'Imprisonment expressed, and that all Men should
'be immediately bailed, in all Cases bailable: And,
'during the same Parliament, that Alderman *Pen-*
'*nington*, or indeed any Body else but the sworn
'Ministers of Justice, should imprison whom they
'would, and for what they would, and for as long
'a Time as they would? That the King should
'be reproached with Breach of Privilege for accusing
'Sir *John Hotham* of High Treason, when, with
'Force of Arms, he kept him out of *Hull*, and
'despised him to his Face; because, in no Case, a
'Member of either House might be committed or
'accused, without Leave of that House of which
'he is a Member: And yet that, during the same
'Parliament, the same Alderman should commit
'the Earl of *Middlesex*, a Peer of the Realm, and
'the Lord *Buckhurst*, a Member of the House of
'Commons, to the *Counter* without Reprehension?
'That to be a Traitor (which is defined, and every
'Man understands) should be no Crime; and to
'be called a Malignant (which Nobody knows the
'Meaning of) should be Ground enough for close
'Imprisonment? That a Law should be made,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'That whosoever should presume to take *Tunnage* 'and *Poundage*, without an Act of Parliament, 'should incur the Penalty of a *Premunire*; and, in 'the same Parliament, that the same Imposition 'should be laid upon our Subjects, and taken by an '*Order* of both Houses, without and against our 'Consent? Lastly, That, in the same Parliament, 'a Law should be made to declare the Proceedings 'and Judgment upon *Ship Money* to be illegal and 'void; and, during that Parliament, that an *Or-* '*der* of both Houses shall, upon Pretence of Ne-'cessity, enable four Men to take away the twen-'tieth Part of their Estates from all their Neigh-'bours, according to their Discretion.

'But our good Subjects will no longer look upon 'these and the like Results, as upon the Counsels and 'Conclusions of both our Houses of Parliament, 'though all the World knows even that Authority 'can never justify Things unwarrantable by Law; 'they well know how few of the Persons trusted 'by them are present at their Consultations; of 'above 500, not 80; and of the House of Peers, 'not above a fifth Part; that they who are present 'enjoy not the Privilege and Freedom of Parlia-'ment; but are besieged by an Army, and awed by 'the same Tumults, which drove us and their Fel-'low-Members from thence, to consent to what 'some few seditious, schismatical Persons amongst 'them do propose.

'These are the Men who, joining with the *Ana-* '*baptists* and *Brownists* of *London*, first changed the 'Government and Discipline of that City; and 'now, by the Pride and Power of that City, would 'undo the Kingdom, whilst their Lord Mayor (a 'Person accused and known to be guilty of High 'Treason) by a new Legislative Power of his own, 'suppresses and revises the Book of Common-Prayer, 'robs and imprisons whom he thinks fit, and, with 'the Rabble of his Faction, gives Laws to both 'Houses of Parliament; and tells them they will 'have no Accommodation: Whilst the Members, 'sent and intrusted by their Counties, are expelled

'the

'the House, or committed, for refusing to take 'the Oath of *Association* to live and die with the 'Earl of *Essex*, as very lately Sir *Sidney Montague*. *

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'These are the Men who have presumed to send 'Ambassadors, and to enter into Treaties with foreign States, in their own Behalfs; having, at this 'Time, an Agent of their own with the States of '*Holland*, to negotiate for them upon private Instructions.

'These are the Men who, not thinking they have 'yet brought Mischief enough upon this Kingdom, 'at this Time invite and sollicit our Subjects of '*Scotland* to enter this Land with an Army against 'us.

'In a Word, these are the Men, who have made 'this last devouring *Ordinance* to take away all Law, 'Liberty, and Property from our People; and have, 'by it, really acted that upon our People, which, 'with infinite Malice, and no Colour or Ground, 'was laboured to be infused into them, to have 'been our Intention by the *Commissions* of *Array*.

'We

* We find this Entry in the *Commons Journals* of *December* 3, 1642. The Question for adhering to the Earl of *Essex* in this Cause, for the Maintenance and Preservation of the true Protestant Religion, the King's Person, the Laws of the Land, the Peace of the Kingdom, the Liberty and Property of the Subject, and the Rights and Privileges of Parliament, was this Day read to Sir *Sidney Montague*, [Member for *Huntingdonshire*] and his Vote demanded: And he gave his Negative Voice unto it.

Hereupon the Commons *resolved*, by a Majority of 48 Voices against 45, *1st*, 'That he be disabled for continuing any longer a Member of this House, during this Parliament. *2dly*, 'That his Person be forthwith secured. And, *3dly*, 'That he be forthwith committed Prisoner to the *Tower*.'

Sir *Sidney Montague* was then called to the Bar, and, kneeling there, Mr. Speaker pronounced Sentence against him accordingly, For not yielding his Consent to assist the Earl of *Essex* in the Maintenance of Religion, the King's Person, the Liberty of the Subject, the Rights and Privileges of Parliament; and giving for his Reason, That the King had declared such Traitors, as should adhere unto the said Earl in this Cause; and pulled out a *Declaration* out of his Pocket, and thereby seemed to lay an Imputation upon all the Members, and others, that had declared to assist the said Earl in this Cause: The House thinking it a great Crime, that any Member should be guided by *Declarations* from abroad, and not by his own Judgment, in giving his Vote.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'We have done. What Power and Authority 'these Men have, or would have, we know not: 'For ourself we challenge none such; we look 'upon the Pressures and Inconveniences our good 'Subjects bear, even by us and our Army (which 'the Army first raised by them enforced us to levy 'in our Defence, and their Refusal of all Offers and 'Desires of Treaty enforceth us to keep) with very 'much Sadness of Heart: We are so far from re-'quiring a twentieth Part of their Estates, (though 'for their own visible Preservation) that, as we 'have already sold or pawned our own Jewels, and 'coined our own Plate, so we are willing to sell all 'our own Land and Houses for their Relief; yet 'we do not doubt but our good Subjects will seri-'ously consider our Condition, and their own Du-'ties, and think our Readiness to protect them with 'the utmost Hazard of our Life, deserves their Rea-'diness to assist us with some Part of their Fortunes; 'and whilst other Men give a twentieth Part of 'their Estates, to enable them to forfeit the other 'nineteen, that they will extend themselves to us in 'a liberal and free Proportion for the Preservation of 'the rest; and for the Maintenance of God's true 'Religion, the Laws of the Land, the Liberty of 'the Subject, and the Safety and very Being of Par-'liament and of this Kingdom; for if all these ever 'were, or can be, in manifest Danger, it is now in 'this present Rebellion against us.

'Lastly, We will and require all our loving Sub-'jects of what Degree or Quality soever, as they 'will answer it to God, to Us, and to Posterity, by 'their Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy; as they 'would not be looked upon now, and remembered 'hereafter, as Betrayers of the Laws and Liberty they 'were born to; that they, in no Degree, submit to 'this wild pretended *Ordinance*; and that they pre-'sume not to give any Encouragement, or Assistance, 'to the Army now in Rebellion against us: Which if, 'notwithstanding, they shall do, they must expect 'from us the severest Punishment the Law can in-'flict, and a perpetual Infamy with all good Men.'

A *Letter* from the *Hague*, directed to Secretary *Nicholas*, supposed to come from Col. *Goring*, having been taken from the Gentleman who brought it, and carried to the Parliament: It was this Day, *November* 26, read in both Houses, and by them ordered to be printed; and also to be read in all the Churches of *London* and the Suburbs thereof.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Hague, Nov. 22, 1642.

An intercepted Letter from Colonel Goring.

IT is now long since I had the Opportunity of writing to you; but, since my first, have not heard any thing from you at all. The Occasion of our long Stay here was, first, the Expectation of our Irish *Ships; next, the Raising of Money, which the* Proposition *of* Newcastle *drew as fast as it could advance.*

The Failing of the Ships, had it not been supplied by the Reputation of the King's Success at Land, had given us a dangerous Blow here; but that hath so supported our Credit, that the Prince of Orange *hath since played his Part, and advanced all those Sums we were to expect; of which* 20,000l. *is sent towards you,* 20,000l. *to* Newcastle, *and* 20,000l. *at least, we bring with us; besides the great Business, which we expect this Day a final End of, which will advance* 60,000l. *more, in which we are ascertained of the Prince of* Orange's *utmost Power; such, nevertheless, we apprehend the Importance of the Queen's being in* England, *that we had gone this last Week, and expected the Coming of that after, had not an unseasonable Compliment from your Side stopped us, till this Express sent to you.*

The Fleet is now ready, and this Week we certainly go, if those Counsels, or Chances, that tend to dilatory Resolutions, move not more effectually than the certain Advantages of our Expedition and Dispatch from hence; all our Affairs being now done, and nothing more to be expected.

That you may know upon what Grounds we go, and what Security we expect there, and what Advantage you in the South *are to derive from it, you must know we have sent over* 10,000 *Foot Arms besides the Garrison, near* 2000 *Horse Arms, and* 20 *Pieces of*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

of Cannon. We bring over Waggons and all Accommodation, to march so soon as we arrive; we carry very considerable Officers from hence, and, by the Advice we receive from that Side, 8000 *Men are on foot already, and six Troops of Horse; the rest will not be long in raising after we come there. General* King *is designed for Lieutenant-General, and hath been with the Queen, and will be suddenly there.*

From Denmark *are likewise sent Arms for* 10,000 *Foot and* 1500 *Horse, with a Train of Artillery, and every Thing proportionable, to the very Drums and Halberds. Two good Men of War come their Convoy, and in them an Ambassador to his Majesty, a Person of great Quality in* Denmark: *I hope it will be a general Care there to see him nobly treated; for the Entertainment and Neglect of the last was much complained of, and is so much resented by that King, that it had like to have frustrated all our Expectations in that Court, had not* Cochran *very handsomely evaded it: He comes along with the Ambassador; with whom, if you encounter, he will communicate some Propositions of great Importance; which, in how much the fewer Hands they are carried, will be so much the better liked by them you are to deal with; if any Employment in this Affair may fall upon your Servant that writes to you, I know you will not be unmindful of him.*

We have great Apprehensions here by something intimated from my Lord of Holland, *of a Treaty further entered into than we have Advertisement of, or can well approve; we have confidently believed your approaching* London *(if you had not made too long Stay upon the Way) would have determined that Matter; and what the Difficulties are now of that, we cannot yet understand, for if Intelligence from hence came as freely to you as to us, the King's Party there are very considerable, and full of that Expectation; and a Day or two's Loss of Time, by the late Example of* Hull, *may be judged what contrary Consequences it may produce.*

We hear my Lord of Essex *approaches* London, *but believe he will be so waited on by the King's Horse, as not*

not to let him join with their Forces there; being now so lame an Army, without Horse or Cannon, as the Relations you send hither makes him to be. We believe the King's Horse likewise now so great a Body, that it will be as troublesome as unnecessary for them to subsist together; and think so many Troops might be well spared as might be sent into Kent, *to countenance a Party to be set on foot there; which, according to our Intelligence here, would undoubtedly be found very affectionate and considerable; so that by sparing* 500 *Horse, you might possibly add to your Army* 5000 *Foot, to be employed upon the River on that Side the Town.*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

If the unhappy Interception had not come of the last Week's Letters, we had undoubtedly been with you, on the other Side, in Norfolk *and* Essex, *within three Weeks; and, in that Condition, having all the Kingdom behind us on every Side, it will not be hard to judge whether would have been better able to subsist, they within the Town, or the King's Army without; admit my Lord of* Essex *were gotten in, or that the Town had not yielded itself so soon as you had approached, you may yet certainly presume on this, that, by our being once on foot, we shall be able to collect for you all the* 400,000 l. Subsidies, *universally throughout the Kingdom; which will make the King's Army subsist, and wear out theirs, besides the Money which we bring.*

What we expect from Denmark *and* France, *are all Encouragements to make us expect no Treaties to be admitted, but upon Terms of great Advantage and Honour to his Majesty; these you are best able to judge of upon the Place.*

If the King have Use of them, I am confident you may expect from France, *(so soon as you set Foot in* Kent, *and shall intimate your Desire of the same) the three Regiments of his Majesty's own Subjects there, employed under Colonel* Hill, *Colonel* Fitz-Williams, *and Colonel* Bealing. *Your Letters directed to* Newcastle *will direct our Addresses to* France, *for I hope we shall yet be there before you can return any in Answer to this.*

We

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

We find, both in *Rushworth*'s and *Husband*'s *Collections*, the following Account of the Manner how this *Letter* was intercepted and taken:

The Manner of its being intercepted.

'On *Saturday* Morning the Gentleman that brought this *Letter* from *Holland*, came up to *London* in a *Gravesend* Boat, intending to land at *Brentford*, and therefore, for the more Expedition, shot the Bridge; which being perceived by one of the Pinnaces that lay on this Side for the Guard of the City and Parliament, and being known to be a *Gravesend* Boat, which always land on the other Side at *Billingsgate*, they called to them to know their Business; but they, not regarding their Summons, still posted away; whereupon the Men in the Ship made after them and hauled them in, examined the Gentleman, and, having some Suspicion, searched him and found this, with some other Letters about him; whereupon they presently carried him up to the Parliament; where, after Examination, his Letters were taken from him, and he committed to safe Custody.'

'*Nov.* 28. The King's *Answer* to the Parliament's last *Petition* to him, inclosed in a Letter to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read in that House, as follows:

The King's Answer to the Petition of both Houses, of the 24th.

'WE expected such *Propositions* from you, as 'might speedily remove and prevent the 'Misery and Desolation of this Kingdom; and that, 'for the Effecting thereof, (we now residing at a 'convenient Place, not far from our City of *London*) 'Committees from both our Houses of Parliament 'should attend us; for you pretended, by your *Mes-* '*sage* to us at *Colebrooke*, that those were your De- 'sires: Instead thereof (and thereby let all the World 'judge of the Design of that Overture) we have only 'received your humble *Petition*, *That we would* '*be pleased to return to our Parliament, with our* '*Royal, not our Martial Attendance.*

'All our good Subjects that remember what we 'have so often told you and them upon this Sub-

'ject,

'ject, and what hath since passed, must, with Indignation, look upon this Message, as intended by the Contrivers thereof for a Scorn to us; and thereby designed by that Malignant Party (of whom we have so often complained, whose Safety and Ambition is built upon the Divisions and Ruins of this Kingdom, and who have too great an Influence upon your Actions) for a Wall of Separation betwixt us and our People.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'We have told you the Reasons why we parted from *London*; how we were chased thence, and by whom: We have often complained that the greatest Part of our Peers, and of the Members of our House of Commons, could not, with Safety to their Honours and Persons, continue and vote freely among you; but, by Violence and cunning Practices, were debarred of those Privileges which their Birth-rights, and the Trust reposed in them by their Counties, gave them; the Truth whereof may sufficiently appear by the small Number of those that are with you.

'We have offered to meet both our Houses in any Place free and convenient for us and them, but we could never receive the least Satisfaction in any of these Particulars, nor for those scandalous and seditious Pamphlets and Sermons which swarm amongst you. That's all one you tell us: *It is now for our Honour, and for the Safety of our Royal Person, to return to our Parliament.* But herein your formerly Denying us a Negative Voice gives us Cause to believe, that, by giving yourselves that Name without us, you intend not to acknowledge us to be Part of it.

'The whole Kingdom knows that an Army was raised under Pretence of *Orders* of both Houses, an Usurpation never heard of before in any Age; which Army hath pursued us in our own Kingdom, gave us Battle at *Keynton*, and endeavoured to take away the Life of us and our Children; and yet (these Rebels being newly recruited, and possessed of our City of *London*) we are courteously invited to return to our Parliament there; that is,

'into

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'into the Power of this Army. Doth this signify 'any other Thing, than that, since the traiterous En-'deavours of those desperate Men could not snatch 'the Crown from our Head, (it being defended by 'the Providence of God, and the Affections and Loy-'alty of our good Subjects) we should now tamely 'come up and give it them; and put ourselves, our 'Life, and the Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes of 'all our good Subjects into their merciful Hands?

'Well, we think not fit to give any other *Answer* 'to this Part of your *Petition*: But as we impute 'not this Affront to both our Houses of Parliament, 'nor to the Major Part of those that are now pre-'sent there, but to that dangerous Party we and 'the whole Kingdom must cry out upon; so we 'shall, for our good Subjects Sake, and out of our 'most tender Sense of their Miseries and the general 'Calamities of this Kingdom, which must, if this 'War continue, speedily overwhelm this whole 'Nation, take no Advantage of it. But, if you 'shall really pursue what you presented to us at '*Colebrooke*, we shall make good all we then gave 'you in *Answer* to it, whereby the Hearts of our 'distressed Subjects may be raised with the Hopes of 'Peace; without which Religion, the Laws, and 'your Liberties, can no way be settled and secured.

'Touching the late and sad Accident you men-'tion, if you thereby intend that of *Brentford*, we 'desire you, once, to deal ingenuously with the 'People; and to let them see our last *Message* to 'you, and our *Declaration* to them, concerning the 'same; (both which we sent to our Press at *Lon-'don*, but were taken away from our Messenger, 'and not suffered to be published) and then we 'doubt not but they will be soon undeceived, and 'easily find out those Counsels, which do rather 'persuade a desperate Division, than a good Agree-'ment betwixt us, our two Houses, and People.'

The Lords *ordered*, That this *Message* should be communicated to the Commons forthwith, and it was sent down to them accordingly.

Nov.

Nov. 29. The Messengers were dismissed that brought the last *Message* from the King, and a *Letter* was wrote to the Lord *Falkland*, intimating, That the Houses would send an *Answer* to it by an Express of their own.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The same Day an *Ordinance* of Parliament was made, For the speedy setting forth certain Ships, in all Points furnished for War, to prevent the bringing over Soldiers, Money, Ordnance, and other Ammunition from beyond the Sea, to assist the King against the Parliament of *England*. By this *Ordinance* it was declared, That all Adventurers in this Enterprize should have and enjoy all Ships, Goods, Money, Plate, Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Pillage, and Spoil, which should be seized or taken, as their own proper Goods.

An Ordinance for fitting out Ships to cut off all Supplies from the King.

Thus much for the Proceedings in *November*.

So many and various are the *Orders*, *Instructions*, *Letters of Intelligence*, *&c.* from different Parts of the Kingdom, all relating to War, and enter'd in the *Journals* of both Houses, in the Beginning of *December*, that it would be tiresome to repeat them: We will not therefore trouble the Reader with any of them, but cast an Eye to see what was doing without Doors at this Time; and how the King's or Parliament's Power rose or fell in different Parts of the Kingdom.

The State of the Kingdom at this Time.

After the late Rencounter at *Brentford*, the King withdrew his Army over *Kingston-Bridge* to *Oatlands*; and from thence, by *Colebrooke* and *Reading*, to *Oxford*.

At the same Time the Earl of *Newcastle* had associated all the Counties *North* of *Yorkshire*, for the King; on which Commissions were sent down from the Parliament, to the Lord *Fairfax* and others, to associate the last-named County with all the Midland Counties up to *North-Wales*. However the Earl marched forward, with a gallant Army of *Northumbrians*, *&c.* towards *York*. At *Pierfbridge*, a Pass over the River *Tees*, he was opposed by a Party of Lord *Fairfax*'s Horse, commanded

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'into the Power of this Army. Doth this signify 'any other Thing, than that, since the traiterous En- 'deavours of those desperate Men could not snatch 'the Crown from our Head, (it being defended by 'the Providence of God, and the Affections and Loy- 'alty of our good Subjects) we should now tamely 'come up and give it them; and put ourselves, our 'Life, and the Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes of 'all our good Subjects into their merciful Hands?

'Well, we think not fit to give any other *Answer* 'to this Part of your *Petition:* But as we impute 'not this Affront to both our Houses of Parliament, 'nor to the Major Part of those that are now pre- 'sent there, but to that dangerous Party we and 'the whole Kingdom must cry out upon; so we 'shall, for our good Subjects Sake, and out of our 'most tender Sense of their Miseries and the general 'Calamities of this Kingdom, which must, if this 'War continue, speedily overwhelm this whole 'Nation, take no Advantage of it. But, if you 'shall really pursue what you presented to us at '*Colebrooke*, we shall make good all we then gave 'you in *Answer* to it, whereby the Hearts of our 'distressed Subjects may be raised with the Hopes of 'Peace; without which Religion, the Laws, and 'your Liberties, can no way be settled and secured.

'Touching the late and sad Accident you men- 'tion, if you thereby intend that of *Brentford*, we 'desire you, once, to deal ingenuously with the 'People; and to let them see our last *Message* to 'you, and our *Declaration* to them, concerning the 'same; (both which we sent to our Press at *Lon- 'don*, but were taken away from our Messenger, 'and not suffered to be published) and then we 'doubt not but they will be soon undeceived, and 'easily find out those Counsels, which do rather 'persuade a desperate Division, than a good Agree- 'ment betwixt us, our two Houses, and People.'

The Lords *ordered*, That this *Message* should be communicated to the Commons forthwith, and it was sent down to them accordingly.

Nov.

Nov. 29. The Meſſengers were diſmiſſed that brought the laſt *Meſſage* from the King, and a *Letter* was wrote to the Lord *Falkland*, intimating, That the Houſes would ſend an *Anſwer* to it by an Expreſs of their own.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The ſame Day an *Ordinance* of Parliament was made, For the ſpeedy ſetting forth certain Ships, in all Points furniſhed for War, to prevent the bringing over Soldiers, Money, Ordnance, and other Ammunition from beyond the Sea, to aſſiſt the King againſt the Parliament of *England*. By this *Ordinance* it was declared, That all Adventurers in this Enterprize ſhould have and enjoy all Ships, Goods, Money, Plate, Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Pillage, and Spoil, which ſhould be ſeized or taken, as their own proper Goods.

An Ordinance for fitting out Ships to cut off all Supplies from the King.

Thus much for the Proceedings in *November*.

So many and various are the *Orders*, *Inſtructions*, *Letters of Intelligence*, *&c.* from different Parts of the Kingdom, all relating to War, and enter'd in the *Journals* of both Houſes, in the Beginning of *December*, that it would be tireſome to repeat them: We will not therefore trouble the Reader with any of them, but caſt an Eye to ſee what was doing without Doors at this Time; and how the King's or Parliament's Power roſe or fell in different Parts of the Kingdom.

The State of the Kingdom at this Time.

After the late Rencounter at *Brentford*, the King withdrew his Army over *Kingſton-Bridge* to *Oatlands*; and from thence, by *Colebrooke* and *Reading*, to *Oxford*.

At the ſame Time the Earl of *Newcaſtle* had aſſociated all the Counties *North* of *Yorkſhire*, for the King; on which Commiſſions were ſent down from the Parliament, to the Lord *Fairfax* and others, to aſſociate the laſt-named County with all the Midland Counties up to *North-Wales*. However the Earl marched forward, with a gallant Army of *Northumbrians*, *&c.* towards *York*. At *Pierſbridge*, a Paſs over the River *Tees*, he was oppoſed by a Party of Lord *Fairfax*'s Horſe, commanded

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'into the Power of this Army. Doth this signify 'any other Thing, than that, since the traiterous En- 'deavours of those desperate Men could not snatch 'the Crown from our Head, (it being defended by 'the Providence of God, and the Affections and Loy- 'alty of our good Subjects) we should now tamely 'come up and give it them; and put ourselves, our 'Life, and the Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes of 'all our good Subjects into their merciful Hands?

'Well, we think not fit to give any other *Answer* 'to this Part of your *Petition:* But as we impute 'not this Affront to both our Houses of Parliament, 'nor to the Major Part of those that are now pre- 'sent there, but to that dangerous Party we and 'the whole Kingdom must cry out upon; so we 'shall, for our good Subjects Sake, and out of our 'most tender Sense of their Miseries and the general 'Calamities of this Kingdom, which must, if this 'War continue, speedily overwhelm this whole 'Nation, take no Advantage of it. But, if you 'shall really pursue what you presented to us at '*Colebrooke*, we shall make good all we then gave 'you in *Answer* to it, whereby the Hearts of our 'distressed Subjects may be raised with the Hopes of 'Peace; without which Religion, the Laws, and 'your Liberties, can no way be settled and secured.

'Touching the late and sad Accident you men- 'tion, if you thereby intend that of *Brentford*, we 'desire you, once, to deal ingenuously with the 'People; and to let them see our last *Message* to 'you, and our *Declaration* to them, concerning the 'same; (both which we sent to our Press at *Lon- 'don*, but were taken away from our Messenger, 'and not suffered to be published) and then we 'doubt not but they will be soon undeceived, and 'easily find out those Counsels, which do rather 'persuade a desperate Division, than a good Agree- 'ment betwixt us, our two Houses, and People.'

The Lords *ordered*, That this *Message* should be communicated to the Commons forthwith, and it was sent down to them accordingly.

Nov.

Nov. 29. The Messengers were dismissed that brought the last *Message* from the King, and a *Letter* was wrote to the Lord *Falkland*, intimating, That the Houses would send an *Answer* to it by an Express of their own.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The same Day an *Ordinance* of Parliament was made, For the speedy setting forth certain Ships, in all Points furnished for War, to prevent the bringing over Soldiers, Money, Ordnance, and other Ammunition from beyond the Sea, to assist the King against the Parliament of *England*. By this *Ordinance* it was declared, That all Adventurers in this Enterterprize should have and enjoy all Ships, Goods, Money, Plate, Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Pillage, and Spoil, which should be seized or taken, as their own proper Goods.

An Ordinance for fitting out Ships to cut off all Supplies from the King.

Thus much for the Proceedings in *November*.

So many and various are the *Orders*, *Instructions*, *Letters of Intelligence*, *&c.* from different Parts of the Kingdom, all relating to War, and enter'd in the *Journals* of both Houses, in the Beginning of *December*, that it would be tiresome to repeat them: We will not therefore trouble the Reader with any of them, but cast an Eye to see what was doing without Doors at this Time; and how the King's or Parliament's Power rose or fell in different Parts of the Kingdom.

The State of the Kingdom at this Time.

After the late Rencounter at *Brentford*, the King withdrew his Army over *Kingston-Bridge* to *Oatlands*; and from thence, by *Colebrooke* and *Reading*, to *Oxford*.

At the same Time the Earl of *Newcastle* had associated all the Counties *North* of *Yorkshire*, for the King; on which Commissions were sent down from the Parliament, to the Lord *Fairfax* and others, to associate the last-named County with all the Midland Counties up to *North-Wales*. However the Earl marched forward, with a gallant Army of *Northumbrians*, *&c.* towards *York*. At *Pierfbridge*, a Pass over the River *Tees*, he was opposed by a Party of Lord *Fairfax*'s Horse, commanded

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

manded by Capt. *Hotham*, whom the Earl dispersed, and marched streight to *York*; where he published a *Declaration**, setting forth the Reasons for his taking up Arms for the King.

The Parliament had also brought several Counties, in the *West* of *England*, into an Association; and some Matters are entered in the *Journals*, for the Encouragement of this Project.

In the *South* the Event was various; *Farnham* Castle, in the County of *Surry*, was taken by the High Sheriff, for the King; which Sir *William Waller* soon after retook for the Parliament. But this Loss was amply made up by the King's Forces taking the Town of *Marlborough* by Storm, under the Command of Lord *Digby*, Lord *Grandison*, Lord *Wilmot*, Lord *Wentworth*, *&c.* so that now the Kingdom, though in the Depth of Winter, was in a Flame, from one End to the other of it.

The miserable State of *Ireland*, also, during these Combustions, was really to be pitied; both Parties in *England* laid the Blame on each other for neglecting the Succours that were to be sent to that Kingdom; but the true Reasons thereof, we think, will best appear by the following Extracts from the *Lords Journals* of the 9th of this Month.

To the High and Most Honourable Court of Parliament,

The PETITION of Sir *James Montgomery* and Sir *Hardress Waller*, Knights and Colonels, and of Colonel *Arthur Hill*, and Colonel *Audley Mervin*, in Behalf of themselves and other Commanders in his Majesty's Army in *Ireland*,

Most humbly sheweth,

A Petition, from several Officers in Ireland, to the Parliament.

THat your Petitioners, by particular Trust devolved from considerable Parts of the Army in Ireland, *have, these* 26 *Weeks, attended for some timely Succour to be dispatched to that deplorable Kingdom; and finding, to our unspeakable Grief, that the Distractions of this Kingdom afforded us very weak Hopes of any com-*

* See this at Length in *Rushworth's Collections*, Vol. V. p. 78.

competent Supplies: As we did, in a tender Resentment of the bleeding Condition thereof, petition the High Court of Parliament, so, by Licence first obtained from the Committee of Safety, out of the same Sense, in all Humility we address'd ourselves to his Majesty, whose gracious Answer *we received in Writing, and his Command to publish the same.* An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

May it therefore please your Lordships, in Obedience to his Majesty's Commands, and out of a constant Inclination to observe the Directions of this most Honourable Assembly, to grant us Leave to present to your Honours the Copy of our Petition *to his Majesty, his Majesty's* Answer *to us, and also the best and only* Remedies *appearing unto us for the present Preservation and future Being of that perishing Kingdom; accepting and humbly praying therein the further Resolutions and Directions of this High Court, in a Matter of so great Importance; wherein God's Glory, the interwoven Safety of his Majesty's Dominions, and so much Protestant Blood as yet unspilt, are so highly concern'd; their Wants being so pressing, the Power of the Enemy daily increasing, and their Ruin, without present Relief, inevitable, constrain your Petitioners humbly to beg a speedy* Answer, *further Delays being to them as dangerous as a Desertion; and if further Satisfaction of the particular Condition of every Part of the Army, and of those distressed Protestants there, be desired, your Petitioners are ready to remonstrate the same. And, as in Duty bound, shall pray,* &c.

The Petitioners were called in, and presented the said Copy, which was read *in hæc Verba:*

To the KING's Most Excellent Majesty,

The HUMBLE PETITION of Sir *James Montgomery* and Sir *Hardress Waller*, Knights and Colonels, Colonel *Arthur Hill*, and Colonel *Audley Mervine*, in Behalf of themselves and others, Commanders in his Majesty's Army in *Ireland*.

May it please your Sacred Majesty,

WE your Majesty's most humble Subjects, being intrusted from considerable Parts of your Majesty's Forces in the Kingdom of Ireland, *to petition* And to the King.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

your Majesty and your Parliament for Supplies; and finding that your Majesty had committed the Care and Managing of that War to your Parliament here, we addressed ourselves unto the same; whose Sense of our Miseries, and Inclination to redress them appeared very tender unto us; but the present Distempers of this your Majesty's Kingdom of England *(to our unspeakable Grief) are grown so great, that all future Passages, by which Comfort and Life should be conveyed unto that gasping Kingdom, seem totally to be obstructed; so that, unless your gracious Majesty, out of your singular Wisdom and fatherly Care, apply some speedy Remedy, we your distressed and loyal Subjects of that Kingdom must inevitably perish.*

Our Condition represents unto your Majesty the Estate of all your faithful Protestant Subjects in Ireland: *The Influence of Princely Favour and Goodness so actively distilled upon your Kingdom of* Ireland, *before the Birth of this monstrous Rebellion there, and since the same so abundantly expressed in Characters of a deep Sense, and lively Resentment of the bleeding Condition thereof, give us Hope, in this our deplorable Extremity, to address ourselves unto your sacred Throne; humbly beseeching that it may please your most gracious Majesty, amongst your other weighty Cares, to reflect upon the bleeding Condition of that perishing Kingdom, that timely Relief may be afforded; otherwise your loyal Subjects there must yield their Fortunes a Prey, their Lives a Sacrifice, and their Religion a Scorn, to the merciless Rebels powerfully assisted from abroad.*

Whilst we live, we rest in your Majesty's Protection; if our Deaths are signed in that Cause, we will die in your Obedience; living and dying ever pray for your Majesty's long and prosperous Reign over us.

JA. MONTGOMERY, ARTHUR HILL,
HARD. WALLER, AU. MERVINE.

Next was read his Majesty's *Answer*, dated at the Court of *Oxford*, the first of *December*, 1642.

His Majesty hath expressly commanded me to give this Answer *to this* Petition.

THAT

'THAT his Majesty, since the Beginning 'of that monstrous Rebellion, hath had no 'greater Sorrow than for the bleeding Condition of 'that his Kingdom; and as he hath, always, labour-'ed that timely Relief might be afforded to the 'same, and consented to all Propositions (how dis-'advantageous soever to himself) that have been 'offered him for that Purpose; and not only at first 'recommended their Condition to both his Houses 'of Parliament, and immediately, of his own meer 'Motion, sent over several Commissions, and caused 'some Proportion of Arms and Ammunition (which 'the Petitioners well know to have been a great 'support to the *Northern* Parts of that Kingdom) 'to be conveyed to them out of *Scotland*; and not 'only offered to find 10,000 Volunteers to undertake 'that War, but hath often since prest, by many several '*Messages*, that sufficient Succours might be hasten'd 'thither; and other Matters of smaller Importance 'laid by, which did divert it; and offered, and most 'really intended, in his own Royal Person, to have 'undergone the Danger of that War, for the De-'fence of his good Subjects, and the Chastisement 'of those perfidious and barbarous Rebels; and, in 'his several Expressions of his Desires of *Treaty* and '*Peace*, hath declared the present miserable Con-'dition, and certain future Loss of *Ireland*, to be 'one of his principal Motives, most earnestly to 'desire that the present Distractions of that King-'dom might be composed, and that others would 'concur with him to the same End: So his Ma-'jesty is well pleased that his Offers, Concurrence, 'Actions and Expressions are so rightly understood 'by the Petitioners and those who have employed 'them, notwithstanding the groundless and horrid 'Aspersions which have been cast upon him: But 'wishes that, instead of meer general Complaints '(to which his Majesty can make no Return but of 'Compassion) they could have digested, and offered 'to him any such Desires, by consenting to which 'he might convey, at least in some Degree, Com-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

His Majesty's Answer to it.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

'fort and Life to that gasping Kingdom; preserve 'his distressed and loyal Subjects of the same from 'inevitable perishing, and the true Protestant Re- 'ligion from being scorned and trampled on by those 'merciless and idolatrous Rebels.

'And if the Petitioners can yet think on any 'such, and propose them to his Majesty, he assures 'them that, by his Readiness to consent, and his 'Thanks to them for the Proposal, he will make it 'appear to them, that their most pressing personal 'Sufferings cannot make them more desirous of 'Relief, than his Care of the true Religion, and of 'his faithful Subjects, and of that Duty which 'obliges him, to his Power, to protect both, renders 'him desirous to afford it to them.'

FALKLAND.

Lastly, was read the *Remedies* which they offer for the Preservation of that Kingdom.

The HUMBLE CONCEPTIONS of Sir *James Montgomery, &c.* upon the Result of their *Petition* to his Majesty, and his *Answer* to the same.

The Remedies proposed for the Relief of Ireland.

UPON our humble Address to his Majesty to petition for the Relief of the bleeding Condition of Ireland, *his Majesty, after an Expression of his tender Resentment of our Sufferings, gave us in Answer, That to such general Complaints his Majesty can make no Return but in Compassion; and could wish we had digested such particular Desires, that he might have given his Royal Assent to convey some Comfort, tho' but in a weak Measure, to the gasping Condition thereof: Wherefore, that we might not seem insensible of his Majesty's gracious* Answer *and free* Proposals, *we have entered into a most narrow Disquisition to make some Overtures by humble Desires, as may conduce to the restoring the Glory of that Kingdom, and secure the interwoven Dependency of it with his Majesty's other Dominions: And since the Managing of the War in that distressed Kingdom hath been committed*

to

to the Vigilancy and Power of this most Honourable Assembly, and we acknowledge your pious Inclinations in expressing the same; yet, in all Humility to your superior Wisdoms, and in a deep Sense of the imminent Ruin of that Kingdom, if not speedily prevented, we offer these our Desires; which, if they receive your Approbation, we are most happy; if, for Reasons of State, best known to yourselves, they are to be laid aside, then we beg it may be construed as our Zeal, not our Presumption.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

1st, *Since this Kingdom is the Fountain from whence the Streams of Safety must flow, and that the present Distractions have so troubled the same; as we earnestly implore the Throne of Grace both for yourselves and us, so we humbly offer these unto your grave Wisdoms, as the subordinate Instruments of a happy, bless'd and timely Accommodation here, in which the King and People may rejoice; there being no other visible Way to convey such perfect Health unto that Kingdom, but that it may otherwise immediately be subject to a dangerous Relapse.*

2dly, *If this Kingdom must yet longer be diverted from that prosperous Peace, to which, to the Envy of other Nations, she hath been so fortunately wedded, we humbly desire that such competent Supplies of Money, Victuals, Cloaths, and Ammunition, may be timely transported to the Army there, without which there is not the least Hopes of longer Subsistence; that such Protestant Blood there yet unspilt, and by your own Commands there employed, may be preserved; that such Garrisons, Sea-Ports, Forts, Artillery, and other Warlike Provisions, may be secured, untill composed Times may afford such large Supplies, as may promise a Reducement of that Kingdom to their due Obedience.*

3dly, *If neither of these can suit with the present Constitution of these Times, we, in a bleeding Foresight of our miserable distressed Condition, humbly desire (if a fatal Necessity, for Preservation of all that is dear to us and our Posterity, enforce such hard and miserable Conditions upon us, as may prove inconvenient to that, and, in the End, to this Kingdom) that you will be pleased to allow them a favourable Construction.*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

Thus labouring in these Straits, we address ourselves unto your approved Wisdoms for timely Directions in a Matter of so great Concernment.

These *Petitions* and *Remonstrances*, from the Protestants of *Ireland*, the Lords referred to a Committee, as did also the Commons on their being presented to them. The latter appointed a particular Day for taking them into Consideration; but we do not find any thing further done in this Affair by either House, their own Fears and Distractions being much nearer to them at this Time.

Some Citizens of London complain of an intended Petition for an Accommodation.

Two *Petitions* to Parliament being on Foot, at the same Time, in the City of *London*, but widely different in the Contents of them, Mr. *Shute* appears again in the *Journals* of the Commons, declaring, 'That, with all Thankfulness, the Godly Party acknowledged the open Care of that House to all their Desires: That they did subject their Money and Lives, to the last Drop of Blood in their Veins, to be disposed on by Parliament:

'But they desired to clear themselves from an Imputation cast upon them by the Malignants, *That they petition against Peace.* This, he said, was far from their Intentions; but their Desires were for an honourable and secure Peace: That the Malignant Party went about to get Hands to a *Petition* to procure a *Treaty*, that the Enemy might gain Time to recollect their broken Strength; well knowing that they are so, and that they want Powder and Ammunition.'

He then presented a Copy of the adverse *Petition*, which was read; but, after returning Thanks to Mr. *Shute* and the rest of the Citizens, for this fresh Mark of their Esteem, the further Consideration of this *Petition* was deferred to another Time: And, a Day or two after, Mr. *Shute*, it seems, growing too bold in addressing the House, two of the Members were ordered to acquaint him, That the Commons resented some Expressions used by him, and admonished him how to demean himself hereafter, when he came to give Information to them.

Both

An. 13. Car. I. 1642. December.

Both Houſes of Parliament had been long jealous of their Neighbours the *Dutch*, for ſending Supplies of Men, Money, *&c.* to the King. And Mr. *Strickland*, their Agent in *Holland*, had often preſented Memorials to the States on this Subject; when, in truth, the King had nothing from thence, but what was bought up by the Sale of the Queen's Jewels, or her own Money, except what the Prince of *Orange*, her Son-in-Law, ſupplied: However the Parliament thought neceſſary, at this Time, to draw up a *Declaration*, and ſent it to Mr. *Walter Strickland* at the *Hague*, to be by him preſented to the States, to prevent any Supplies coming to the King from that Quarter. The Form of which ſtands thus in the *Lords Journals* of the 12th of this Month:

The Parliament's Remonſtrance to the Dutch againſt ſelling Ammunition to the King.

'WE the Lords and Commons, in the Parliament of *England* aſſembled, did, with much Contentment and Satisfaction, receive the Anſwer of the High and Mighty Lords, the Lords the States General of the United Provinces, to the *Declaration* preſented to them on our Behalf, by *Walter Strickland*, Eſq; finding therein many lively Expreſſions of their Affections to the Peace and Proſperity of this Kingdom, and a due Reſentment of our Troubles, and of their Care and Reſolution of hindering the Paſſage of any Men, Munition, or Arms, which might foment and increaſe the unhappy Differences and Combuſtions, wherewith this Nation is miſerably diſtracted and diſtemper'd; which we gladly and thankfully received as a Means of our preſent Safety, and a Help towards the ſettling a deſired Peace betwixt his Majeſty and his moſt loyal Subjects, and a Foundation of more near and beneficial Conjunction betwixt this Kingdom and that State; for Preſervation of the Proteſtant Religion, and Relief of many oppreſſed Princes and States, againſt the common Enemy, both theirs and ours: But this Hope and Contentment hath been much impaired by the frequent

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

'frequent Experiments we have had of the Transportation of Men, Munition, and Arms, from those Parts which have been employed against us; and many undoubted Advertisements of the continual Preparations and Endeavours of divers Traitors and Fugitives of this Nation, now residing in the *United Provinces*, to procure great Quantities of Treasure and other Warlike Provisions to be conveyed over from those Parts against the Parliament and Subjects of this Kingdom; and particularly that Colonel *Goring*, Capt. *Byron*, Sir *Francis Mackworth*, Capt. *Lloyd*, Capt. *Brett*, and Capt. *Wyndham*, with divers hundreds of Soldiers, being in the Pay of that State, are either lately shipped, or ready to embark, from some of those Parts belonging to the same for *Newcastle*; and to join with the Army of Papists and other ill-affected Persons raised, in the *North* Parts of this Kingdom, against the Parliament, and for the Subversion of the Protestant Religion here; which hath exceedingly encouraged that Party, and confirmed his Majesty in adhering to those evil Counsellors, who have been the Authors of the public Troubles and Miseries of this Kingdom, and the rejecting the many humble Petitions that he would be pleased, according to the Laws of the Kingdom, to return to his Parliament; and, by their Counsel and Advice, to secure our Religion and the Laws against the wicked Plots and Designs, which have long been and still are in Agitation for the Subversion of both; in doing whereof we have offered, and are still ready, to secure his Majesty's Person, Honour and Estate, in any Manner which may be expected from true Christians and loyal Subjects; and which we solemnly profess, in the Presence of Almighty God, to be our real Intention and hearty Desires to perform; and that whatsoever is pretended and published to the contrary, as if we had admitted any Design, or expressed any Endeavours, to the Hurt of his Person, or Prejudice of his Sovereignty, proceeds from

'the

'the false and malicious Scandals of such as are 'Enemies to the Public Peace:

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

'Wherefore we entreat that wise and prudent 'State to fulfil those Promises and Declarations, 'which they have made to us, of restraining and 'prohibiting the Transportation of Men, Arms, 'Money, or any warlike Provisions against us; 'and that they will enquire into the Faults and Ne-'glects of those Officers, who have suffered so many 'Breaches and Violations thereof; that they will 'be pleased, with all just Favour, to admit of such 'Complaints and Informations as shall be made un-'to them, by Mr. *Strickland*, in that Behalf; and 'that they will look upon this not only as a Matter 'of Civil Respect to this House, but as that which 'concerns the Honour of God, the Defence of Re-'ligion, and their own Safety and Liberty; who, 'if we be ruined, will not only be depriv'd of an 'affectionate and useful Alliance, but inviron'd 'with such Enemies as, by the same Rules and 'Principles by which they have been active to seek 'our Ruin, will be carried on to all Kind of Prac-'tices and Endeavours to ruin them.'

The History of this Intestine War will be best known by the Letters of Intelligence, which were sent to the Parliament, from different Parts of the Kingdom; and though they may perhaps, sometimes, exaggerate their own Victories, and other Advantages gained over the King's Forces; yet, at the same Time, as they lay open their own Wants and Necessities, the Insertion of them, in their proper Order of Time, will not only illustrate several Passages in the Course of this Work, but open many Scenes of Importance, hitherto concealed from the Public. We shall begin with a Letter from *Devonshire*, which was, on the 13th of this Month, presented to the House of Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference; and is entered in the *Journals* of the former only. It was addressed to the Lords, and others, of the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom, at *Westminster*.

Right

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

A Letter from Devonshire, giving an Account of the State of Affairs in the West of England.

Right Honourable,

According to our Duty and Trust reposed in us, we have used our best Endeavours for the Preservation of this County; and although little Assistance hath been afforded us by the People here, to what we expected, yet God, that never fails those that go on in his Way, and rest upon his Power and Goodness, hath so blessed us now in this Time of Straits, that he hath done great Things for us by small Means: To him therefore be the Glory and the Praise.

Upon Tuesday *the* 29*th of* November, *Captain* Thompson *and Captain* Pymme, *by Command of Colonel* Ruthen, *went to* Plimpton, *to keep that Town, with their Troops and about* 70 *Dragooners and* 200 *Foot, if they saw it might have been kept without great Hazard; but, the next Day, hearing the Enemies were marching from* Tavistock *with (as was related to us)* 3000 *Horse and Foot, and eight Pieces of Ordnance; and finding the Town of* Plimpton *not to be kept without as great a Force as should come against it, by reason the Town lies so scattering, and several Villages so near it; and so, left the Enemy should come between them and* Plymouth, *they drew forth towards the Enemy; but, Night coming on, they could not come to give them Charge, without Hazard and Damage one of another in the Dark; they then went to* Plymouth.

The Day after, being Thursday, *Colonel* Ruthen, *with four Troops of Horse and the aforesaid Dragooners, went to* Plimpton *to view the Town, and to see the Motion of the Enemy; and, finding the Town as was related to him, he then drew towards* Plymouth, *and stood upon the Lary for the Space of three Hours; forcing the Enemy, who attempted one Charge to have drawn us to their Ambuscades, to fly presently; and durst not (with all their Force, which we judge was at least* 2500 *Horse and Foot then left, for many ran away the Night before) give us a Charge upon fair Ground; but that Night they went to* Plimpton, *where they continued till* Wednesday *the* 7*th of this present Month.*

Colonel

Colonel Ruthen, *with the aforesaid four Troops of Horse and about* 100 *Dragooners, about Three of the Clock in the Morning, marched from* Plymouth *over* Rubart *Downs, being a Bye-way to* Modbury; *where were gathered together, by the Sheriff's Commands,* 3 *or* 4000 *Men, some with Arms, and some without; and we came so privately that they did not discover us untill we were within a Mile of the Town; which did so amaze them, that after Sir* Ralph Hopton *drew up all the Men he could presently get, he, with Sir* Nicholas Slanning, *ran away and escaped; and after a small Skirmish with those that flood to it, with the Loss of one Man and two hurt, and three or four Horses, we took Prisoners, the Sheriff Sir* Edmund Fortescue, *and his Brother; Sir* Edward Seymour, *Knight of the Shire for* Devonshire, *and his Son; Mr.* Basset, *Capt.* Pomeroy, *Capt.* Wood, *Capt.* Penrose, *Lieut.* Barnes *of* Exon, *and many others.*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

From thence we marched that Day, a long March of sixteen Hours on Horseback, with our Prisoners, to Dartmouth, *to the Gladding of the Hearts of the good People there; for, while we were upon our March towards* Modbury, *one Mr.* Thomas Leigh *was in Treaty with Sir* Ralph Hopton, *about the Delivery up of the Town, as we were informed; and, by his own Confession since, he had got a Warrant to free his House from Plundering; this Mr.* Leigh *we have also taken, and, with the rest of the Prisoners, have sent to* Plymouth, *this Morning, in a Frigate called the* Crescent, *by one Capt.* Plunket.

We ran a great Hazard in this Service, as your Honours may judge, for the Enemy lay on both Sides with all their Forces; Part at Plimpton *and Part at* Totness: *But the Lord carried us along in our Way, and delivered the Enemies of his Truth and of our Liberties, into our Hands, and made many more to fly before us: The Prisoners Colonel* Ruthen *hath ordered to be sent from* Plymouth, *with the first fair Wind, to* London; *and we now lie here, expecting some Force from* Exon *to join with us; and, if we can have but* 1000 *Dragooners, we hope to do the Enemy much Damage.*

We

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

We hear, this Day, that since our Coming hither the Enemy is advanced with the greatest Part of their Force to Totness; *what are left at* Plimpton *we know not. If speedy Supply comes not of Men, Money, and Arms, we fear they will plunder most of the good Towns in this County; and what it may grow to, if God doth not mightily work for us, we know not. Your Honours know of what great Concernment the Keeping of this County is, and we doubt not but the great Need of Assistance will be sufficient to move your Honours to take into Consideration the Premises; which that your Honours would be pleased to do, is the humble Petition of*

Your obedient Servants,

WILLIAM RUTHEN.
ALEXANDER PYM.
GEORGE THOMPSON.
ANTHONY ROUSE.
LEWIS DICK.

Dartmouth, December 9, 1642.

At the foregoing Conference the Lords were informed, That, upon Occasion of this Letter, the Commons had passed these *Votes* following, wherein they desired their Lordships Concurrence:

Mr. Holles appointed Commander of those Parts in Chief.

1. 'That Mr. *Holles* be desired to command the Forces in the *Western* Parts in Chief.

2. 'That my Lord General be desired to grant a Commission to Mr. *Holles* accordingly.

3. 'That a Committee of Lords and Commons may recommend to the City the State of the *Western* Counties, and earnestly move them, in regard of the Importance of those Counties, to assist the setting forth of a considerable Strength to be sent into those Parts; that the Letter from *Dartmouth* be communicated to the City of *London*; and that those Committees of both Houses may be a standing Committee, to take Care of the Furtherance and Sending away such Supplies as are resolved to be sent.'

The Lords agreed to all these *Votes*, and the following Peers were appointed to be Committees to join

join with a proportionable Number of the House of Commons, *viz.* the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Bolingbroke*, the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*, the Lords *Grey de Werk*, *Brooke*, and *Wharton*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

Nothing further occurs worth our Notice till

December 16. When a Message came from the Lord-General, with a Relation that the Parliament's Forces had taken the Castle and City of *Winchester*, with the Lord *Grandison* and 24 other Commanders Prisoners, 700 Soldiers, 600 Horse, and 600 Arms, with the Loss of a few Men only. For which Victory the Lord-General intended to give public Thanks to God, the next Lord's Day, at *Windsor*, for this great Success without Loss of Blood. His Lordship desired the Lords would give Order that a public Thanksgiving might be observed, the same Day, in *London* and *Westminster*. On which the House *ordered*, That the Lord Mayor be desired to cause public Thanks to be given within the said City and Liberties; the Justices of Peace for *Westminster* and *Middlesex* were also ordered to do the same, and every where to express their Joy, by ringing of Bells, *&c.* for this Victory.

The Parliament order a Day of Thanksgiving for the taking of Winchester.

At the same Time a *Letter*, from Lord *Fairfax*, was read, giving a very particular Account of the State of Affairs in the *Northern* Counties; which we shall give at Length, as well as all other Matters of Intelligence sent up to Parliament. It was address'd to the Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

May it please your Lordship,

UPON Saturday *last*, *I received a* Declaration *of Parliament, with a Commission from his Excellency the Earl of* Essex, *to command in Chief over the Forces of the* North, *and other adjacent Counties; which great Honour and Trust, far above any Ambition or Merit, by your Lordships conferred on me, I shall exercise with all Care and Fidelity; not doubting but that your Lordships will enable me therein, with such other Supplies as the Necessity of the Service shall require, and that represented from hence.*

Lord Fairfax's Account of the State of the Northern Counties.

The

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

The State of Affairs in these Parts, since my last Dispatch of the first of this Month, stands in this Manner: The Earl of Newcastle *is come to* York, *and joined his Forces to the Earl of* Cumberland, *making in all, as I am informed, about* 8000 *Men, Horse and Foot, of which there is about* 2000 *Horse and Dragooners; a Strength far too potent to be resisted by the small Power which I have here, whereof I send a List inclosed: Our Strength was once estimated by ourselves far greater than now it appears; for upon the Earl of* Newcastle's *coming over the* Tees, *Sir* Edward Loftus *with all the* Richmondshire *Men, and Sir* Henry Anderson *with all the* Cleveland *Men and the rest of the* North-Riding, *which were estimated at* 1000 *Men, did all return to their own Houses, save about* 130 *Men brought hither by Sir* Matthew Boynton, *some other Gentlemen, and one Troop of Horse raised by Sir* Henry Foulis, *and about forty Horse more brought hither by Capt.* Anderson. *Besides this Defect, our Numbers are decreased by Sir* Hugh Cholmley, *to whom I have sent divers Orders to march* Northward, *to join with Capt.* Hotham *and the rest, in resisting the Earl of* Newcastle's *Entry, before he came into* Yorkshire; *and, since his Entry, to come to me and the rest of the Army at* Tadcaster, *but he found such Impediments as he could do neither; and now I hear he is gone to* Scarbrough, *and taken his Forces with him, which were about* 700 *Men; Col.* Boynton, *whose Regiment consisted of* 800 *Foot, is likewise marched towards* Hull, *although I sent him divers Orders to march up hither to assist the Forces at* Tadcaster, *giving me neither Reason of his not coming to me, nor of his March towards* Hull. *I understood that Sir* John Gell *had raised* 800 *Men in* Derbyshire, *and sent unto him to march hither to our Succour; but I have received an Answer from him, that he is not able yet to stir from thence: From Sir* Anthony Irby, *nor the* Lincolnshire *Men, I hear nothing, though I have sent to them express Messengers: So our whole Strength here (upon Return of the former sent into the* North) *consisting of twenty-one Companies of*

of Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, and one Company of Dragooners, we did send, of them, two Companies of Foot to secure Selby, *and one Company to secure* Cawood *Castle; and quartered the rest, part of them at* Wetherby, *under Command of Capt.* Hotham, *whom I have nominated to be Lieutenant-General of the Army, and the rest at* Tadcaster, *under my own Command.*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

Upon Tuesday *receiving Intelligence that the Earl of* Newcastle, *with his whole Forces, intended to fall upon our Quarter at* Tadcaster, *I sent to Capt.* Hotham, *to bring up the Forces at* Wetherby; *which being done, and the Earl of* Newcastle's *Army come in Sight, we drew our Men into the uttermost Part of our Quarter, where we had raised some Breast-Works for our Musqueteers: There the Fight began about Eleven of the Clock, and so continued, in sharp Dispute, untill about Four of the Clock in the Evening; in which Time there was at least* 40,000 *Musquet-Shot discharged on both Sides, and great Numbers of Canon-Shot.*

The Enemy had once won Part of the Town and beaten our Men, and placed some of their Companies in two or three Houses, which did much endanger us; but in the End our Men, with great Courage, forced them out again, recovered and burnt the Houses, and killed many of the Enemy's Men that were there plaed; and, in Conclusion, forced the whole Army to retreat, leaving very many of their Men dead, and very great Numbers woundea: The certain Numbers, nor Qualities of the Persons we could not take, but it is generally said by the Country People that there were, at least, one hundred found killed and burnt, and we took seventeen Prisoners in the Fight: On our Part we lost six Men, and Capt. William Lister, *a valiant and gallant Gentleman, who was shot with a Musquet Bullet in the Head; we had about twenty more wounded, but lost not one Prisoner in the Battle; though divers of our Men, being negligent of their Duty, stayed behind us when we quitted the Quarter; and so were taken there by the Enemy, the next Day, and made Prisoners. In this Fight our Men behaved themselves with*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

with very great Resolution, far beyond Expectation, in so much, as I conceive, we might have maintained the Place still, if we had been furnished with Powder and Shot; but having spent in a Manner all our whole Store of Bullet, Match, and Powder, I advised with the Commanders, and, by general Consent, it was thought fit to rise with our Forces, and to march to Cawood *and* Selby, *to secure those Places; and there to receive Supplies of Ammunition and Men: This was accordingly done, and now I am at* Selby *with Part of the Army, and the rest with Capt.* Hotham *at* Cawood.

Yesterday I sent my Son, Sir Thomas Fairfax, *with five Companies of Foot, and two Troops of Horse to* Leeds; *intending he should continue there to secure that Place, and the other Clothing Towns, against the Earl of* Newcastle's *Forces, if it were possible; but the Enemy's Forces were laid so strong in the Way, as he could not pass, so he only beat up a Quarter of the Enemies in a small Village, took five Prisoners, and retreated to* Selby.

This *Letter* was ordered, by both Houses, to be printed: And it is highly probable that no more of it was then thought proper to be laid before the Public, because in *Rushworth's Collections* all the following Paragraphs are left out: But are here supplied from the *Lords Journals.*

Thus, my Lord, I have briefly represented the Condition of the Army at present; which, I must confess, I fear will very suddenly grow worse, if not utterly broken up; and that especially for want of Money, I having not above a Week's Pay provided before-hand, and no visible Means left to raise Maintenance for them, unless I should give the Soldiers free Quarters upon the Country: A Cure, in my Conceit, as dangerous as the Disease, and peradventure not possible to be effected if the Enemy be still Masters of the Field, and cut off our Men as they go abroad to levy Sustenance; which they may do, and yet not able to beat up our Quarters.

I have hitherto supported this Army by the Loans and Contributions, for the most Part, of the Parishes of Leeds, Halifax, *and* Bradford, *and some of the small Cloathing Towns adjacent; being the only well-affected People in the Country, who, I much fear, may suffer by this Popish Army of the* North; *meerly for their good Affection to Religion and the Public Liberty. Of the rest of the Country I was not able to draw any considerable Help, the Enemy having Garrisons in so many Places, who threaten to ruin any that should assist the Parliament and their Cause, with Money or other Helps.*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

My Lord, in Sum, the State of the Country is thus: The Enemy is mighty, and Master of the Field, plentifully supplied from his Majesty, and the Popish and Malignant Party, with Monies and all other Necessaries. The well-affected Party, as now it is divided, not considerable; the Aid from Lincolnshire, Derbyshire, *and other Counties, very uncertain; the Want of Money here, such as will force us to disband within ten Days. If the Enemy become once absolute Masters of* Yorkshire, *they will force Contributions and Succours from the Country, which will raise a very formidable Army, and put the whole Cause in Peril, if God do not miraculously defend it.*

I beseech their Lordships seriously to consider of it, and send such speedy Supplies of Men and Money, as may enable me to go forward in the Service; which I shall not fail to do with a constant Fidelity.

Their Lordships have, heretofore, assigned 2000 l. *for our Succour; but the most Part of it is still at* London, *where it lies for want of Exchange or Convoy: And therefore what shall now be sent must come either by sufficient Convoy of Forces by Land, or else by Sea to* Hull, *and so hither to me. The* Scots *Officers come hither Yesterday; but now we are so straitned that we have no Men to resort to us to put under their Command, nor have we any Money to pay them.*

The further Relation of these Affairs I leave to Capt. Hatcher, *who follows these Letters purposely to give true Relation to the House of these Affairs; he hath been an Eye-Witness to most of the Passages in*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

this Country, from the first of raising of Arms; to his further Expression I shall leave it, with this Addition only, That if the Country or Cause suffer, their Lordships will discern, by this Relation, in whom the Fault hath been, and impute it accordingly; for nothing hath been omitted, possible to be effected, by

Your Lordship's most faithful and humble Servant,

Dated December 10, 1642. from Selby.

FERD. FAIRFAX.

Some *Votes* were also sent up, this Day, from the Commons, and agreed to by the Lords; amongst which was one for securing all Popish Lords, and others of Quality, within the Cities of *London*, *Westminster*, and *Southwark*; and for effectually and speedily sequestring their Estates, Offices, *&c.* towards the Advancement of Money for the Army.

Another, That the Earl of *Warwick* and other Commissioners of the Admiralty should take Care to send some Ships to ride upon the *Northern* Coasts, to prevent the Arrival of any Forces or Ammunition, from *Holland* or elsewhere; the Parliament having then received fresh Intelligence of such being ready to embark from those Parts.

It was *ordered*, also, That if any Colonel, Captain, or other Officers of *Scotland*, should bring into *England* any Forces of Horse or Foot, by Contract of their Agents there, to oppose the Army of *Papists* and their Adherents now raised, they should be entertained.

December 17. There had been some Time canvassing, in both Houses, certain Articles, as Propositions for a Peace, to be presented to the King; and, this Day, the remaining Part of them was debated in the House of Lords; but the farther Consideration thereof deferred to the 19th.

Some Prisoners having been taken at *Brentford*, *Marlborough*, and elsewhere, the King now resolved to proceed against them in a legal Way, for High

High Treason. The famous Col. *John Lilburn* was one of the first brought to the Bar, at *Oxford*, before Judge *Heath*; and was indicted for actual levying War against the King, by the Name of *John Lilburn*, Yeoman. He demurred to this Indictment, on account of his being a Gentleman of an antient Family in the Bishoprick of *Durham*; the Record was therefore amended, and he pleaded, That what he did was in his own Defence, and by Command of Parliament; and that he never had nor ever would bear Arms against the King, *&c.* He and others were found guilty; but, to prevent the Execution of them, the Parliament threatened the *Lex Talionis*, and published a *Declaration* in this Form:

An. 18. Car. 1642. December.

Col. Lilburn, &c. having been convicted, at Oxford, for High Treason,

'WHereas Information hath been given to 'the Lords and Commons assembled in 'Parliament, That *Clifton Catesby*, *John Lilburn*, 'and *Robert Vivers*, Captains in the Army, raised 'by Authority of both Houses of Parliament, for the 'necessary Defence of the true Protestant Religion, 'the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, under the 'Command of *Robert* Earl of *Essex*, Captain General thereof, were taken Prisoners by the Forces 'raised against the Parliament, in executing their 'several Duties and Services, according to the *Ordinances* of both the said Houses, and after carried 'Prisoners to *Oxford* Goal; and, having been most 'barbarously used, are now questioned and proceeded against by way of Indictment, before Sir *Robert Heath*, Knight, one of his Majesty's Justices of the King's Bench, and others, by Colour 'of some Commission or other Authority from his 'Majesty, for High Treason and other supposed 'Misdemeanors; whereas many have been taken 'Prisoners by the Parliament's Forces, in the Act of 'War against the Parliament; which, by the Laws 'and Statutes of this Realm, is Rebellion and High 'Treason against the King and Kingdom, and the 'Actors therein Traitors; and yet none of them

To prevent their Execution the Parliament declare they will make Reprizals.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

'hath hitherto been put to Death, or otherwise 'severely dealt with by the Parliament:

'It is therefore *ordered* and *declared* by the said 'Lords and Commons, That all such Indictments 'and other Proceedings against the said Capt. *Catesby*, Capt. *Lilburn*, and Capt. *Vivers*, or against 'Capt. *Wingate*, who have done faithful and good 'Service to the Common-wealth; or against any 'other Person, or Persons, who have done, or shall 'do, Service in the said Army; or for the Raising 'of any Money, Plate, Horse, or Arms, for the 'Maintenance thereof; or otherwise in Execution 'of, or Pursuance of, an *Order* or *Ordinance* of both 'or either of the said Houses of Parliament, for the 'Defence of the Public Safety, are unjust and illegal; and the said Sir *Robert Heath*, and all other 'Commissioners, Justices, Sheriffs, Jurors, and 'other Officers and Ministers of Justice, and other 'Persons whatsoever, are hereby required and injoined to surcease any further Proceeding against 'the said Persons before named, or any other, for 'any the Causes aforesaid, upon the said Indictments or otherwise.

'And the said Lords and Commons do further '*declare*, That if the said Persons before named, or 'any of them, or any other, shall be put to Death, 'or other Hurt or Violence offered to their or any 'of their Persons; for, or by reason of any such 'Service done, or to be done, by, or according to 'any *Order* or *Ordinance* of both or either the said 'Houses, the like Punishment shall be inflicted by 'Death, or otherwise, upon such Prisoners as have 'been, or shall be, taken by the Forces raised by 'Authority of both Houses of Parliament; and if 'the said Sir *Robert Heath*, or any other Commissioner, Justice, Sheriff, Juror, or other Officer, or Minister of Justice, or other Person, shall 'do contrary to this *Ordinance* in any the Premisses, 'they and every of them for so doing shall be 'proceeded against, and dealt with, as Enemies to 'the King and Kingdom.'

Dec-

December 19. The Lords went again on the *Propositions* for Peace, and a great Debate ensued thereupon. The third Article, concerning Delinquents, was read, and put to the Question, Whether the House shall make this Proposition to the King, That All which are impeached by the House of Commons, at this Time, shall be left to take their Trial by Parliament? It passed in the Negative.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

On the same Day the City of *London*, by an Order of Common Council, presented a *Petition* to the House of Lords and Commons, in which was inclosed another to his Majesty; which, after their Approbation, they desired might be conveyed to him. At the same Time was presented another *Petition* from many Citizens and Inhabitants of that City. Both these were for Peace and a speedy Agreement: Upon the former the House of Commons passed two *Votes*, to which the Lords consented, declaring their great Approbation thereof, and that it was fit this *Petition* to the King should be presented to him. The other met with a quite different Reception. From the Fate of these two *Petitions* the Reader will be enabled to form a Judgment of the Temper and Disposition of the Parliament. Neither of them are mentioned in the *Collections* of the Times; but we meet with a Copy of the latter in the *Lords Journals*.

To the Right Honourable the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of divers Citizens, Inhabitants of the City of *London* and Liberties thereof, with the Inhabitants of the Borough of *Southwark* and Places adjacent,

Sheweth,

THAT the present Sense of our Miseries, and the Apprehension of the inevitable Ruin both of the Church and Common-wealth, make us become Suitors to this Honourable Assembly, the likeliest Means, under God, for our Relief; to consider our distressed Estate, and provide a speedy Remedy for our present and fu-

A Petition from several Citizens of London to the Parliament, for Peace;

An. 18. Car. 1. 1642. December.

ture Evils; earnestly to desire you to weigh the Care and Judgment of your Predecessors, who, by a known Law, settled and preserved our Protestant Religion, our Liberties and Properties, with a right Understanding between King and Subject, which produced Peace and Plenty in our Estates; and to reflect, with serious Thoughts, upon our present Distempers, violating Religion by Papists and Sectaries, engaging our Nation in a civil and destructive War, invading our Laws and Liberties, endangering all our Lives, and utterly disabling us to relieve our distressed Brethren in Ireland.

We beseech you likewise to consider the Effects of a Civil War, as the Destruction of Christians, and the unnatural Effusion of Blood; Fathers against Sons; Brothers by Brothers, Friends by Friends, slain; then Famine and Sickness, the Followers of a continued War, making Way for a general Confusion and Invasion by a foreign Nation; whilst our Treasure is exhausted, our Trade lost, and the Kingdom dispeopled: These Things, weighed and enlarged by your Wisdoms, we doubt not will be as strong a Motive in you to labour, as in us to desire, a speedy Peace and happy Accommodation.

Wherefore we humbly crave that, not lending Ear to any the Fomenters of the present War, under what Pretence soever; or remembering ought that may increase Jealousies or continue Divisions between his Majesty and the Houses of Parliament; you will tender his Majesty, according to his Royal Intimations, such Propositions *for Accommodation as he may, with Honour and Safety to the whole Kingdom accept; for the effecting whereof we shall be ready to assist you with the best and utmost of our Abilities; and, whilst you endeavour for Peace, we shall send up our Prayers to Heaven for the Blessing of Peace upon you and all that desire it.*

The Petitioners withdrew, and the House took into Consideration what *Answer* to give to their *Petition*; and, after Debate, the Gentleman-Usher was

was commanded to let those that brought this *Petition* know, That their Lordships have received a Complaint against this *Petition* from the House of Commons, and will take the same into Consideration: And a Committee was appointed to consider of, and to take Examinations about, the managing and procuring of this *Petition*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

Which is ill received by them,

The Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council of the City, upon presenting their own *Petition* to the Commons, protested against this latter, saying, They had damned it by a public Act; and did desire that when hereafter any *Petition* came to Parliament, in the Name of the City of *London*, and was not attested by the Hand of the Town-Clerk, it might be rejected, and not esteemed as a *Petition* from their City.

And protested against by the Lord Mayor, &c.

Dec. 20. Although a *Vote* had passed Yesterday concerning Delinquents, That they were not All to be included in their designed *Propositions* to the King for Peace, the House of Commons had got that *Order* over-ruled in some Measure: For tho' a Committee of Lords had been appointed to consider of the naming of such Delinquents as were to be excepted out of their Act of Grace, who this Day brought in their Opinion, That those only who had been impeached before the first of *January* last, should be proceeded against in Parliament: Yet the Lord *Digby*, particularly, though he had been impeached since that Time, was left to the Judgment of Parliament.

The Lords resolve to except some Delinquents from Trial by Parliament.

Then the Committee proceeded to name such Persons as were fit to be removed from the King; as, the Marquis of *Hertford* to lose his Office about the Prince; the Earl of *Bristol*, the Lord *Herbert* of *Ragland*, (Eldest Son of the Earl of *Worcester*) Mr. *Piercy*, Mr. *Jermyn*, and Mr. *Wilmot*, to be removed from Court. And, as the *Journal* says, after a long Debate, the following Question was put: 'Those that are of Opinion to agree with the Committee, That, at this Time, such as the Committee have named to be impeached by the House of

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

of Commons, ſhould be left to the Trial of Parliament, omitting the reſt of thoſe which are impeached, ſay *Content*; and it paſſed affirmatively.' On which the following Lords entered their Diſſent; and, after repeating the two laſt Queſtions of Yeſterday and To-day, carried againſt them, they proceeded to ſay,

A Proteſt enter'd thereupon.

'WE, whoſe Names are ſubſcribed, do conceive 'that the Demanding, by this Houſe, of 'ſome to be left to Juſtice, and Leaving out of o-'thers, who are under the like Impeachment of High 'Treaſon, and have been, by Force of Arms, pro-'tected from being brought to a Trial, in the higheſt 'Court of Judicature, is an Example of very ill 'Conſequence: Becauſe we conceive that it is not 'proper for this Houſe to move the Houſe of Com-'mons, in the Stopping of their Proceedings upon 'Impeachments; and that it doth not only give 'Encouragement to a King to attempt the like 'Stoppage of Juſtice by Force, and, from this Pre-'cedent, to ſtand upon the Protecting of Perſons 'impeached; but to Subjects alſo, who may be 'induced to undertake any Thing in Hopes of Im-'punity, even from the Deſires of this Houſe; 'which hath not demanded any one of thoſe to be 'left to Trial, who, ſince his Majeſty's Going 'to *York*, have been impeached of High Treaſon, 'for actual levying War againſt the King and 'Kingdom.

'Upon theſe, amongſt other Reaſons, we have 'demanded our Right of *Proteſtation*; and do now 'accordingly enter it, to clear ourſelves from any 'Inconveniences that may follow from theſe *Votes*; 'which are, in our Opinion, very prejudicial to the 'Privileges of Parliament and the Liberty of the 'Subject.'

WARWICK.	BOLINGBROKE.
PETERBOROUGH.	WILLOUGHBY *of* Parham.
MANCHESTER.	BROOKE.
SAY *and* SELE.	GREY *de* Werk.
WHARTON.	

Nex

Next was read the Whole of the *Propositions* for Peace, which were agreed on by the Lords, and ordered to be sent down to the Commons; but, as they laid a long Time in that House, being not presented to the King till above a Month after this, and were also much altered from this Copy, it cannot be amiss to give it here, and postpone the other to its proper Place. By this Means may be evidently seen, That the Lords were much more inclined to an Agreement than the Commons, by the Softness of these *Propositions*, and the Harshness of the other.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

The said *Propositions* were as follows:

The Propositions to the King for Peace, as drawn up by the House of Lords.

'YOUR Majesty's most humble and faithful 'Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Par-'liament assembled, having always in their Thoughts 'the Glory of God, your Majesty's Honour, and 'the Prosperity of your People; and being most 'desirous to put an End to these Miseries which 'now infect, and further threaten, a Desolation of 'this Kingdom if not timely prevented; and that 'they may provide for the Safety of your Majesty's 'Royal Person, and for the Defence of your loyal 'Subjects, against all such as would, in their Mind, 'destroy the Worship of God in his true Religion, 'the Laws of this Land, and the Rights and Privi-'leges of Parliament; and also to settle such Way 'for the future, as the like or other Distractions 'and Distempers may not again break forth, do most 'humbly beseech your Majesty to accept of and 'grant these their most humble Desires and *Pro-'positions*, as the most necessary and effectual Means 'thereunto, through God's Blessing; and that 'thereby your Majesty may live in as great Honour 'as any of your Royal Ancestors have done, and 'be as formidable to your Enemies as any of your 'Predecessors have been; and that your Subjects, 'with Peace and Plenty, may, with Gladness of 'Heart, perform their Duties to God and your Majesty,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

of Commons, ſhould be left to the Trial of Parliament, omitting the reſt of thoſe which are impeached, ſay *Content*; and it paſſed affirmatively.' On which the following Lords entered their Diſſent; and, after repeating the two laſt Queſtions of Yeſterday and To-day, carried againſt them, they proceeded to ſay,

A Proteſt enter'd thereupon.

'WE, whoſe Names are ſubſcribed, do conceive 'that the Demanding, by this Houſe, of 'ſome to be left to Juſtice, and Leaving out of o'thers, who are under the like Impeachment of High 'Treaſon, and have been, by Force of Arms, pro'tected from being brought to a Trial, in the higheſt 'Court of Judicature, is an Example of very ill 'Conſequence: Becauſe we conceive that it is not 'proper for this Houſe to move the Houſe of Com'mons, in the Stopping of their Proceedings upon 'Impeachments; and that it doth not only give 'Encouragement to a King to attempt the like 'Stoppage of Juſtice by Force, and, from this Pre'cedent, to ſtand upon the Protecting of Perſons 'impeached; but to Subjects alſo, who may be 'induced to undertake any Thing in Hopes of Im'punity, even from the Deſires of this Houſe; 'which hath not demanded any one of thoſe to be 'left to Trial, who, ſince his Majeſty's Going 'to *York*, have been impeached of High Treaſon, 'for actual levying War againſt the King and 'Kingdom.

'Upon theſe, amongſt other Reaſons, we have 'demanded our Right of *Proteſtation*; and do now 'accordingly enter it, to clear ourſelves from any 'Inconveniences that may follow from theſe *Votes*; 'which are, in our Opinion, very prejudicial to the 'Privileges of Parliament and the Liberty of the 'Subject.'

WARWICK.	BOLINGBROKE.
PETERBOROUGH.	WILLOUGHBY *of* Parham.
MANCHESTER.	BROOKE.
SAY *and* SELE.	GREY *de* Werk.
WHARTON.	

Next

Next was read the Whole of the *Propositions* for Peace, which were agreed on by the Lords, and ordered to be sent down to the Commons; but, as they laid a long Time in that House, being not presented to the King till above a Month after this, and were also much altered from this Copy, it cannot be amiss to give it here, and postpone the other to its proper Place. By this Means may be evidently seen, That the Lords were much more inclined to an Agreement than the Commons, by the Softness of these *Propositions*, and the Harshness of the other.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

The said *Propositions* were as follows:

The Propositions to the King for Peace, as drawn up by the House of Lords.

'YOUR Majesty's most humble and faithful 'Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Par-'liament assembled, having always in their Thoughts 'the Glory of God, your Majesty's Honour, and 'the Prosperity of your People; and being most 'desirous to put an End to these Miseries which 'now infect, and further threaten, a Desolation of 'this Kingdom if not timely prevented; and that 'they may provide for the Safety of your Majesty's 'Royal Person, and for the Defence of your loyal 'Subjects, against all such as would, in their Mind, 'destroy the Worship of God in his true Religion, 'the Laws of this Land, and the Rights and Privi-'leges of Parliament; and also to settle such Way 'for the future, as the like or other Distractions 'and Distempers may not again break forth, do most 'humbly beseech your Majesty to accept of and 'grant these their most humble Desires and *Pro-'positions*, as the most necessary and effectual Means 'thereunto, through God's Blessing; and that 'thereby your Majesty may live in as great Honour 'as any of your Royal Ancestors have done, and 'be as formidable to your Enemies as any of your 'Predecessors have been; and that your Subjects, 'with Peace and Plenty, may, with Gladness of 'Heart, perform their Duties to God and your Majesty,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

'jesty, and enjoy their just Liberties under your 'most gracious Protection.

'That your Majesty will be pleased to give 'the Royal Assent unto the Bill for taking away 'superstitious Innovations,

'To the Bill against scandalous Ministers,

'To the Bill against Pluralities,

'To the Bill for a Consultation to be had with 'godly, religious, and learned Divines: And

I. 'That your Majesty would be pleased to pro'mise to pass such other good Bills, for settling of 'the Church Government, as, upon Consultation 'with the Assembly of the said Divines, shall be 'resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, and, 'by them, to be presented unto your Majesty: 'And that your Majesty will confirm the *Decla*'*ration*, passed in both Houses, for the taking away 'of Bishops, Deans and Chapters; and that such 'unnecessary Ceremonies, as are offensive to tender 'Consciences, may not be pressed upon your Ma'jesty's good Subjects, as hath already been graci'ously promised by your Majesty.

II. 'That the Rights, Liberties, and Privileges 'of Parliament may be no ways infringed, but 'maintained.

III. 'That such as have been impeached by the 'House of Commons, before the first Day of *Ja*'*nuary*, 1641, and likewise the Lord *Digby* shall be 'left to their due Trial in Parliament; that the 'Marquis of *Hertford* may be removed from his 'Charge about the Prince; the Earl of *Bristol*, the 'Lord *Herbert* of *Ragland*, Mr. *Piercy*, Mr. *Jer*'*myn*, and Mr. *Wilmot*, may be removed from the 'Verge of the Court.

IV. 'That your Majesty will be pleased to pass 'an Act in such Manner, as may vindicate and 'secure the Privilege of Parliament from the ill 'Consequences of the late Precedent, in the Charge 'and Proceeding against the Lord *Kimbolton*, now 'Earl of *Manchester*, and the five Members of the 'House of Commons.

V. 'That

V. 'That your Majesty, upon the humble Petition of both Houses of Parliament, will be pleased to grant your Letters Patent to to be Chief Justice of your Court of *King's Bench*; to the Lord Chief Justice *Banks*, to be continued to be Chief Justice of your Court of *Common Pleas*; to Mr. Justice *Foster*, to be Chief Baron of your Court of *Exchequer*; and that Mr. Justice *Reeve* may be continued one of the Judges in the Court of *Common Pleas*; to Mr. Justice *Bacon*, to be continued one of the Judges in your Court of *King's Bench*; to Mr. Serjeant *Wylde*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of *King's Bench*; to Mr. Serjeant *Rolle*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of *King's Bench*; to Mr. Serjeant *Pheasant*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of *Common Pleas*; to Mr. Serjeant *Atkins*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of *Common Pleas*; to Mr. Serjeant *Creswell*, to be one of the Barons of the Court of *Exchequer*; to Mr. *Samuel Brown*, and Mr. *John Puleston*, to be two of the Barons of your Court of *Exchequer*; and that all of them may hold their Places *quamdiu se bene gesserint*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

VI. 'That such Justices of the Peace, that have been lately out of the Commission of the Peace in the several Counties of *England* and *Wales*, may be restored; and that the Lord-Keeper may be commanded to revoke the Commission, and omit such as are unfit for that Government.

VII. 'That your Majesty's Royal Assent may be given unto such Acts, as shall be advised by both Houses of Parliament, for the satisfying and paying of the Debts wherein the Kingdom now stands engaged.

VIII. 'That all Acts of the Council-Table, that do concern Government, may be attested under the Hands of those who give the Advice.

IX. 'That an Act of Oblivion may pass for all Crimes and Offences committed, or pretended to be committed, excepting the Persons desired to be brought to their Trial in Parliament.

X. 'That

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

X. 'That your Majesty's general Pardon may 'be granted to all, excepting such as before named.

XI. 'It is humbly desired that your Majesty will 'declare your Pleasure, whether you will not have 'a Cessation from all Manner of Acts of Hostility 'for fourteen Days; the Cessation to commence 'from such a Time, as shall be agreed on by your 'Majesty and the two Houses of Parliament.

XII. 'That the Laws against Popish Recusants 'may be put in due Execution.'

Dec. 22. *Petitions* came up from different Parts of the Kingdom to the Lords, all crying loudly for Peace. To which the Lords returned this *Answer*: 'That they approved of their Desires for Peace and Agreement between the King and Parliament, which was always desired and endeavoured by that House; and that they were then about it, and hoped for good Success.'

The same Day a Letter from the Earl of *Stamford* was read, giving an Account of the Securing of *Bristol* to the Parliament; and that he was raising a very considerable Number of Forces in those Parts.

Nothing else material occurs in the *Journals*, till the last Day of this Month; when a new Subscription, for the further Maintenance of the Army, seems to be warmly promoted in the House of Lords. And the Peers underwritten subscribed their Names and Sums, as follows:

A Subscription in the House of Lords, for Maintenance of the Parliament's Army.

	L.		*L.*
Earl of *Warwick* —	500	Ld. Visc. *Say* and *Sele*	100
Earl of *Manchester*	300	Lord *Brooke* ——	200
Earl of *Bolingbroke*	200	Lord *Fielding* ——	500

It was *ordered*, also, That the Speaker of that House should move, on the first of *January* next, to know the Answer of those Lords who have not subscribed to the Maintenance of the Army, as well as the Assistants also attending this House.

That

That the Parliament was driven to great Straits for want of Money at this Time, is also evident from a Message sent to the House of Commons, this Day, importing, That there was a great Necessity for Money, and that the City of *London* was willing to make a further Subscription, if the Members of Parliament would set a good Example in that Particular. That divers Lords had already subscribed to this Purpose, and the Speaker was ordered to know the Answers of those who have not; and others were appointed to take the Subscriptions of the Assistants this Afternoon; therefore the Commons were desired to take the same Course with their Members, that it may be recommended, with all Expedition, to the City of *London* to do the like.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

Thus ended the Calendar Year of 1642, and a very busy Year it was, both in respect of the various Multiplicity of Parliamentary Affairs, or rather Military Affairs transacted in Parliament, and the dismal Apprehensions each Party in the Kingdom must be in, of being plundered, burnt out, ruined, or slain by the other: So that the safest *Asylum* for any single Person was, then, a Station in the King's or the Parliament's Army.

All the Prisons, in and about *London*, were full of *Malignants* and *Delinquents*, as they were then called by the Parliament; insomuch that, besides the common Prisons, *Windsor* Castle, *London* House, the Lord *Petre*'s House in the City, the Deanery of St. *Paul*'s, *Ely* House, and, lastly, *Lambeth* House, as *Winchester* House in *Southwark* had been before, were made use of for that Purpose.

The King at this Time kept his Court at *Oxford*, his Army being quartered conveniently in the neighbouring Towns, this Season not being proper for Action. Hither great Numbers of both Houses of Parliament had resorted to him, insomuch that, in a short Time, they constituted a Kind of separate House of Lords and Commons of themselves; as will be shewn hereafter.—But now to proceed with our *Journals*:

Jan-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

January.

A new Bill proposed relating to the Militia.

January 2. Being *Monday*, the Earl of *Northumberland*, from a Committee appointed to consider of a Bill to settle the *Militia*, reported what they had done in this Business. And great Difficulties appearing hereupon, the Lords thought fit to respite the offering any Bill for that Purpose till the King should return to Parliament; but, in the mean time, to make ready a Bill which should declare, That the King should not dispose of the Power of the *Militia* without the Parliament, nor the Parliament without the King; that both Sides might have an equal Power, to prevent all Jealousies.

Jan. 3. The *Scots* Commissioners presented two Memorials to Parliament, complaining, That their Army in *Ireland*, on *English* Pay, were almost starved for want of it; and that 40,000 *l.* the remaining Part of the Brotherly Assistance-Money, tho' long due, was yet unpaid. The Parliament excused both these Neglects; laid the Blame on the Civil War and the present Distractions of the Times; but promised as speedy a Payment as possible, according to that Justice and Honour which they owed to all Men, but in a more especial and affectionate Manner to their Brethren of *Scotland*.

Jan. 4. The Commons sent up a Message to the Lords, and with it a Letter they had just received from their General, the Lord *Fairfax*, in the *North*; which we here give in its own Words. It was address'd to one of their Members:

A Letter from Lord Fairfax concerning the Proceedings of the two Armies in Yorkshire.

I Have of late addressed some Relations of my Proceedings here, to the Committee appointed for the Safety of the Kingdom; being assured that they would, from Time to Time, impart them to both Houses of Parliament; that such Consideration might be had of them as the Necessity of the Cause requires. Now I address this Relation to you, not doubting but it shall be imparted to both Houses of Parliament and to the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom; that the Affairs of this Country being known to them all, they may

may be provided for as their Wisdoms shall see convenient. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

I have, formerly, advertised that the Earl of Newcastle's *Army have seiz'd upon* Leeds, *where they plundered the well-affected Party, and raised a very great Sum of Money out of those that they could draw to compound for their Securities. From* Leeds *they marched, on* Sunday *the* 18*th of this Month, with five Troops of Horse, six Companies of Dragoons,* 200 *Foot, and two Drakes of the Earl of* Newcastle's *Army; besides Sir* William Saville, *and divers other Gentlemen of* Yorkshire *and their Forces, that join'd themselves with them. They came to* Bradford *about Ten o'Clock in the Morning, intending to surprize the Town in Time of Prayer; but the Town having Scouts abroad, had Notice of their coming, and gave the Alarm to the Country, who came in to their Succour from the Parts adjoining; yet they had not in all above* 80 *Muskets, the rest being arm'd with Clubs, and such rustick Weapons, with which small Force they put the Cause to Trial with the great Strength of the Enemy; who planted their Drakes, and discharged each of them seventeen Times upon the Town, untill a Town's Man, with a Fowling-piece, kill'd one of the Canoneers; and then they all, with great Courage, issued from the Town upon the Enemy, killed many of them, took about* 30 *Prisoners, and forced the rest to retreat; leaving* 40 *of their Muskets and a Barrel of their Powder, with much other Provisions, behind them; and this with the Loss of but three* Bradford *Men.*

The Report of the Country is, That the Enemy, amongst those that were killed, lost Col. Evers, *Captain* Bynns, *and another Commander; that Col.* Goring, *General of the Horse, with the Earl of* Newcastle, *was wounded; that Serjeant-Major* Carr *is taken Prisoner; and it is generally reported that* 150 *more ran away upon the Retreat, and are not since returned to* Leeds.

In this Victory the Hand and Power of God was most evident, the Town being open on all Sides, and of itself not being defensible; assaulted on every Side by a multi-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

malicious and bloody Enemy, and defended by a few half-naked Men; there being in the Town not above 80 *Muskets before they got* 40 *more by the Spoils of the Enemy: So that the Slaughter was, for the most Part, with Clubs, and Scythes mounted on Poles, when they clos'd and came to Hand-Blows. With this Defeat the Enemies are so enraged, that they threaten utter Ruin to* Bradford; *whereupon the Town's Men sent to me for Succour of Men and Arms, and I have sent my Son, with Sir* Henry Foulis, *to them with three Troops of Horse and* 120 *Dragooners. These are safely arrived there, and received with great Joy and Acclamation of the Country, who flock to him, and offer themselves most willingly to serve against the Popish Enemies, if Arms could be furnished to them. He hath already surprized some Victuals sent in, upon Warrants, to the Enemy at* Leeds, *by the over-awed Country; and he hath sent Capt.* Mildmay *with his Troop of Horse and some Dragooners into* Craven, *to stop the raising of Money and Forces in that Country; which is attempted by the Earl of* Cumberland, *who is lately retired from* York *to* Skipton; *and I hope he will leave nothing unattempted that may conduce to the Safety of the Country, so far as can be expected from the few Forces he hath with him.*

The Earl of Newcastle *proceeds in raising Money, by all the illegal and oppressive Ways that can be devised; and, both by the* Commission *of* Array, *and by Presses made in the Churches, raiseth all the Men he can. This being attempted in* Cleveland *by certain of the disaffected* Gentry, *their Expectation was prevented; the Resort and Appearance of the People stopped, and the Commissioners themselves forced to fly, by Sir* Hugh Cholmley, *to whom I sent special Order for that End. I hear he hath also been at* Malton, *and there surprized both the Receiver and the Monies raised out of the Country thereabouts, by those Warrants. I cannot hear, certainly, what Monies or Men the Earl of* Newcastle *hath raised since he came into this Country; but he grants Commissions to sundry convict Recusants to raise Troops of Horse, as Sir* John Middleton, *Sir* Walter Vavasor, *Mr.* Tindale,

dale, *and others*; *who, I hear, are now raising their Men: And I hear daily Complaints of horrible Plunders and Spoils done by that Army, and those by special Order, and in such Manner, as, if they be not speedily restrained, and this Popish Army expelled the Country, they will not only utterly ruin all Trade and Commerce, but discourage and disable all Husbandry; and so bring Poverty and Famine upon the Land.* An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Since my last Estimate of our Forces, there is little Alteration of them; only 120 *Dragooners of Sir* Anthony Irby's *Regiment are come hither, which I sent to* Bradford *with my Son. Col.* Boynton, *with his Regiment, being* 500 *Foot and* 40 *Horse, are come hither; but Captain* Crompton's *Dragooners, as he complains to me, are all run away; so I have given him a new Commission to raise a Company. For any other Supplies, I cannot expect them untill the Aids come from the* South; *for Sir* Hugh Chomley, *as I hear, cannot bring* 130 *Men; and those are so much desired to be retained in the* North-Riding, *to interrupt the the raising of Men in that Country in Aid of the Earl of* Newcastle, *as I do not press his March this Way; and for the* Lincolnshire *Aids, expected to be sent us, I cannot hope for any from them; having this Day received a Letter by Captain* Hatcher, *wherein the Earl of* Lincoln, *and the Committee at* Lincoln, *write they are not able to defend themselves against* 500 *Foot, three Troops of Dragooners, and two Troops of Horse, with seven Pieces of Ordnance, sent to* Newark *by the Earl of* Newcastle; *and therefore desire Help from me.*

I have formerly represented to the Committee the extreme Want of Money here, and how impossible it is to raise any, the Enemy being Master of the Field. I have sent to Sir John Hotham, *Sir* Edward Rhodes, *Sir* Hugh Cholmley, *and Capt.* Hotham; *but they all alledge great Necessities of their own, and help me with none; so that I am put upon such Straits, as seldom happen, to retain an Army together, and withall serve against a more potent Enemy; having neither Money to pay them, nor free Quarters to give them. If a speedy Supply of Money do not come, I much fear*

After the reading of this Letter, an *Order* was made to send the Lord *Fairfax* a Supply, and to trust to his known Justice and faithful Service for the due Management of it.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

There was nothing material done in the House of Lords for some Days after this, except an *Order* made for quashing an Agreement which had been entered into by both Parties, in *Cheshire*, in order to keep Peace in that County; it being urged, as in the like Case before in *Yorkshire*, which we have particularly taken Notice of in our last Volume, That it was dangerous to the whole Kingdom for one County to stand neuter, and withdraw itself from the Assistance of the rest.

An Agreement of Neutrality in Cheshire, quash'd by Parliament.

A *Declaration* was also made and agreed to, for raising more Money by a fresh Subscription, and that the Speakers of both Houses were to take the Answers of the Members, *&c.* of each, to learn what they will subscribe for the Maintenance of the Army. The Lord Mayor of *London* was likewise ordered to call a Common Hall, and some Members of both Houses were appointed to go thither, to exhort the Citizens to do the like.

Means for raising more Money for Maintenance of the Army.

Jan. 10. A Case happened in the House of Commons, which, though trivial in itself, may not be improper to take Notice of. In one of the Debates relating to the *Propositions* for Peace, the House divided on the Question; when the Tellers came to make their Report of the Numbers, they could not agree upon it, three being of one Opinion, and the fourth of another. The House then divided again, and all that were not present at the first Telling were required to withdraw. The Tellers reported the Numbers to be thirty-three on each Side: But one Member present at the first Division and Telling, yet came not in upon the second Telling, till the Numbers were given in and reported by Mr. Speaker, was desired to be counted; a Debate arose whether he should or not, coming not in till the Report was made: The House divided again on this Question; but, before it was told, the Noes yield-

Remarkable Divisions on the Propositions for Peace.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

ed, and that Member, being added to the Yeas, made their Number thirty-four.

Many Copies of *Instructions* are entered at this Time for the Parliament's Lord-Lieutenants, and other Agents in the several Counties; and also a second *Declaration* concerning the King's *Commission* of *Array**: All of them too tedious for our Purpose: But

A Relation of the Manner of presenting a Petition from the City of London to the King at Oxford.

On the 12th of this Month a Relation was read in the House of Lords, sent up by the Commons, concerning the Carrying and Delivery of a *Petition* from the City of *London*, to the King at *Oxford*. This Relation was made by the City's Commissioners appointed for that Purpose; and, since the Consequences of it are somewhat curious, deserves a Place in these Enquiries. The *Petition* is not entered in the *Journals*, being a Work of Common Council only; but we have met with a printed Copy of it, and the King's *Answer* to it, with some Speeches made by a Committee of both Houses, sent to attend the reading of them in the *Guildhall*, which we shall give: And first the Relation itself, as it stands in the *Journals*:

'AT this Common Council Sir *George Garret*, 'Sir *George Clark*, Knights and Aldermen, 'Mr. *Peter Jones*, Mr. *George Henley*, Mr. *Richard* 'Bateman, and Mr. *Barney Reames*, Commissioners lately appointed by this Court to make their 'Address unto his Majesty, with an humble Petition, in the Name of the Mayor, Aldermen, 'and Commons of this City, did make their Relation in Writing, which followeth in these 'Words:

On Monday *the second of* January *we came to* Oxford, *between One and Two o'Clock in the Afternoon; where, tho' we could get no Lodging, before Night, yet*

* *Husband's Collections*, from p. 850, to 891.

yet presently we dispatched one to give the Lord Falkland *Notice of our Coming. About Three o'Clock we did all of us attend his Lordship, at his Lodgings in* New College; *with whom we sent one also to the Court, to receive his Majesty's Order for Admission into his Presence; who returning unto us, and bringing us Word, that his Majesty would receive the* Petition *at Five o'Clock, we accordingly all of us came to the Court. After some small Time of Attendance we were admitted unto his Majesty in his Withdrawing-Chamber, and the* Petition *publickly read in his Majesty's Presence; unto which his Majesty presently made Answer unto this Effect,* That he was glad of the Occasion this *Petition* would give him, to let the City know some of his *Declarations*; which, although he had already caused them to be put in Print, yet he doubted might be kept from the Knowledge of his People in the City: That he doubted the Petitioners promised more than they could perform, to wit, *To defend his Majesty from Tumults*; when, as he heard, they could not maintain Peace and Quiet among themselves: That his *Answer* should be full, which he would expect should be published and made known to all his People in the City. *And he added this Question,* Whether they had petitioned the Parliament also, to remember them of their Duty to his Majesty? *To this it was presently answered,* That we were only Messengers of this *Petition*, and could give no Answer to that Question.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

On Tuesday *we had no Audience, and only attended our Answer; but on* Wednesday *the fourth of* January, *we address'd ourselves for our Dispatch, by a Message unto the Lord* Falkland *and received his Majesty's Order to attend at Three o'Clock that Afternoon, which we did accordingly; and, being called in, his Majesty gave us a Paper, which, he said, was his* Answer *to the* Petition; *and so delivered it into the Hands of a Gentleman called Mr.* Heron, *standing by him; who, he said, should go with us, and see it done accordingly. And having demanded which was*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

to the unsettling of the Peace, and disuniting the Spirits of the City, who steer all their Actions by that Maxim of Policy, Divide & Impera, *divide and do what you will: The rather when they observed that the Counsel of some not so Well wishers, certainly, to the Public Safety, as to their own private Interests, had prevailed with his Majesty that his* Answer *should be published at a Common-Hall, by his Majesty's express Order for that Purpose, when as the* Petition *was humbly tendered to his Majesty from a Common Council. To avoid all Inconveniences, it pleased the Wisdom and Goodness of Heaven to direct the Parliament to chuse an honourable Committee of Lords and Commons to be present at the reading thereof; and the Governors of the City to order that all the Companies should first meet at their several Halls, and then come in their City Habits to the* Guildhall, *where his Majesty's* Answer *was to be read: When the Committee of both Houses, with the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and such a Confluence of Liverymen as hath not been seen there in the Memory of the oldest Man in the City, being met, the Lord Mayor commanded the Town Clerk to read, in the Audience of that great Assembly, the City's* Petition, *which here follows:*

To the KING's Most Excellent Majesty,

The HUMBLE PETITION *of the Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of* London,

Sheweth,

The said Petition read at a Common Hall.

'THAT the Petitioners, your Majesty's most 'humble and loyal Subjects, being much 'peirced with the long and great Divisions between 'your Majesty and both your Houses of Parlia'ment, and with the sad and bloody Effects thereof, 'both here and in *Ireland*, are yet more deeply 'wounded by the Misapprehension which your Ma'jesty seemeth to entertain of the Love and Loyalty 'of this your City, as if there were some Cause of 'Fear or Suspicion of Danger to your Royal Person, 'if your Majesty should return hither; and that 'this

'this is made the unhappy Bar to that bleſſed Re-
'conciliation with your great and moſt faithful
'Council, for preventing that Deſolation and De-
'ſtruction, which is now moſt apparently immi-
'nent on your Majeſty and all your Kingdoms:

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'For Satisfaction therefore of your Majeſty, and
'clearing of the Petitioners Innocency, they moſt
'humbly declare, as formerly they have done, That
'they are in no way conſcious of any Diſloyalty,
'but abhor all Thoughts thereof: And that they
'are reſolved to make good their late ſolemn *Proteſta-*
'*tion* and ſacred Vow made to Almighty God, and,
'with the laſt Drop of their dearest Bloods, to defend
'and maintain the true Reformed Proteſtant Religi-
'on; and, according to the Duty of their Allegiance,
'your Majeſty's Royal Perſon, Honour, and Eſtate;
'(whatever is maliciouſly and moſt falſly ſuggeſted
'to your Majeſty to the contrary) as well as the
'Power and Privileges of Parliament, and the law-
'ful Rights and Liberties of the Subject; and do
'hereby engage themſelves, their Eſtates, and all
'they have, to their uttermoſt Power, to defend
'and preſerve your Majeſty and both Houſes of
'Parliament from all Tumults, Affronts, and Vio-
'lence, with as much Loyalty, Love, and Duty,
'as ever Citizens expreſſed towards your Majeſty,
'or any of your Royal Progenitors in their greateſt
'Glory.

'The Petitioners therefore, upon their bended
'Knees, do moſt humbly beſeech your Majeſty to
'return to your Parliament, accompanied with
'your Royal, not your Martial, Attendance; to the
'end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties may be
'ſettled and ſecured; and whatſoever is amiſs in
'Church and Common-wealth reformed by their
'Advice, according to the Fundamental Conſti-
'tutions of this Kingdom; and that ſuch a Peace
'may thereby be obtained, as ſhall be for the Glo-
'ry of God, the Honour and Happineſs of your
'Majeſty and Poſterity, and the Safety and Wel-
'fare of all your loyal Subjects; who (the Peti-
'tioners are fully aſſured, whatſoever is given out

'to

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'to the contrary) do unanimously desire the Peace 'herein expressed.

And the Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

MICHELL.

*This being done, the King's Messenger * being wished to read his Majesty's* Answer *to that* Petition, *made some Apology to be excused; partly willing to intimate that his Commission was but to deliver the* Answer *to the Lord Mayor, (which seemed very strange to Standers by who were ready to conclude, that if his Majesty's Command had been of no larger Extent, the Trouble of a Common-Hall might well have been spared) and partly pleading the Inaudibleness of his Voice in such a vast Assembly; but being deemed the fittest for that Service by the Honourable Committee, the Lord Mayor and his Brethren, he then read his Majesty's* Answer, *which here follows:*

As also the King's Answer to it.

'HIS Majesty hath graciously considered this 'Petition, and returns this *Answer*: That 'his Majesty doth not entertain any Misapprehen- 'sion of the Love and Loyalty of his City of *Lon-* 'don. As he hath always expressed a singular Re- 'gard and Esteem of the Affections of that City, 'and is still desirous to make it his chief Place of 'Residence, and to continue and renew many 'Marks of his Favour towards it; so he believes 'much the better and greater Part of that his City 'is full of Love, Duty, and Loyalty to his Majesty; 'and that the Tumults which heretofore forced his 'Majesty, for his Safety, to leave that Place, tho' 'they were contrived and encouraged by some 'principal Members thereof, (who are since well 'known, though they are above the Reach of Ju- 'stice) consisted more of desperate Persons of the 'Suburbs, and the neighbouring Towns, who were 'misled by the Cunning and Malice of their Sedu- 'cers, than of the Inhabitants of that City. He 'looks

* Capt. *Heron*, Son of Sir *Edward Heron*, High Sheriff of *Lincolnshire*, who had been voted a Delinquent, for executing the King's *Commission* of *Array* in that County.

'looks on his good Subjects there as Persons groaning under the same Burden which doth oppress his Majesty, and awed by the same Persons who begat these Tumults, and the same Army which gave Battle to his Majesty: And therefore as no good Subject can more desire, from his Soul, a Composure of the general Distractions; so no good Citizen can more desire the Establishment of the particular Peace and Prosperity of that Place by his Majesty's Access thither, than his Majesty himself doth.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'But his Majesty desires his good Subjects of *London* seriously to consider what Confidence his Majesty can have of Security there, whilst the Laws of the Land are so notoriously despised and trampled under Foot; and the wholesome Government of that City, heretofore so famous over all the World, is now submitted to the arbitrary Power of a few desperate Persons of no Reputation, but for Malice and Disloyalty to him: Whilst Arms are taken up not only without, but against, his Consent and express Command; and Collections publickly made, and Contributions avowed, for the Maintenance of the Army which hath given him Battle, and therein used all possible Means, Treason and Malice could suggest to them, to have taken his Life from him, and to have destroyed his Royal Issue; whilst such of his Majesty's Subjects, who, out of Duty and Affection to his Majesty, and Compassion of their bleeding Country, have laboured for Peace, are reviled, injured, and murdered, even by the Magistrates of that City, or by their Directions.

Lastly, 'What Hope his Majesty can have of Safety there, whilst Alderman *Pennington*, their pretended Lord Mayor, (the principal Author of those Calamities which so nearly threaten the Ruin of that famous City) *Ven*, *Foulke*, and *Mainwaring*, all Persons notoriously guilty of Schism and High Treason, commit such Outrages in oppressing, robbing, and imprisoning, according to their Discretion, all such his Majesty's loving Subjects

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'jects whom they are pleased to suspect but for 'wishing well to his Majesty: And his Majesty 'would know whether the Petitioners believe that 'the Reviling and Suppressing the Book of Common 'Prayer, (established in this Church ever since the 'Reformation) the Discountenancing and Impri-'soning godly, learned, and painful Preachers; and 'the Cherishing and Countenancing of *Brownists*, '*Anabaptists*, and all Manner of *Sectaries*, be the Way 'to defend and maintain the true Reformed *Protestant* 'Religion? That to comply with, and assist Per-'sons who have actually attempted to kill his Ma-'jesty; and to allow and favour Libels, Pasquils, 'and seditious Sermons against his Majesty, be to 'defend his Royal Person and Honour according to 'the Duty of their Allegiance? Whether to im-'prison Men's Persons, and to plunder their Houses, 'because they will not rebel against his Majesty, 'nor assist those that do? Whether to destroy their 'Property, by taking away the Twentieth Part of 'their Estates from them; and, by the same arbi-'trary Power, to refer to four Standers-by of their 'own Faction, to judge what that Twentieth Part 'is, be to defend the lawful Rights and Liberties of 'the Subject? And if they think these Actions to 'be Instances of either, whether they do not know 'the Persons before-named to be guilty of them all? 'Or whether they think it possible that Almighty 'God can bless that City, and preserve it from 'Destruction, whilst Persons of such known Guilt 'and Wickedness are defended and justified amongst 'them, against the Power of that Law by which 'they can only subsist?

'His Majesty is so far from suffering himself to 'be incensed against the whole City, by the Actions 'of these ill Men, though they have hitherto been 'so prevalent as to make the Affections of the rest 'of little Use to him; and is so willing to be with 'them and to protect them, that the Trade, Wealth, 'and Glory thereof (so decayed and eclipsed by 'these public Distractions) may again be the Envy

'of

'of all foreign Nations; that he doth, once more, 'graciously offer his Free and General Pardon to all 'the Inhabitants of that his City of *London*, the 'Suburbs, and City of *Westminster*, (except the 'Persons formerly excepted by his Majesty) if they 'shall yet return to their Duty, Loyalty, and Obe-'dience. And if his good Subjects of that his City 'of *London* shall first solemnly declare, That they 'will defend the known Laws of the Land, and 'will submit to, and be governed by, no other 'Rule: If they shall first manifest, by defending 'themselves, and maintaining their own Rights, 'Liberties, and Interests, and suppressing any Force 'and Violence unlawfully raised against those and 'his Majesty, their Power to defend and preserve 'him from all Tumults, Affronts, and Violence: 'Lastly, if they shall apprehend, and commit to 'safe Custody, the Persons of those four Men who 'enrich themselves by the Spoil and Oppression of 'his loving Subjects, and the Ruin of the City, that 'his Majesty may proceed against them by the 'Course of Law, as guilty of High Treason, his 'Majesty will speedily return to them with his 'Royal, and without his Martial, Attendance; 'and will use his utmost Endeavour that they may, 'hereafter, enjoy all the Blessings of Peace and 'Plenty; and will no longer expect Obedience from 'them, than he shall, with all the Faculties of his 'Soul, labour in the Preserving and Advancing the 'true Reformed Protestant Religion, the Laws of 'the Land, the Liberty and Property of the Sub-'ject, and the just Privileges of Parliament.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'If, notwithstanding all this, the Art and Inte-'rest of these Men can prevail so far, that they in-'volve more Men in their Guilt, and draw that his 'City to sacrifice its present Happiness and future 'Hopes to their Pride, Fury, and Malice; his Ma-'jesty shall only give them this Warning, That 'whosoever shall, henceforward, take up Arms 'without his Consent; contribute any Money or 'Plate, upon what Pretence of Authority soever, for 'Maintenance of the Army under the Command of

'the

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'the Earl of *Essex*, or any other Army in Rebel-
'lion against him; or shall pay Tonnage and Pound-
'age, till the same shall be settled by Act of Par-
'liament; every such Person must expect the seve-
'rest Punishment the Law can inflict; and, in the
'mean time, his Majesty will seize upon any Part
'of his Estate within his Power, for the Relief and
'Support of him and his Army, raised and main-
'tained for the Defence of his Person, the Laws,
'and this his Kingdom: And since he denies to his
'Majesty the Duty and Benefit of his Subjection,
'by giving Assistance to Rebels, which, by the
'known Laws of the Land, is High Treason, his
'Majesty shall likewise deny him the Benefit of his
'Protection; and shall not only signify to all his
'foreign Ministers, that such Person shall receive
'no Advantage by being his Subject, but shall, by
'all other Ways and Means, proceed against him
'as a public Enemy to his Majesty and this King-
'dom.

'But his Majesty hopes and doubts not but his
'good Subjects of *London* will call to Mind the Acts
'of their Predecessors, their Duty, Affection, Loy-
'alty, and Merit towards their Princes; the Re-
'nown they have had with all Posterity from, and
'the Blessings of Heaven which always accompa-
'nied, those Virtues; and will consider the perpe-
'tual Scorn and Infamy, which unavoidably will
'follow them and their Children, if infinitely the
'meaner Part in Quality, and much the lesser Part in
'Number, shall be able to alter the Government so
'admirably established, destroy the Trade so ex-
'cellently settled, and to waste the Wealth, so in-
'dustriously gotten, of that flourishing City; and
'then they will easily gather up the Courage and Re-
'solution to join with his Majesty in Defence of
'their Religion, Laws, and Liberties, which hitherto
'hath and only can make themselves, his Majesty,
'and his Kingdom, happy.

'For concurring with the Advice of his two
'Houses of Parliament, which, with Reference to
'the Common-wealth, may be as well at this Di-
'stance,

'stance as at *Whitehall*; his Majesty doubts not 'but his good Subjects of *London* well know how 'far, (beyond the Example of his Predecessors) his 'Majesty hath concurred with their Advice in pas-'sing of such Laws, by which he willingly hath 'parted with many of his known Rights, for the 'Benefit of his Subjects, which the Fundamental 'Constitutions of this Kingdom did not oblige 'him to consent to; and hath used all possible Means 'to beget a right Understanding between them; 'and will therefore apply themselves to those who, 'by making just, peaceable, and honourable Propo-'sitions to his Majesty, can only beget that Con-'currence.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

After the King's Messenger had read this once upon the Hustings, in the Audience of those Honourable Persons, he was, for the Help of the Lowness of his Voice, and the Advantage of the great Multitudes in the Hall, willed to read the same a second Time in the Clock-house, in the Audience of the Body of that Assembly; among whom, after he had finished his Work, an inconsiderable Company near the Door made some Offers towards an Acclamation; but finding no expected Eccho to answer their Shout, they wound up in a little Modesty and a great deal of Silence; upon which the Earl of Manchester *delivered his Speech as followeth:*

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,

The Earl of Manchester's Speech to the Citizens on that Occasion;

'THIS Assembly can never be looked upon by any Members of both Houses of Parliament, but there must be some Offering of Gratitude made to you; of Thanks and Acknowledgements for your former large-hearted Expressions of Affection and Care for the Preservation both of the Parliament and Kingdom: The Occasion why my Lords and these Gentlemen of the House of Commons are come hither is this, They have read an *Answer* to an humble *Petition* of the Lord Mayor and Common-Council and Citizens of *London* to his Ma-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, *that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's* Answer, *in the following* Speech:

My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,

And Mr. Pym's by way of Reply to the King's Answer.

'I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Aspersion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tenderness of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been full

full of Honour and Justice, as they stand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majesty, and of Care for the common Good, and so shall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true *Answer* to most of those Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by observing some Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from those Misrepresentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Sense of both Houses, that your *Petition* was so full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an *Answer* of another Kind.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'The first *Observation* I am to make to you is this, that it is said here, *That his Majesty was enforc'd, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from* Whitehall, *and to withdraw himself into those Courses which now he hath taken.*

'In Answer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occasion given by any Tumults rising out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might justly cause his Majesty's Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons House of Parliament in that unusual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of these unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majesty came into the City without any Guard; that he was present in the Common-Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any such Expressions as were unbeseeming the Majesty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he resided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hampton-Court*, *Windsor*, and Places adjoining, with small Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehensions of Fear; by all which it is manifest, that this is an unjust Aspersion cast upon this City, that any tumul-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'the Earl of *Essex*, or any other Army in Rebellion against him; or shall pay Tonnage and Poundage, till the same shall be settled by Act of Parliament; every such Person must expect the severest Punishment the Law can inflict; and, in the mean time, his Majesty will seize upon any Part of his Estate within his Power, for the Relief and Support of him and his Army, raised and maintained for the Defence of his Person, the Laws, and this his Kingdom: And since he denies to his Majesty the Duty and Benefit of his Subjection, by giving Assistance to Rebels, which, by the known Laws of the Land, is High Treason, his Majesty shall likewise deny him the Benefit of his Protection; and shall not only signify to all his foreign Ministers, that such Person shall receive no Advantage by being his Subject, but shall, by all other Ways and Means, proceed against him as a public Enemy to his Majesty and this Kingdom.

'But his Majesty hopes and doubts not but his good Subjects of *London* will call to Mind the Acts of their Predecessors, their Duty, Affection, Loyalty, and Merit towards their Princes; the Renown they have had with all Posterity from, and the Blessings of Heaven which always accompanied, those Virtues; and will consider the perpetual Scorn and Infamy, which unavoidably will follow them and their Children, if infinitely the meaner Part in Quality, and much the lesser Part in Number, shall be able to alter the Government so admirably established, destroy the Trade so excellently settled, and to waste the Wealth, so industriously gotten, of that flourishing City; and then they will easily gather up the Courage and Resolution to join with his Majesty in Defence of their Religion, Laws, and Liberties, which hitherto hath and only can make themselves, his Majesty, and his Kingdom, happy.

'For concurring with the Advice of his two Houses of Parliament, which, with Reference to the Common-wealth, may be as well at this Distance,

'ſtance as at *Whitehall*; his Majeſty doubts not 'but his good Subjects of *London* well know how 'far, (beyond the Example of his Predeceſſors) his 'Majeſty hath concurred with their Advice in paſ-'ſing of ſuch Laws, by which he willingly hath 'parted with many of his known Rights, for the 'Benefit of his Subjects, which the Fundamental 'Conſtitutions of this Kingdom did not oblige 'him to conſent to; and hath uſed all poſſible Means 'to beget a right Underſtanding between them; 'and will therefore apply themſelves to thoſe who, 'by making juſt, peaceable, and honourable Propo-'ſitions to his Majeſty, can only beget that Con-'currence.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

After the King's Meſſenger had read this once upon the Huſtings, in the Audience of thoſe Honourable Perſons, he was, for the Help of the Lowneſs of his Voice, and the Advantage of the great Multitudes in the Hall, willed to read the ſame a ſecond Time in the Clock-houſe, in the Audience of the Body of that Aſſembly; among whom, after he had finiſhed his Work, an inconſiderable Company near the Door made ſome Offers towards an Acclamation; but finding no expected Eccho to anſwer their Shout, they wound up in a little Modeſty and a great deal of Silence; upon which the Earl of Mancheſter *delivered his Speech as followeth:*

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,

The Earl of Mancheſter's Speech to the Citizens on that Occaſion;

'THIS Aſſembly can never be looked upon by any Members of both Houſes of Parliament, but there muſt be ſome Offering of Gratitude made to you; of Thanks and Acknowledgements for your former large-hearted Expreſſions of Affection and Care for the Preſervation both of the Parliament and Kingdom: The Occaſion why my Lords and theſe Gentlemen of the Houſe of Commons are come hither is this, They have read an *Anſwer* to an humble *Petition* of the Lord Mayor and Common-Council and Citizens of *London* to his Ma-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'the Earl of *Essex*, or any other Army in Rebel-
'lion against him; or shall pay Tonnage and Pound-
'age, till the same shall be settled by Act of Par-
'liament; every such Person must expect the seve-
'rest Punishment the Law can inflict; and, in the
'mean time, his Majesty will seize upon any Part
'of his Estate within his Power, for the Relief and
'Support of him and his Army, raised and main-
'tained for the Defence of his Person, the Laws,
'and this his Kingdom: And since he denies to his
'Majesty the Duty and Benefit of his Subjection,
'by giving Assistance to Rebels, which, by the
'known Laws of the Land, is High Treason, his
'Majesty shall likewise deny him the Benefit of his
'Protection; and shall not only signify to all his
'foreign Ministers, that such Person shall receive
'no Advantage by being his Subject, but shall, by
'all other Ways and Means, proceed against him
'as a public Enemy to his Majesty and this King-
'dom.

'But his Majesty hopes and doubts not but his
'good Subjects of *London* will call to Mind the Acts
'of their Predecessors, their Duty, Affection, Loy-
'alty, and Merit towards their Princes; the Re-
'nown they have had with all Posterity from, and
'the Blessings of Heaven which always accompa-
'nied, those Virtues; and will consider the perpe-
'tual Scorn and Infamy, which unavoidably will
'follow them and their Children, if infinitely the
'meaner Part in Quality, and much the lesser Part in
'Number, shall be able to alter the Government so
'admirably established, destroy the Trade so ex-
'cellently settled, and to waste the Wealth, so in-
'dustriously gotten, of that flourishing City; and
'then they will easily gather up the Courage and Re-
'solution to join with his Majesty in Defence of
'their Religion, Laws, and Liberties, which hitherto
'hath and only can make themselves, his Majesty,
'and his Kingdom, happy.

'For concurring with the Advice of his two
'Houses of Parliament, which, with Reference to
'the Common-wealth, may be as well at this Di-
'stance,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, *that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's* Answer, *in the following* Speech:

My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,

And Mr. Pym's by way of Reply to the King's Answer.

"I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Aspersion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tenderness of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been full

full of Honour and Justice, as they stand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majesty, and of Care for the common Good, and so shall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true *Answer* to most of those Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by observing some Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from those Misrepresentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Sense of both Houses, that your *Petition* was so full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an *Answer* of another Kind.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'The first *Observation* I am to make to you is this, that it is said here, *That his Majesty was enforc'd, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from* Whitehall, *and to withdraw himself into those Courses which now he hath taken.*

'In Answer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occasion given by any Tumults rising out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might justly cause his Majesty's Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons House of Parliament in that unusual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of these unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majesty came into the City without any Guard; that he was present in the Common-Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any such Expressions as were unbeseeming the Majesty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he resided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hampton-Court*, *Windsor*, and Places adjoining, with small Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehensions of Fear; by all which it is manifest, that this is an unjust Aspersion cast upon this City, that any tumul-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, *that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's* Answer, *in the following* Speech:

My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,

And Mr. Pym's by way of Reply to the King's Answer.

'I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Aspersion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tenderness of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been full

full of Honour [illegible]
tion to their own [illegible]
Obedience [illegible]
common G[illegible]
have commanded [illegible]
suer to make [illegible]
to the Parliament [illegible]
some Petitions [illegible]
to you [illegible]
their own [illegible]
representatives [illegible]
lity must [illegible]
I enter [illegible]
Houses [illegible]
Hum[illegible]
have [illegible]
[illegible]
this [illegible]
f[illegible]
g[illegible]
Ch[illegible]
[illegible]
you, [illegible]
m[illegible]
might [illegible]
you may [illegible]
lent [illegible]
in the [illegible]
the [illegible]
the [illegible]
with [illegible]
Comm[illegible]
turn [illegible]
delivery [illegible]
such La[illegible]
of a King [illegible]
divers La[illegible]
ten-C[illegible]
final [illegible]
made [illegible]
Fe[illegible]
jus[illegible]
Vo[illegible]

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, *that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's* Answer, *in the following* Speech:

My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,

And Mr. Pym's by way of Reply to the King's Answer.

"I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Aspersion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tenderness of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been full

full of Honour and Justice, as they stand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majesty, and of Care for the common Good, and so shall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true *Answer* to most of those Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by observing some Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from those Misrepresentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Sense of both Houses, that your *Petition* was so full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an *Answer* of another Kind.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'The first *Observation* I am to make to you is this, that it is said here, *That his Majesty was enforc'd, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from* Whitehall, *and to withdraw himself into those Courses which now he hath taken.*

'In Answer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occasion given by any Tumults rising out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might justly cause his Majesty's Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons House of Parliament in that unusual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of these unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majesty came into the City without any Guard; that he was present in the Common-Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any such Expressions as were unbeseeming the Majesty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he resided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hampton-Court*, *Windsor*, and Places adjoining, with small Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehensions of Fear; by all which it is manifest, that this is an unjust Aspersion cast upon this City, that any tumul-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This *Answer* they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some *Observations* by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.

The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pym, *that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's* Answer, *in the following* Speech:

My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,

And Mr. Pym's by way of Reply to the King's Answer.

'I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That in this *Answer*, which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Aspersion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tenderness of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been full

full of Honour and Justice, as they stand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majesty, and of Care for the common Good, and so shall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true *Answer* to most of those Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by observing some Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from those Misrepresentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Sense of both Houses, that your *Petition* was so full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an *Answer* of another Kind.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'The first *Observation* I am to make to you is this, that it is said here, *That his Majesty was enforc'd, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from* Whitehall, *and to withdraw himself into those Courses which now he hath taken.*

'In Answer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occasion given by any Tumults rising out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might justly cause his Majesty's Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons House of Parliament in that unusual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of these unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majesty came into the City without any Guard; that he was present in the Common-Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any such Expressions as were unbeseeming the Majesty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he resided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hampton-Court*, *Windsor*, and Places adjoining, with small Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehensions of Fear; by all which it is manifest, that this is an unjust Aspersion cast upon this City, that any tumul-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

tuous Carriage of yours was the Occasion of his Majesty's leaving the Parliament, and withdrawing himself to remoter Parts.

'It is affirmed, *That the Government of your City hath been managed by a few desperate Persons, and that they do exercise an arbitrary Power.* In answer which, the two Houses of Parliament give you this Testimony, That you have, in most of the great Occasions concerning the Government of the City, followed their Direction; and that Direction, which they have given, and you have executed, they must and will maintain to be such as stands with their Honour in giving it, and your Trust and Fidelity in the Performance of it.

'It is objected in the third Place, *That Contributions have been publickly made, for the Maintenance of that Army which did join Battle with the King, and did, by all the Means that Treason and Malice could suggest, endeavour to take away his Life, and destroy his Issue.* To this I am commanded to say, That the Design of bringing up the *English* Armies, the gathering together of the Cavaliers about *Whitehall*, the violent coming to the House of Commons, the King's going into the *North* and raising Armies there, are clear Evidences that Violence was first intended, and divers Practices were made against the Parliament, before they took any Course, or made any Preparation to take up Arms, for their Defence; for the Danger of his Majesty's Person they were sorry for it, and did, by divers humble *Petitions*, labour to prevent it; and as touching the Royal Issue, they have sufficiently declared to the World, their good Affections towards them, by the Care they have taken both for the Safety and Maintenance of those who are left here.

'It is further expressed in this Answer, *That the King demands the Lord Mayor, Mr. Alderman* Fowke, *Col.* Ven, *and Col.* Manwaring, *to be delivered up as guilty of Schism and High Treason.* Concerning which I am commanded to tell you, as the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, That this Demand is against the Privilege of Parliament, two

two of them being Members of the Commons House; most dishonourable to the City, that the Lord Mayor of *London* should be subjected to the Violence of every base Fellow, be assaulted, seized on, without due Process or Warrant, which the Law doth afford every private Man; and that you should be commanded to deliver up your Chief Magistrate, and such eminent Members of the City to the King's Pleasure, only because they have done their Duty in adhering to the Parliament, for the Defence of the Kingdom; and that it is against the Rules of Justice, that any Men should be imprisoned upon such a general Charge, when no Particulars are proved against them; and this you are to take Notice of, as the Answer to those Scandals, and to that Disgrace upon my Lord Mayor, and the other Members of the City.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642 January.

'And I am further to tell you, That there is little Cause for his Majesty to make this Demand, considering that he himself doth, by Force, keep away many accused in Parliament; as my Lord *Digby*, and many more impeached of High Treason, besides divers other great Delinquents, that stand charged there for heinous Crimes; all which, by Force, are kept from the due Proceedings and legal Trial of Parliament.

'It is alledged in this Answer, *That my Lord Mayor, and those other Persons named, are Countenancers of* Brownists *and* Anabaptists, *and all Manner of* Sectaries. To this I am commanded to say, That hereof there is no Proof: It doth not appear that they give any such Countenance to *Sectaries* of any Kind whatsoever; and if it did, his Majesty hath little Reason to object it, while, notwithstanding the Profession he hath often made, *That he will maintain the* Protestant *Reformed Religion*, he doth in the mean Time raise an Army of *Papists*; who, by the Principles of their Religion, are bound, if Power be put into their Hands, to destroy and utterly to root out the *Protestants*, together with the Truth which they profess.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

It is affirmed, *That Men's Persons have been imprisoned, and their Houses plundered, because they will not rebell against his Majesty.* To this I am commanded to declare, That no Men's Houses have been plundered by any Direction of the Parliament, but that they have been very careful to restrain all such violent Courses, so far as they were able; and that they have never committed any Man, but such as, by due Information, they conceived to be seditious Persons, and like to trouble the Peace of the State.

'It is objected further, *That the Property of the Subject is destroyed, by taking away the twentieth Part by an arbitrary Power.* To this they say, That in that *Ordinance* it doth not require a twentieth Part, but doth limit the Assessors that they shall not go beyond a twentieth Part; and that this is done by a Power derived from both Houses of Parliament; the Lords, who have an Hereditary Interest in making Laws in this Kingdom; and the Commons, who are elected and chosen to represent the whole Body of the Commonalty, and trusted for the Good of the People, whenever they see Cause to charge the Kingdom. And they say further, That the same Law, that did enable the two Houses of Parliament to raise Forces to maintain and defend the Safety of Religion, and of the Kingdom, doth likewise enable them to require Contributions, whereby those Forces may be maintained; or else it were a vain Power to raise Forces, if they had not a Power likewise to maintain them in that Service for which they were raised.

'And to this Point I am commanded to add this further Answer, That there was little Reason for this to be objected on his Majesty's Behalf, when it is well known that, from the Subjects which are within the Power of his Army, his Majesty doth take the full yearly Value of their Lands, and in some Cases more; that not only particular Houses, but whole Towns, have been plundered by Command and Design; and that, by *Proclamations*, Men are declared to forfeit all their Estates, because they will

will not obey arbitrary Commands; and this is commonly practised by his Majesty, and on his Part: And, therefore, there was little Reason to charge the Parliament with so necessary and moderate a Contribution as the twentieth Part. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'It is declared, *That the King expects to be kept from Tumults and Affronts.* Upon which I am commanded to observe, That his Majesty's Expressions, in his *Answer*, tend to the making of a Division in this City, and to the raising of a Party which may make some Disturbance in that orderly Government which is now established; both which will certainly prove, equally, destructive to him and both Houses of Parliament; and more prejudicial to his quiet Abode here, than any Thing that hath ever been acted by the Houses of Parliament, or the present Governors of the City.

'They observe further, that in this Answer, *His Majesty doth profess that he will seize upon the Estates of all that shall contribute any Thing towards the Maintenance of the Parliament's Army, and will put them out of his Protection; and, by his Ministers in foreign States, will take such Course that they may be proceeded against as Enemies*; that is, destroyed and spoiled. To which the Lords and Commons do declare, That this is an Excess of Rigour and Injustice beyond all Example, that particular Men should lose their private Estates here without Law or judicial Proceeding; and that our Prince, who owes Protection to the Kingdom as well as to particular Persons, should suffer the Wealth thereof to be robbed and spoiled by foreign States: Upon due Consideration whereof, they hope his Majesty will be induced by better Counsel to forbear the Execution, than that by which he hath been persuaded to publish such a Resolution.

'Besides these *Observations* out of the *Answer*, I am to observe one out of a *Narrative* that was received from the Common Council, that the King did declare, *That he would send some Messengers here to observe your Carriage in the City, and what was done amongst you.* The Parliament have just Cause

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

to doubt, that these will be Messengers of Sedition and Trouble; and therefore desire you to observe them and find them out, and that they may know who they are.

'I am, for a Conclusion, to commend to your Considerations, that you see, by the Proceedings to which the King is drawn by the ill Counsel now about him, that Religion, the whole Kingdom, this glorious City, and the Parliament, are all in great Danger; that this Danger cannot be kept off, in all likelihood, but by the Army that is now on Foot; and that the Lords and Commons are so far from being frighted by any Thing that is in this *Answer*, that they have, for themselves, and the Members of both Houses, declared a further Contribution towards the Maintenance of this Army; and cannot but hope and desire, that you that have shewed so much good Affection, in the former Necessities of the State, will be sensible of your own, and of the Condition of the whole Kingdom; and add to that which you have already done some further Contribution, whereby this Army may be maintained for all your Safeties.

At the End of every Period of this Speech, the Applause was so great, that he was fain to rest till Silence was again made; and, at last, (the Company ready to be dissolved) after some Pause and Consultation with the Committee of Lords and Commons then present, and by their Direction, Silence being made, he closed all with the Words following:

'Worthy Citizens, you have understood the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, concerning my Lord Mayor here, and those worthy Members of your City, that are demanded; you have heard the Parliament declare, That they will protect them in that which they have done by Direction of both Houses; and they expect that you should express it yourselves likewise, that if any Violence be offered to them, you will secure and defend them with your uttermost Force; and you shall always find, that

that this Protection of the Parliament shall not only extend to these, but to all others that have done any Thing by their Command.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Which Words were no sooner uttered, but the Citizens, with one joint Harmony of Minds and Voices, gave such an Acclamation as would have drowned all the former, if they had been then breathing; which, after a long Continuance, resolved itself into this more articulate and distinct Voice, We will live and die with them, We will live and die with them, *and the like.*

So that in the managing of this Day's Work, God was so pleased to manifest himself, that the Well-affected went away not strengthened only, but rejoicing; and the Malignants (as they have been called) some convinced, others silenced, many ashamed, it fully appearing how little Power they had to answer their Desires of doing Mischief: Whilst, instead of dividing the City, they were exceedingly united; instead of a Dissipation, thousands were unexpectedly brought, as it were, into an unthought-of Association, to live and die in the Defence of these zealous and honourable Assertors of their Peace and Liberties: All which we may sum up in that Triumph of the Man of God, In the Thing wherein they dealt proudly, God was above them.

The ill Reception the King's *Answer* to the City of *London's Petition* met with at the Common-Hall, occasioned his Majesty to send, a few Days after, the following *Letter* and *Declaration* to the Sheriffs.

Trusty and Well-beloved, we greet you well,

'WE received a *Petition* lately from the Aldermen and Common Council of our City of *London*, by the Hands of Persons entrusted by them for the Delivery, who found such a Reception from us as well manifested our Regard to that Body which sent them: Though we well knew by whom that *Petition* was framed, and

The King's Letter to the Sheriffs of London, requiring them to publish his foregoing Answer.

'where

An. 12. Car. I. 1642. January.

to doubt, that these will be Messengers of Sedition and Trouble; and therefore desire you to observe them and find them out, and that they may know who they are.

'I am, for a Conclusion, to commend to your Considerations, that you see, by the Proceedings to which the King is drawn by the ill Counsel now about him, that Religion, the whole Kingdom, this glorious City, and the Parliament, are all in great Danger; that this Danger cannot be kept off, in all likelihood, but by the Army that is now on Foot; and that the Lords and Commons are so far from being frighted by any Thing that is in this *Answer*, that they have, for themselves, and the Members of both Houses, declared a further Contribution towards the Maintenance of this Army; and cannot but hope and desire, that you that have shewed so much good Affection, in the former Necessities of the State, will be sensible of your own, and of the Condition of the whole Kingdom; and add to that which you have already done some further Contribution, whereby this Army may be maintained for all your Safeties.

At the End of every Period of this Speech, the Applause was so great, that he was fain to rest till Silence was again made; and, at last, (the Company ready to be displeased) after some Pause and Consultation with the Committee of Lords and Commons then present, and by their Direction, Silence being made, he closed all with the Words following:

'Worthy Citizens, you have understood the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, concerning my Lord Mayor here, and those worthy Members of your City, that are demanded; you have heard the Parliament declare, That they will protect them in that which they have done by Direction of both Houses; and they expect that you should express it yourselves likewise, but if any Violence be offered to them, you will secure and defend them with your uttermost Force; and you shall always find, that

that this Protection of the Parliament shall not only extend to these, but to all others that have done any Thing by their Command.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Which Words were no sooner uttered, but the Citizens, with one joint Harmony of Minds and Voices, gave such an Acclamation as would have drowned all the former, if they had been then breathing; which, after a long Continuance, resolved itself into this more articulate and distinct Voice, We will live and die with them, We will live and die with them, *and the like.*

So that in the managing of this Day's Work, God was so pleased to manifest himself, that the Well-affected went away not strengthened only, but rejoicing; and the Malignants (as they have been called) some convinced, others silenced, many ashamed, it fully appearing how little Power they had to answer their Desires of doing Mischief: Whilst, instead of dividing the City, they were exceedingly united; instead of a Dissipation, thousands were unexpectedly brought, as it were, into an unthought-of Association, to live and die in the Defence of these zealous and honourable Assertors of their Peace and Liberties: All which we may sum up in that Triumph of the Man of God, In the Thing wherein they dealt proudly, God was above them.

The ill Reception the King's *Answer* to the City of *London*'s *Petition* met with at the Common-Hall, occasioned his Majesty to send, a few Days after, the following *Letter* and *Declaration* to the Sheriffs.

Trusty and Well-beloved, we greet you well,

'WE received a *Petition* lately from the Aldermen and Common Council of our City of *London*, by the Hands of Persons entrusted by them for the Delivery, who found such a Reception from us as well manifested our Regard to that Body which sent them: Though we well knew by whom that *Petition* was framed, and where

The King's Letter to the Sheriffs of London, requiring them to publish his foregoing Answer.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'where perused and examined before it was approved by those from whom it seemed to be sent, 'yet we were so willing to enter into a Correspondence with that our City, and to receive any Address and Application from them, according to 'that Invitation we had given by our late *Proclamation*; and were so glad to find that there 'was yet some Hopes they would look to the Peace 'and Happiness of that City, and at last sever 'themselves from any Faction or Dependence, 'which might insensibly involve them in those 'Calamities they did not foresee; that we returned 'such a gracious *Answer* thereunto, so full of Candour and Affection that the meanest Inhabitant 'of that our City, if he carefully consider the same, 'will find himself concerned in it, and that we 'have had an especial Care of his Particular.

'With this *Answer* of ours we sent a Servant of 'our own, in the Company of those who had 'been so well used here, to require and see that it 'might be communicated to the whole Body of 'that our City; not doubting but that both it, and 'the Bringer, should receive such Entertainment 'there, as might manifest their due Regard of us, 'and of our Affection to them: But, to our great 'Wonder, we find that, after ten Days Attendance, 'and suffering ridiculous Pamphlets to be published 'in our Name, as if we retracted our former Resolutions, (which Pamphlet we have caused to be 'burned by the Hand of the Hangman, as we also 'require you to see done) instead of that Admission we expected to our Messenger and Message, 'Guards of armed Men have been brought to keep 'our good Subjects, to whom that our *Answer* was 'directed, from being present at the Reading thereof; and Speeches have been made by Strangers, '(who have been admitted to the City Councils, 'contrary to the Freedom and Custom of those 'Meetings) to blast our said *Answer*, and to dishonour and slander us; which if our good Subjects 'there shall suffer, we shall be much discouraged

'in

'in our desired Correspondence with that our City; and so, by the Cunning and Power of those Incendiaries, mentioned in our *Answer*, Alderman '*Pennington*, (who to shew his great Loyalty to 'us, and his Fitness to be Chief Magistrate of such 'a City, being informed that a desperate Person 'there said, *That he hoped shortly to wash his Hands* '*in our Blood*, refused to send any Warrant, or to 'give any Direction to any Officer, for his Apprehension) *Ven*, *Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, who have 'plunged that our City into such unspeakable Calamities, in which they would still keep it to 'cure their own desperate Conditions; our good 'Subjects there are not suffered to receive our gracious *Answer* to that *Petition*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'We have therefore thought fit to write these 'our *Letters* to you, requiring you the Sheriffs of 'our said City, to take care for the publishing that 'our *Answer* (which we herewith send you) to our 'good Subjects of that our City: And our Pleasure 'is, That you the Masters and Wardens of the several Companies of our said City forthwith summon all the Members of your several Companies, 'with all the Freemen and Apprentices (whose 'Hopes and Interests are so much blasted in these 'general Distractions) belonging thereunto, to appear at their several Halls; where you shall cause 'our said *Answer*, together with these our *Letters*, 'to be publickly read; that all our good Subjects 'may clearly understand how far we have been 'from begetting, how far we are from continuing 'or nourishing, these unnatural Civil Dissentions; 'and how much it is in their own Power to remove 'the present Pressures, and to establish the future 'Happiness and Glory of that famous City; and 'may seriously weigh every Part of that our *Answer*, as well that which carries Caution in it for 'the future, as Pardon for what is past: For assure yourselves, for the Time to come, we shall 'proceed with all Severity against such who shall 'incur the Penalty of the Law in those Points, of 'which we have given them so fair a Warning in

'our

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

' where perused and examined
' ved by those from whom it
' yet we were so willing to ent
' dence with that our City, an
' dress and Application from
' that Invitation we had give
' *clamation*; and were so glad
' was yet some Hopes they wo
' and Happiness of that City
' themselves from any Factic
' which might insensibly inve
' Calamities they did not forese
' such a gracious *Answer* thereu
' dour and Affection that the
' of that our City, if he carefull
' will find himself concerned
' have had an especial Care of h
' With this *Answer* of ours
' our own, in the Company
' been so well used here, to req
' might be communicated to t
' that our City; not doubting h
' the Bringer, should receive f
' there, as might manifest their
' and of our Affection to them:
' Wonder, we find that, after te
' and suffering ridiculous Pamp
' in our Name, as if we retrac
' solutions, (which Pamphlet w
' burned by the Hand of the H
' require you to see done) insti
' sion we expected to our Me
' Guards of armed Men have b
' our good Subjects, to whom
' directed, from being present a
' of; and Speeches have bee
' (who have been admitted t
' contrary to the Freedom a
' Meetings) to blast our said
' nour and slander us; which
' there shall suffer, we shall

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'our said *Answer:* And whosoever shall not behave 'himself like a good Subject in this our Kingdom, 'shall not, if we can help it, receive the Benefit 'and Advantage of being our Subject in any other; 'but all foreign Princes shall know, that as such 'Person hath parted with his Loyalty to us, so he 'must not hope for any Security by us; and, to 'that Purpose, we shall henceforward have a very 'inquisitive Eye upon the Actions of all our Sub-'jects, that some Example may be made, how 'easy it is for us to punish their Disloyalties abroad, 'who, for a Time, may avoid our Justice at home.

'And to the end that none of our good Subjects 'of that our City may think themselves bound to 'obey any of the Orders or Commands of the pre-'tended Lord Mayor, whom we have and do still 'accuse of High Treason, and conspiring to take 'our Life from us, it is well known to those Citi-'zens, who understand the Charter of that City, (so 'amply granted by our Royal Progenitors, and so 'graciously confirmed by us, and of which we pre-'sume our good Subjects there do still desire to re-'ceive the Benefit,) that the said *Isaac Pennington* 'was never regularly elected, or lawfully admitted 'to the Office of Lord Mayor of that our City; 'that in Truth Alderman *Cordwell* was, by the 'Plurality of Voices, chosen; and that this Man 'was never presented to, or admitted by us, in such 'Manner as is prescribed by their Charter; neither 'had that Judge, who presumed to swear him, a-'ny more Colour of Law or Authority to admini-'ster such an Oath to him, than he hath to do the 'same To-morrow to any other Alderman of the 'City: And we do therefore hereby declare the said '*Isaac Pennington* not to be Mayor of that our City 'of *London*, and to have no lawful Authority to 'exercise the same; and that our good Subjects of 'that our City, ought not to submit to any Orders, 'Directions, or Commands, which shall issue from 'him as Lord Mayor of that our City; but that 'the same are void, and of none effect.

And

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'And we do once more require you the Sheriffs 'of our said City, and all other the Magistrates of 'the same, in which all our good Subjects of that 'City will assist you, that you cause the said *Isaac* '*Pennington*, *Ven*, *Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, to be 'apprehended and committed to safe Custody; that 'we may proceed against them as guilty of High 'Treason, and as the principal Authors of those 'Calamities which are now so heavy upon our poor 'Subjects of that City; which, if not suddenly 'remedied, will in a short Time utterly confound 'a Place and a People, lately of so flourishing an 'Estimation in all the Parts of *Christendom*.

'And whereas we are informed, that one *Brown*, 'a Woodmonger, *Titchborne*, a Linendraper, and 'one *Harvy*, a Silkman, have exercised great In-'solencies and Outrages in that our City; and when 'many of our good Subjects there have assembled 'together, in a peaceable and modest Manner, to 'consult about the Peace and Welfare of that City, 'the said mutinous and seditious Persons have pre-'sumed to lead Multitudes of armed Men against 'them; and, by such Force, have beaten, wound-'ed, and killed our good Subjects: Our Will and 'Pleasure is, That if the said *Brown*, *Titchborne*, 'and *Harvy*, or either of them, shall so far neglect 'our gracious Offer of Pardon, as still to engage 'themselves in those unwarrantable and seditious 'Courses, you, our Sheriffs of *London*, do raise 'Power to suppress the said Force; and that you, 'and all our Ministers of Justice, use your utmost 'Means to apprehend the said Persons, and to bring 'them to condign Punishment: And we do hereby 'declare, That it shall be lawful for any of our 'loving Subjects to resist and oppose the said Per-'sons, if they shall hereafter, in such a warlike 'Manner, endeavour to molest them, as they 'would do Rebels and Traitors.

'And we hope that all our good Subjects of that 'our much-injured City of *London* do take Notice 'of our Grace and Favour towards them, in our

'so

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

to doubt, that these will be Messengers of Sedition and Trouble; and therefore desire you to observe them and find them out, and that they may know who they are.

'I am, for a Conclusion, to commend to your Considerations, that you see, by the Proceedings to which the King is drawn by the ill Counsel now about him, that Religion, the whole Kingdom, this glorious City, and the Parliament, are all in great Danger; that this Danger cannot be kept off, in all likelihood, but by the Army that is now on Foot; and that the Lords and Commons are so far from being frighted by any Thing that is in this *Answer*, that they have, for themselves, and the Members of both Houses, declared a further Contribution towards the Maintenance of this Army; and cannot but hope and desire, that you that have shewed so much good Affection, in the former Necessities of the State, will be sensible of your own, and of the Condition of the whole Kingdom; and add to that which you have already done some further Contribution, whereby this Army may be maintained for all your Safeties.

At the End of every Period of this Speech, the Applause was so great, that he was fain to rest till Silence was again made; and, at last, (the Company ready to be dissolved) after some Pause and Consultation with the Committee of Lords and Commons then present, and by their Direction, Silence being made, he closed all with the Words following:

'Worthy Citizens, you have understood the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, concerning my Lord Mayor here, and those worthy Members of your City, that are demanded; you have heard the Parliament declare, That they will protect them in that which they have done by Direction of both Houses; and they expect that you should express it yourselves likewise, that if any Violence be offered to them, you will secure and defend them with your uttermost Force; and you shall always find, that

that this Protection of the Parliament shall not only extend to these, but to all others that have done any Thing by their Command.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Which Words were no sooner uttered, but the Citizens, with one joint Harmony of Minds and Voices, gave such an Acclamation as would have drowned all the former, if they had been then breathing; which, after a long Continuance, resolved itself into this more articulate and distinct Voice, We will live and die with them, We will live and die with them, *and the like.*

So that in the managing of this Day's Work, God was so pleased to manifest himself, that the Well-affected went away not strengthened only, but rejoicing; and the Malignants (as they have been called) some convinced, others silenced, many ashamed, it fully appearing how little Power they had to answer their Desires of doing Mischief: Whilst, instead of dividing the City, they were exceedingly united; instead of a Dissipation, thousands were unexpectedly brought, as it were, into an unthought-of Association, to live and die in the Defence of these zealous and honourable Assertors of their Peace and Liberties: All which we may sum up in that Triumph of the Man of God, In the Thing wherein they dealt proudly, God was above them.

The ill Reception the King's *Answer* to the City of *London's Petition* met with at the Common-Hall, occasioned his Majesty to send, a few Days after, the following *Letter* and *Declaration* to the Sheriffs.

Trusty and Well-beloved, we greet you well,

'WE received a *Petition* lately from the Aldermen and Common Council of our City of *London*, by the Hands of Persons entrusted by them for the Delivery, who found such a Reception from us as well manifested our Regard to that Body which sent them: Though we well knew by whom that *Petition* was framed, and where

The King's Letter to the Sheriffs of London, requiring them to publish his foregoing Answer.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'where perused and examined before it was approved by those from whom it seemed to be sent, 'yet we were so willing to enter into a Correspondence with that our City, and to receive any Address and Application from them, according to 'that Invitation we had given by our late *Proclamation*; and were so glad to find that there 'was yet some Hopes they would look to the Peace 'and Happiness of that City, and at last sever 'themselves from any Faction or Dependence, 'which might insensibly involve them in those 'Calamities they did not foresee; that we returned 'such a gracious *Answer* thereunto, so full of Candour and Affection that the meanest Inhabitant 'of that our City, if he carefully consider the same, 'will find himself concerned in it, and that we 'have had an especial Care of his Particular.

'With this *Answer* of ours we sent a Servant of 'our own, in the Company of those who had 'been so well used here, to require and see that it 'might be communicated to the whole Body of 'that our City; not doubting but that both it, and 'the Bringer, should receive such Entertainment 'there, as might manifest their due Regard of us, 'and of our Affection to them: But, to our great 'Wonder, we find that, after ten Days Attendance, 'and suffering ridiculous Pamphlets to be published 'in our Name, as if we retracted our former Resolutions, (which Pamphlet we have caused to be 'burned by the Hand of the Hangman, as we also 'require you to see done) instead of that Admission we expected to our Messenger and Message, 'Guards of armed Men have been brought to keep 'our good Subjects, to whom that our *Answer* was 'directed, from being present at the Reading thereof; and Speeches have been made by Strangers, '(who have been admitted to the City Councils, 'contrary to the Freedom and Custom of those 'Meetings) to blast our said *Answer*, and to dishonour and slander us; which if our good Subjects 'there shall suffer, we shall be much discouraged

'in

'in our desired Correspondence with that our City; and so, by the Cunning and Power of those Incendiaries, mentioned in our *Answer*, Alderman *Pennington*, (who to shew his great Loyalty to us, and his Fitness to be Chief Magistrate of such a City, being informed that a desperate Person there said, *That he hoped shortly to wash his Hands in our Blood*, refused to send any Warrant, or to give any Direction to any Officer, for his Apprehension) *Ven*, *Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, who have plunged that our City into such unspeakable Calamities, in which they would still keep it to cure their own desperate Condition; our good Subjects there are not suffered to receive our gracious *Answer* to that *Petition*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'We have therefore thought fit to write these our *Letters* to you, requiring you the Sheriffs of our said City, to take care for the publishing that our *Answer* (which we herewith send you) to our good Subjects of that our City: And our Pleasure is, That you the Masters and Wardens of the several Companies of our said City forthwith summon all the Members of your several Companies, with all the Freemen and Apprentices (whose Hopes and Interests are so much blasted in these general Distractions) belonging thereunto, to appear at their several Halls; where you shall cause our said *Answer*, together with these our *Letters*, to be publickly read; that all our good Subjects may clearly understand how far we have been from begetting, how far we are from continuing or nourishing, these unnatural Civil Dissentions; and how much it is in their own Power to remove the present Pressures, and to establish the future Happiness and Glory of that famous City; and may seriously weigh every Part of that our *Answer*, as well that which carries Caution in it for the future, as Pardon for what is past: For assure yourselves, for the Time to come, we shall proceed with all Severity against such who shall incur the Penalty of the Law in those Points, of which we have given them so fair a Warning in

'our

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'our said *Answer:* And whosoever shall not behave 'himself like a good Subject in this our Kingdom, 'shall not, if we can help it, receive the Benefit 'and Advantage of being our Subject in any other; 'but all foreign Princes shall know, that as such 'Person hath parted with his Loyalty to us, so he 'must not hope for any Security by us; and, to 'that Purpose, we shall henceforward have a very 'inquisitive Eye upon the Actions of all our Sub-'jects, that some Example may be made, how 'easy it is for us to punish their Disloyalties abroad, 'who, for a Time, may avoid our Justice at home.

'And to the end that none of our good Subjects 'of that our City may think themselves bound to 'obey any of the Orders or Commands of the pre-'tended Lord Mayor, whom we have and do still 'accuse of High Treason, and conspiring to take 'our Life from us, it is well known to those Citi-'zens, who understand the Charter of that City, (so 'amply granted by our Royal Progenitors, and so 'graciously confirmed by us, and of which we pre-'sume our good Subjects there do still desire to re-'ceive the Benefit,) that the said *Isaac Pennington* 'was never regularly elected, or lawfully admitted 'to the Office of Lord Mayor of that our City; 'that in Truth Alderman *Cordwell* was, by the 'Plurality of Voices, chosen; and that this Man 'was never presented to, or admitted by us, in such 'Manner as is prescribed by their Charter; neither 'had that Judge, who presumed to swear him, a-'ny more Colour of Law or Authority to admini-'ster such an Oath to him, than he hath to do the 'same To-morrow to any other Alderman of the 'City: And we do therefore hereby declare the said '*Isaac Pennington* not to be Mayor of that our City 'of *London*, and to have no lawful Authority to 'exercise the same: and that our good Subjects of 'that our City, ought not to submit to any Orders, 'Directions, or Commands, which shall issue from 'him as Lord Mayor of that our City; but that 'the same are void, and of none effect.

And

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'And we do once more require you the Sheriffs 'of our said City, and all other the Magistrates of 'the same, in which all our good Subjects of that 'City will assist you, that you cause the said *Isaac* '*Pennington*, *Ven*, *Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, to be 'apprehended and committed to safe Custody; that 'we may proceed against them as guilty of High 'Treason, and as the principal Authors of those 'Calamities which are now so heavy upon our poor 'Subjects of that City; which, if not suddenly 'remedied, will in a short Time utterly confound 'a Place and a People, lately of so flourishing an 'Estimation in all the Parts of *Christendom*.

'And whereas we are informed, that one *Brown*, 'a Woodmonger, *Titchborne*, a Linendraper, and 'one *Harvy*, a Silkman, have exercised great In-'solencies and Outrages in that our City; and when 'many of our good Subjects there have assembled 'together, in a peaceable and modest Manner, to 'consult about the Peace and Welfare of that City, 'the said mutinous and seditious Persons have pre-'sumed to lead Multitudes of armed Men against 'them; and, by such Force, have beaten, wound-'ed, and killed our good Subjects: Our Will and 'Pleasure is, That if the said *Brown*, *Titchborne*, 'and *Harvy*, or either of them, shall so far neglect 'our gracious Offer of Pardon, as still to engage 'themselves in those unwarrantable and seditious 'Courses, you, our Sheriffs of *London*, do raise 'Power to suppress the said Force; and that you, 'and all our Ministers of Justice, use your utmost 'Means to apprehend the said Persons, and to bring 'them to condign Punishment: And we do hereby 'declare, That it shall be lawful for any of our 'loving Subjects to resist and oppose the said Per-'sons, if they shall hereafter, in such a warlike 'Manner, endeavour to molest them, as they 'would do Rebels and Traitors.

'And we hope that all our good Subjects of that 'our much-injured City of *London* do take Notice 'of our Grace and Favour towards them, in our

'so

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'our said *Answer:* And whosoever shall not behave 'himself like a good Subject in this our Kingdom, 'shall not, if we can help it, receive the Benefit 'and Advantage of being our Subject in any other; 'but all foreign Princes shall know, that as such 'Person hath parted with his Loyalty to us, so he 'must not hope for any Security by us; and, to 'that Purpose, we shall henceforward have a very 'inquisitive Eye upon the Actions of all our Sub-'jects, that some Example may be made, how 'easy it is for us to punish their Disloyalties abroad, 'who, for a Time, may avoid our Justice at home.

'And to the end that none of our good Subjects 'of that our City may think themselves bound to 'obey any of the Orders or Commands of the pre-'tended Lord Mayor, whom we have and do still 'accuse of High Treason, and conspiring to take 'our Life from us, it is well known to those Citi-'zens, who understand the Charter of that City, (so 'amply granted by our Royal Progenitors, and so 'graciously confirmed by us, and of which we pre-'sume our good Subjects there do still desire to re-'ceive the Benefit,) that the said *Isaac Pennington* 'was never regularly elected, or lawfully admitted 'to the Office of Lord Mayor of that our City; 'that in Truth Alderman *Cordwell* was, by the 'Plurality of Voices, chosen; and that this Man 'was never presented to, or admitted by us, in such 'Manner as is prescribed by their Charter; neither 'had that Judge, who presumed to swear him, a-'ny more Colour of Law or Authority to admini-'ster such an Oath to him, than he hath to do the 'same To-morrow to any other Alderman of the 'City: And we do therefore hereby declare the said '*Isaac Pennington* not to be Mayor of that our City 'of *London*, and to have no lawful Authority to 'exercise the same: and that our good Subjects of 'that our City, ought not to submit to any Orders, 'Directions, or Commands, which shall issue from 'him as Lord Mayor of that our City; but that 'the same are void, and of none effect.

And

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'And we do once more require you the Sheriffs 'of our said City, and all other the Magistrates of 'the same, in which all our good Subjects of that 'City will assist you, that you cause the said *Isaac* '*Pennington*, *Ven*, *Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, to be 'apprehended and committed to safe Custody; that 'we may proceed against them as guilty of High 'Treason, and as the principal Authors of those 'Calamities which are now so heavy upon our poor 'Subjects of that City; which, if not suddenly 'remedied, will in a short Time utterly confound 'a Place and a People, lately of so flourishing an 'Estimation in all the Parts of *Christendom*.

'And whereas we are informed, that one *Brown*, 'a Woodmonger, *Titchborne*, a Linendraper, and 'one *Harvy*, a Silkman, have exercised great In-'solencies and Outrages in that our City; and when 'many of our good Subjects there have assembled 'together, in a peaceable and modest Manner, to 'consult about the Peace and Welfare of that City, 'the said mutinous and seditious Persons have pre-'sumed to lead Multitudes of armed Men against 'them; and, by such Force, have beaten, wound-'ed, and killed our good Subjects: Our Will and 'Pleasure is, That if the said *Brown*, *Titchborne*, 'and *Harvy*, or either of them, shall so far neglect 'our gracious Offer of Pardon, as still to engage 'themselves in those unwarrantable and seditious 'Courses, you, our Sheriffs of *London*, do raise 'Power to suppress the said Force; and that you, 'and all our Ministers of Justice, use your utmost 'Means to apprehend the said Persons, and to bring 'them to condign Punishment: And we do hereby 'declare, That it shall be lawful for any of our 'loving Subjects to resist and oppose the said Per-'sons, if they shall hereafter, in such a warlike 'Manner, endeavour to molest them, as they 'would do Rebels and Traitors.

'And we hope that all our good Subjects of that 'our much-injured City of *London* do take Notice 'of our Grace and Favour towards them, in our

'so

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'so freely passing by and pardoning the Offences 'there committed against us, as we have offered 'by our *Proclamation* and our late *Answer*; and of 'our very earnest Desire to be with them, and to 'reside amongst them for their Comfort, Support, 'and Protection; if they shall, by first providing 'for their own Security, in such Manner as we 'have directed them in our late *Answer*, give us an 'Instance that we may be safe there too; and that 'they do likewise observe, that, being by such 'Violence kept from them, we have done our ut-'most Endeavour to continue and advance the de-'cayed Trading of that our City, by permitting 'and encouraging all Resort and Traffick thither; 'and therefore if, by the stopping of Carriages, and 'seizing Commodities by other Men, the Com-'merce and Correspondence be broken between 'that Place and our good Subjects of other Coun-'ties, they will impute that Mischief to the true 'Authors of it, and look upon us only as not able 'to help them. *

'Do but your Duties, and this Cloud, which 'threatens a present Confusion, will quickly vanish 'away; and you will enjoy all the Blessings of a 'happy Nation, to the which no Endeavour of ours 'shall be wanting.'

Given at our Court at Oxford, *this* 17*th Day of* January, 1642.

The

* This Passage of the King's *Letter* seems to allude to a *Declaration* of Parliament made the 9th of this Month, whereby it was *ordained*, 'That no Ships whatsoever should, from thenceforth, make any Voyage for the fetching of Coals or Salt from *Newcastle*, *Sunderland*, or *Blythe*; or carrying of Corn, or other Provision of Victual, untill the Town of *Newcastle* should be freed from the Forces there raised, or maintained, against the Parliament; and that Town be reduced into such Hands, and Condition, as should declare themselves for King and Parliament. And that if any Ship should, at any Time after the first of *February* then next coming, bring into any Port or Place of this Kingdom, any Coals or Salt laden from *Newcastle*, *Sunderland*, or *Blythe*, or any of them, untill further Order be taken by both Houses of Parliament, that every such Ship, and the Master and Sailors in the same, should be seized upon, and stayed in such Port and Place where they come in, untill the two Houses of Parliament, being thereof informed, should take further Order and Direction therein.'

The Sheriffs having acquainted both Houses of their Receipt of the foregoing *Letter* from the King, the several Companies were forbid to assemble at their Halls according to his Majesty's Order, and the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs were desired to take special Care to prevent the same: And some Masters of Companies, that were chief Promoters in opposing this *Order* of Parliament, were taken into Custody.

An. 18 Car. I. 1642. January.

Which the Parliament forbid them to do.

Thus much for the Proceedings of the Committees at the *Guildhall* in *London*, and the Consequences of that Meeting:——It is now high Time to return, and see what other Business was doing at *Westminster*.

On the 16th of this Month the Commons made an *Order*, That no Carriers, Waggoners, Carts, or Waggons, or Horses laden with any Commodities whatsoever, should be permitted hereafter to go to *Oxford*, or any Part of the King's Army, with any Manner of Provisions, without the special License of that House: And in case of Disobedience to such *Order*, their Persons and Goods should be seized upon, and kept in safe Custody. And that diligent Search be made for any Monies that may be carried, or conveyed, by any Person to *Oxford*: Also another *Order*, That if any Agent, or Servant, to any Person bearing Arms against the Parliament, should presume to come to *Westminster*, or reside about *London*, they should be forthwith apprehended as Spies, and proceeded against accordingly.

And stop all Provisions from going to the King's Army, &c.

About this Time the King having issued out a *Proclamation* for adjourning all the Courts of Justice, the next Term, from *London* and *Westminster* to *Oxford*: This was thought so prejudicial to the Public, that the Parliament forbad the Officers belonging to the said several Courts to obey this *Proclamation*, or the King's Letters sent to the principal Persons concerned in them. However, at the same Time, they thought fit to send a *Petition* to his

The King adjourns the Term to Oxford.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

his Majesty, offering *Reasons* against the said Removal, and praying that the King would revoke his Orders therein: To this the Lords received an *Answer*, which was read in their House, on the 18th of this Month, and was to this Effect: *

His Majesty's Reasons for so doing.

'HIS Majesty hath seriously weighed the Reasons, presented unto him by both Houses of Parliament, to induce his Majesty to revoke his late *Proclamation* for the adjourning of the Term; and returns this *Answer*:

'That the Lord Keeper of the Great Seal of *England*, being, in regard of his Majesty's most important Affairs, necessarily to attend his Majesty; his Majesty hath likewise appointed his High Court of *Chancery* to be held in the Place where his Majesty resides; that so his Subjects may have their Causes determined by the supreme Judge of that Court: But is well content that the Masters of the *Chancery*, that are Assistants to the House of Peers, shall, notwithstanding his said *Proclamation*, continue their Attendance upon that House where they are Assistants.

'For his Court of *Wards*, upon which so essential a Part of his Majesty's Revenue depends, it concerned him to draw the same to him; since, being at *London*, it will prove of no Advantage or Supply to his Majesty's Occasions, by reason of the Stops there of all Money from coming to him: And therefore he shall expect the Presence of the Council of that Court here, the Time of the Term being so short that they may speedily return again to the Service of the Houses, who have not used to deny their Members Leave, for so short a Time, to attend his Majesty's Service, to which by Law they are bound; besides that his Majesty doubts not but he may, for a convenient Time, upon pressing and urgent Occasions, especially for the 'Dis-

* From the *Lords Journals*: This *Answer* of the *King* is omitted by *Rushworth* and *Husband*, though the following *Ordinance*, in *Reply* to it, is inserted in both those *Collections*.

'Discharge of another necessary Duty, dispense with a Peer's Attendance upon the House without any Breach of Privilege; seeing it hath not been denied in former Parliaments.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'For the Danger of his Majesty's Subjects in their Passage by reason of the several Armies, his Majesty doth not know that they are to pass through more Armies to his City of *Oxford*, than they must to his City of *London*; or that the Courts of Justice cannot proceed with the same Freedom and Liberty where his Majesty's Army is, as where there is an Army against him; but his Majesty will take care that his good Subjects shall no way suffer by his Army here, which he can, by no Means, undertake for the other Army at *London*.

'For the Records of the several Courts, his Majesty expects and requires Obedience from the Officers thereof, according to his *Proclamation*; as no doubt his Subjects will take care for the particular Evidences that concern themselves; and for the safe Carriage and Conveyance of both, that they suffer not, in the least Degree, by his Majesty's Army, his Majesty will surely provide; neither can the Prejudice be great to his Subjects, the Courts of Equity being no further removed from the Courts of Law.

'The Reason of his Majesty's Adjournment of the Courts of Law till *Crastino Purificationis*, is for the great Danger his good Subjects must undergo by passing through the Armies; And his Majesty much fears his good Subjects will have little Benefit by their legal Proceedings, whilst his Majesty and the Law are no better able to defend one another.

'For these Reasons, and those expressed in his *Proclamation*, his Majesty can, by no Means, revoke his said *Proclamation*; but it being his undoubted Right to adjourn or remove the Terms to what Place he pleases, if he hath yet any undoubted Right, his Majesty expects Obedience to his said *Proclamation* and to every Part thereof.'

This

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

This *Answer* of the King's was ordered to be communicated to the Commons: And, a few Days after, both Houses passed the following *Ordinance*, to justify their Conduct in not suffering the Adjournment of the Courts to *Oxford*.

An Ordinance of Parliament, forbidding any Obedience to the King's Proclamation for such Adjournment.

'THE Lords and Commons having taken into their serious Consideration a *Proclamation*, dated at *Oxford* the 27th of *December* last, 'for the adjourning of the Court of *Chancery*, the 'Court of *Wards* and *Liveries*, the Duchy of *Lancaster*, the Court of *Requests*, the Receipt of his 'Majesty's *Exchequer*, and of the *First Fruits and* '*Tenths*, from the City of *Westminster* unto the 'City of *Oxford*; and for adjourning the Courts of '*King's Bench*, *Common Pleas*, and *Exchequer*, unto the Return *Crastino Purificationis*, found it to 'tend much to the Prejudice of the Common-wealth 'to remove the said Courts and Receipts to *Oxford*, 'where the Body of an Army, raised against the 'Parliament and the Authority thereof, now resides; 'and therefore, in performance of the Duty and 'Trust reposed in them by the Kingdom, whom 'they represent, did exhibit their humble Advice 'and Petition to his Majesty, with the Reasons inducing them thereunto, to revoke the said *Proclamation*; and, with all Humility, desired that the 'said Courts and Receipts might be kept at their 'several usual Places and Times, and not at *Oxford*: But his Majesty, giving still more Credit to 'the Suggestions of those wicked and malignant 'Persons that yet encompass him, than to his highest and most faithful Council, returned his negative Answer, and expressly denied to repeal this '*Proclamation*:

'Now, the Lords and Commons clearly discovering the great Inconveniences and Mischiefs that 'necessarily must happen to his Majesty's most 'faithful and best affected Subjects, in case those 'Courts and Receipts be removed to *Oxford*; where 'such of them as have Occasion to attend, cannot, 'with

'with any Safety to their Persons and Estates, repair; 'his Majesty having, in effect, declared all Persons 'that have contributed any thing in Aid or Defence 'of the Parliament, and the Privileges thereof, to 'be guilty of High Treason; and, in pursuance 'thereof, by the Force and Power of the Army 'there remaining, have seized upon many of their 'Persons, where they are detained Prisoners, and 'some proceeded against as Traitors; having no-'thing laid to their Charge but their assisting the 'Parliament, and opposing that Army raised to de-'stroy it and the Kingdom: And finding that di-'vers, both Judges and others, whose Attendance 'upon the said Courts and Receipts will be neces-'sary, consist of Persons that are Members and 'Assistants to both Houses of Parliament, whose 'Presence at this Time cannot be spared; and that 'if the Records, necessary to be used in the said 'Courts, should be removed from the usual Places 'towards *Oxford*, in a Time when two Armies are 'residing near thereabouts, it would endanger the 'Miscarriage of them; which might ruin many 'of his Majesty's Subjects, whose Estates depend 'thereupon: And that so long a Distance between 'the said Courts of Law and Equity, which have 'necessary Dependance one upon another, would 'prove exceeding prejudicial to many, thought it 'their Duty, in Discharge of the Trust reposed in 'them by the Common-wealth, as much as in 'them lieth to prevent the said Inconveniences: 'And therefore do hereby *declare* and *order*, That 'no Judge, Minister, or other Person belonging to 'any of the said Courts or Receipts, shall repair to 'the said City of *Oxford*; or do or execute any 'thing belonging to the said Offices and Employ-'ments, but in Places usual for the doing and ex-'ecuting thereof: And that no Member of, or As-'sistant to, any of the two Houses of Parliament, 'that have any Place, Office or Employment, 'about any of the said Courts or Receipts, shall 'presume to depart from their Attendance on Par-'liament, without the special Leave of that House

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

whereof they are Members or Assistants: And that 'no Person shall remove, or cause to be remov'd, 'any Records or Writings of any of the said Courts 'or Receipts to or towards the City of *Oxford:* 'And the Lords and Commons do *declare*, That if any 'Person shall disobey this *Order*, they will proceed 'against them as wilful Contemners of the Autho-'rity of Parliament, and Disturbers of the Peace of 'the Kingdom.

'And it is further *declared* and *ordered* by the 'said Lords and Commons, That no Judgment, 'Decree, Order and Proceedings whatsoever, that 'shall be given, made, or had, by or in any of the 'said Courts or Receipts, out of the usual Places 'where the said Courts and Receipts have been ac-'customed to be held and kept, shall bind any Per-'son that shall or may be concerned therein, with-'out his own voluntary Consent: And that the 'said Lords and Commons will, by the Authority 'of both Houses of Parliament, protect and keep 'indemnified all Judges, Officers, and other Per-'sons from any Damage or Inconvenience, that 'may or can happen to them for yielding Obedience 'to this *Ordinance*.'

The Commons had been, all the latter End of this Month, fully employed in settling the several *Articles*, by way of *Propositions*, to be presented to the King, for a general Pacification, which had been sent down to them from the Lords. After several Conferences, Altercations, and Emendations made by both Houses, and several Divisions on the principal Heads by the latter, they were at last finished on the 27th. And a Committee, consisting of four Lords and eight Commoners, was appointed to go to *Oxford*; for whom a Letter of Safe Conduct was desired. The King immediately returned one, and, on the first Day of *February*, the following *Propositions* were presented to his Majesty, at *Oxford*, by the Parliament's Commissioners appointed for that Purpose. Their Titles and Names were, the Earls of *Northumberland*, *Pembroke*

brake, *Sarum*, and *Holland*; for the Commons, the Lords *Wenman* and *Dungarvon*, Sir *John Holland*, Sir *William Litton*, the Hon. *William Pierpeint*, *Bulstrode Whitlocke*, *Edmund Waller*, and *Richard Winwood*, Esqrs.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

The HUMBLE DESIRES *and* PROPOSITIONS *of the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, tendered unto his Majesty*, Feb. 1, 1642.

The Parliament's Propositions for Peace, presented to the King at Oxford.

'WE your Majesty's most humble and faithful 'Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Par- 'liament assembled, having in our Thoughts the 'Glory of God, your Majesty's Honour, and the 'Prosperity of your People; and being most grie- 'vously afflicted with the pressing Miseries and Ca- 'lamities which have overwhelmed your two King- 'doms of *England* and *Ireland*, since your Majesty 'hath, by the Persuasion of evil Counsellors, with- 'drawn yourself from the Parliament, raised an 'Army against it, and, by Force thereof, protected 'Delinquents from the Justice of it; constraining 'us to take Arms for the Defence of our Religion, 'Laws, Liberties, Privileges of Parliament, and 'for the Sitting of the Parliament in Safety; which 'Fears and Dangers are continued and increased by 'the raising, drawing together, and arming of great 'Numbers of Papists under the Command of the 'Earl of *Newcastle*; likewise by making the Lord '*Herbert* of *Ragland*, and other known Papists, 'Commanders of great Forces; whereby many 'grievous Oppressions, Rapines, and Cruelties have 'been, and are daily exercised upon the Persons and 'Estates of your People; much innocent Blood hath 'been spilt, and the Papists have attained Means of 'attempting, with Hopes of effecting, their mischie- 'vous Design of rooting out the Reformed Religion, 'and destroying the Professors thereof. In the ten- 'der Sense and Compassion of these Evils, under 'which your People and Kingdom lie, (according 'to the Duty which we owe to God, your Maje- 'sty, and the Kingdom for which we are trusted)

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'do moſt earneſtly deſire that an End may be put 'to theſe great Diſtempers and Diſtractions, for 'the preventing of that Deſolation which doth 'threaten all your Majeſty's Dominions; and as 'we have rendered, and ſtill are ready to render, to 'your Majeſty that Subjection, Obedience, and 'Service which we owe unto you; ſo we moſt 'humbly beſeech your Majeſty to remove the 'Cauſes of this War, and to vouchſafe us that 'Peace and Protection which we and our Anceſtors 'have formerly enjoyed under your Majeſty and 'your Royal Predeceſſors, and graciouſly to accept 'and grant theſe our moſt humble Deſires and Pro-'poſitions:

I. 'That your Majeſty will be pleaſed to diſband 'your Armies, as we likewiſe ſhall be ready to diſ-'band all thoſe Forces which we have raiſed; and 'that you will be pleaſed to return to your Parlia-'ment.

II. 'That you will leave Delinquents to a legal 'Trial, and Judgment of Parliament.

III. 'That the Papiſts may not only be diſband-'ed, but diſarmed according to Law.

IV. 'That your Majeſty will be pleaſed to give 'your Royal Aſſent unto the Bill for taking away 'ſuperſtitious Innovations: To the Bill for the 'utter aboliſhing and taking away of all Archbi-'ſhops, Biſhops, their Chancellors and Commiſſa-'ries, Deans, Sub-deans, Deans and Chapters, 'Archdeacons, Canons, and Prebendaries, and all 'Chaunters, Chancellors, Treaſurers, Sub-Treaſu-'rers, Succentors, and Sacriſts; and all Vicars 'Choral, Choiriſters, old Vicars and new Vicars of 'any Cathedral or Collegiate Church, and all other 'their Under-Officers out of the Church of *England*: 'To the Bill againſt ſcandalous Miniſters: To the 'Bill againſt Pluralities: And to the Bill for Con-'ſultation to be had with Godly, Religious, and 'Learned Divines: That your Majeſty will be plea-'ſed to promiſe to paſs ſuch other good Bills for 'ſettling of Church-Government, as, upon Con-'ſultation with the Aſſembly of the ſaid Divines,

'ſhall

'shall be resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, 'and, by them, be presented to your Majesty.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

V. 'That your Majesty having express'd, in 'your *Answer* to the *Nineteen Propositions* of both 'Houses of Parliament, an hearty Affection and 'Intention for the rooting out of Popery out of 'this Kingdom; and that if both the Houses of Par-'liament can yet find a more effectual Course to 'disable Jesuits, Priests, and Popish Recusants, from 'disturbing the State or eluding the Laws, that you 'would willingly give your Consent unto it; that 'you would be graciously pleased, for the better 'Discovery and speedier Conviction of Recusants, 'that an Oath may be established by Act of Parlia-'ment, to be administred in such Manner as by 'both Houses shall be agreed on; wherein they shall 'abjure and renounce the Pope's Supremacy, the 'Doctrine of Transubstantiation, Purgatory, wor-'shipping of the consecrated Host, Crucifixes and 'Images; and the Refusing the said Oath, being 'rendered in such Manner as shall be appointed by 'Act of Parliament, shall be a sufficient Convic-'tion in Law of Recusancy. And that your Ma-'jesty will be graciously pleased to give your Royal 'Assent unto a Bill for the Education of the Chil-'dren of Papists, by Protestants, in the Protestant 'Religion. That for the more effectual Execution 'of the Laws against Popish Recusants, your Ma-'jesty will be pleased to consent to a Bill for the 'true levying of the Penalties against them; and 'that the same Penalties may be levied and disposed 'of in such Manner as both Houses of Parliament 'shall agree on, so as your Majesty be at no Loss. 'And likewise to a Bill, whereby the Practice of 'Papists against the State may be prevented, and 'the Laws against them duly executed.

VI. 'That the Earl of *Bristol* may be removed 'from your Majesty's Counsels; and that both he 'and the Lord *Herbert*, eldest Son to the Earl of '*Worcester*, may likewise be restrained from coming 'within the Verge of the Court; and that they

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'may not bear any Office, or have any Employ-'ments, concerning the State or Common-wealth.

VII. 'That your Majesty will be graciously 'pleased, by Act of Parliament, to settle the Mi-'litia, both by Sea and Land, and also the Forts and 'Ports of the Kingdom, in such a Manner as shall 'be agreed on by both Houses.

VIII. 'That your Majesty will be pleased, by 'your Letters Patent, to make Sir *John Brampston* 'Chief Justice of your Court of *King's Bench*; '*William Lenthall*, Esq; the now Speaker of the 'Commons House, Master of the *Rolls*; and to 'continue the Lord Chief Justice *Bankes* Chief Ju-'stice of the Court of *Common Pleas*; and likewise 'to make Mr. Serjeant *Wylde* Chief Baron of your 'Court of *Exchequer*; and that Mr. Justice *Ba-'con* may be continued, and Mr. Serjeant *Rolle* and 'Mr. Serjeant *Atkins* made Justices of the *King's 'Bench*; that Mr. Justice *Reeves* and Mr. Justice '*Foster* may be continued, and Mr. Serjeant *Phea-'sant* made one of the Justices of your Court of '*Common Pleas*; that Mr. Serjeant *Crefwell*, Mr. '*Samuel Brown*, and Mr. *John Pulefton* may be 'Barons of the *Exchequer*; and that all these, and 'all the Judges of the same Courts for the Time 'to come, may hold their Places, by Letters Pa-'tent under the Great Seal, *quamdiu se bene ges-'serint*; and that the several Persons, not before 'named, that do hold any of these Places before 'mentioned, may be removed.

IX. 'That all such Persons as have been put 'out of the Commission of Peace, or Oyer and 'Terminer, or from being *Custodes Rotulorum*, 'since the first Day of *April*, 1642, other than such 'as were put out by Desire of both or either of 'the Houses of Parliament, may again be put into 'those Commissions and Offices; and that such 'Persons may be put out of those Commissions 'and Offices as shall be excepted against by both 'Houses of Parliament.

X. 'That your Majesty will be pleased to pass 'the Bill now presented to your Majesty, to vindi-

'cate

'cate and secure the Privileges of Parliament from 'the ill Consequence of the late Precedent, in the 'Charge and Proceeding against the Lord *Kimbol-* '*ton*, now Earl of *Manchester*, and the five Mem- 'bers of the House of Commons.

An. 18 Car. I. 1642. February.

XI. 'That your Majesty's Royal Assent may 'be given unto such Acts, as shall be advised by 'both Houses of Parliament for the satisfying and 'paying the Debts and Damages, wherein the two 'Houses of Parliament have engaged the Public 'Faith of the Kingdom.

XII. 'That your Majesty will be pleased, ac- 'cording to a gracious *Answer* heretofore received 'from you, to enter into a more strict Alliance with 'the States of the *United Provinces*, and other 'Neighbour Princes and States of the Protestant 'Religion, for the Defence and Maintenance there- 'of against all Designs and Attempts of the Popish 'and Jesuitical Faction to subvert and suppress it; 'whereby your Subjects may hope to be free from 'the Mischiefs which this Kingdom hath endured, 'tho' the Power which some of that Party have 'had in your Councils, and will be much encou- 'raged, in a Parliamentary Way, for your Aid and 'Assistance, in Restoring your Royal Sister and the 'Prince Elector to those Dignities and Dominions 'which belong unto them, and the Relieving the 'other Protestant Princes who have suffered in the 'same Cause.

XIII. 'That in the General Pardon which your 'Majesty hath been pleased to offer to your Sub- 'jects, all Offences and Misdemeanors committed 'before the 10th of *January* 1641, which have 'been, or shall be, questioned or proceeded against 'in Parliament, upon Complaint in the House of 'Commons, before the 10th of *January* 1643, 'shall be excepted; which Offences and Misde- 'meanors shall, nevertheless, be taken and adjudged 'to be fully discharged against all other inferior 'Courts. That likewise there shall be an Excep- 'tion of all Offences committed by any Person or 'Persons, which hath, or have, had any Hand or

'Prac-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'Practice in the Rebellion of *Ireland*; which hath, 'or have, given any Counsel, Assistance, or Encou-'ragement to the Rebels there, for the Maintenance 'of that Rebellion; as likewise the Exception of *Wil-'liam* Earl of *Newcastle*, and *George* Lord *Digby*.

XIV. 'That your Majesty will be pleased to 'restore such Members of either House of Parlia-'ment to their several Places of Services and Em-'ployment, out of which they have been put since 'the Beginning of this Parliament; that they may 'receive Satisfaction and Reparation for those Places, 'and for the Profits which they have lost by such 'Removals, upon the Petition of both Houses of 'Parliament; and that all others may be restored 'to their Offices and Employments, who have 'been put out of the same upon any Displeasure 'conceived against them for any Assistance given 'to both Houses of Parliament, or obeying their 'Commands; or forbearing to leave their Attend-'ance upon the Parliament without Licence; or for 'any other Occasion arising from these unhappy Dif-'ferences betwixt your Majesty and both Houses of 'Parliament, upon the like Petition of both Houses.

'These Things being granted and performed, as 'it hath always been our hearty Prayer, so shall 'we be enabled to make it our hopeful Endea-'vour, that your Majesty and your People may 'enjoy the Blessings of Peace, Truth, and Ju-'stice; the Royalty and Greatness of your Throne 'may be supported by the loyal and bountiful 'Affections of your People; their Liberties and 'Privileges maintained by your Majesty's Pro-'tection and Justice; and this public Honour and 'Happiness of your Majesty and all your Domi-'nions, communicated to other Churches and 'States of your Alliance; and be derived to your 'Royal Posterity and the future Generations in this 'Kingdom for ever.'

Mr. Whitlocke's Account of that Affair.

Mr. *Whitlocke*, one of the Commissioners above-mentioned, gives us the following Particulars relating to this remarkable Embassy: 'They had 'their

their first Access to the King in the Garden of *Christ-Church*, where he was walking with the Prince, and divers other Lords attending him: All of them kissed his Hand, not as they were ranked in the Safe-Conduct, but according to their several Degrees. Mr. *Pierpoint* before the Knights, he being an Earl's Son *; and Mr. *Winwood* before Mr. *Whitlocke*, he being the eldest Knight's Son; and Mr *Waller* the last: The King said to him, *Though you are the last, yet you are not the worst, nor the least in my Favour:* The Discovery of a Plot then in hand in *London*, to betray the Parliament, wherein Mr. *Waller* was engaged with *Chaloner*, *Tomkins*, and others, which was then in Agitation, did manifest the King's Courtship to Mr. *Waller* to be for that Service.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'After they had all kissed the King's Hand, the Prince gave them his Hand to kiss.

'The Earl of *Northumberland* read the *Propositions* to the King, with a sober and stout Carriage; and being interrupted by the King, he said smartly, *Your Majesty will give me Leave to proceed?* The King answered, *Ay, ay*; and so the Earl read them all through.'

To go on with this Affair, since nothing else material intervened, except a Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, out of the *North*, which we postpone for the present:—The *Journals* inform us, That the Lords Commissioners, at their Return to the House, *February* 6, made the following Report of this whole Proceeding; that when they presented the *Propositions* to the King, he made them this short *Answer:*

My Lords,

'I Was always for Peace, and am more concerned in it than any, being the Father of the Country next under God. I cannot chuse but speak, though I thought to have said nothing. I confess

The King's Answer to the Commissioners.

* This Gentleman's Father, the Earl of *Kingston*, and his elder Brother, the Lord *Newark*, were at this Time in the King's Army.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'fess I am surprized, though I have seen somewhat 'of this, yet I believed them not to be such as these 'are. They that principally contrived and penned 'them, had no Thoughts of Peace in their Hearts, 'but to make Things worse and worse; yet I shall 'do my Part, and take as much Honey out of the 'Gall as I can. I will think of them, and take 'Time to give you my *Answer*.'

'That, two Days after, the King sent for them again, and told them, That he had considered of the *Propositions*, presented unto him from both Houses of Parliament, and had returned this *Answer*, which he commanded the Earl of *Holland* to read:

And to the Parliament.

'IF his Majesty had not given up all the Faculties 'of his Soul to an earnest Endeavour of a Peace 'and Reconciliation with his People, or if he would 'suffer himself, by any Provocation, to be drawn 'to a Sharpness of Language, at a Time when there 'seems somewhat like an Overture of Accommo-'dation, he could not but resent the heavy Charges 'upon him in the Preamble of these *Propositions*; 'and would not suffer himself to be reproached with 'protecting of Delinquents, by Force, from Justice; '(his Majesty's Desire having always been, that all 'Men should be tried by the known Law, and 'he having been refused it) with raising an Army 'against his Parliament; and to be told that Arms 'have been taken up against him, for the Defence 'of Religion, Laws, Liberties, Privileges of Par-'liament, and for the Sitting of the Parliament in 'Safety; with many other Particulars in that Pre-'amble, so often and so fully answered by his Ma-'jesty, without remembering the World of the 'Time and Circumstances of raising those Arms 'against him, when his Majesty was so far from 'being in a Condition to invade other Men's Rights, 'that he was not able to maintain and defend his 'own from Violence; and without telling his good 'Subjects that their Religion, (the true Protestant 'Religion, in which his Majesty was born, hath faith-

'fully

'fully lived, and to which he will die a willing Sa- An. 18. Car. I. 1642.
'crifice) their Laws, Liberties, Privileges and Safety February.
'of Parliament, were so amply settled and establish-
'ed, or offered to be so, by his Majesty, before any
'Army was raised against him, and long before any
'raised by him for his Defence; that if nothing had
'been desir'd but that Peace and Protection which his
'Subjects and their Ancestors had, in the best Times,
'enjoyed under his Majesty, or his Royal Prede-
'cessors, this Misunderstanding and Distance be-
'tween his Majesty and his People, and this gene-
'ral Misery and Distraction upon the Face of the
'whole Kingdom, had not been now the Discourse
'of *Christendom*: But his Majesty will forbear any
'Expressions of Bitterness, or of a Sense of his own
'Sufferings; that, if it be possible, the Memory
'thereof may be lost to the World; and therefore,
'though many of the *Propositions*, presented to his
'Majesty by both Houses, appear to him very de-
'rogatory from, and destructive to, his just Power
'and Prerogative, and no way beneficial to his
'Subjects; few of them being already due to them
'by the Laws establish'd (and how Unparliamentary
'it is by Arms to require new Laws, all the World
'may judge); yet, because these may be waved or
'mollified, and many Things that are now dark and
'doubtful in them cleared and explained upon De-
'bate, his Majesty is pleased (such is his Sense of
'the Miseries this Kingdom suffers by this unnatural
'War, and his earnest Desire to remove them by an
'happy Peace) that a speedy Time and Place be a-
'greed upon for the Meeting of such Persons as his
'Majesty and both Houses shall appoint, to discuss
'these *Propositions*, and such others here following,
'as his Majesty doth propose to them:

I. 'That his Majesty's own Revenue, Maga-
'zine, Towns, Forts, and Ships, which have
'been taken or kept from him by Force, be forth-
'with restored unto him.

II. That whatsoever hath been done or published
'contrary to the known Laws of the Land, or
'derogatory to his Majesty's legal and known
'Power

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'Power and Rights, be renounced and recalled; 'that no Seed may remain for the like to ſpring out 'of for the future.

III. 'That whatſoever illegal Power hath been 'claimed and exerciſed by or over his Subjects, as 'impriſoning their Perſons without Law, ſtopping 'their *Habeas Corpus*, and impoſing upon their 'Eſtates without Act of Parliament, *&c.* either by 'both or either Houſe, or any Committee of both 'or either, or by any Perſons appointed by any of 'them, be diſclaimed; and all ſuch Perſons ſo com-'mitted, forthwith diſcharged.

IV. 'That as his Majeſty will readily conſent, 'having done ſo heretofore, to the Execution of 'all Laws already made, and to any good Acts to 'be made for the Suppreſſing of Popery, and for 'the firm Settling of the Proteſtant Religion now 'eſtabliſhed by Law; ſo he deſires that a good Bill 'may be framed for the better preſerving the Book 'of Common Prayer from the Scorn and Violence 'of *Browniſts*, *Anabaptiſts*, and other *Sectaries*, with 'ſuch Clauſes for the Eaſe of tender Conſciences as 'his Majeſty hath formerly offered.

V. 'That all ſuch Perſons as, upon the Treaty, 'ſhall be excepted out of the General Pardon, ſhall 'be tried *per Pares*, according to the uſual Courſe 'and known Laws of the Land; and that it be left 'to that, either to acquit or condemn them.

VI. And to the Intent this Treaty may not ſuf-'fer Interruption by any intervening Accidents, that 'a Ceſſation of Arms, and free Trade, for all his 'Majeſty's Subjects may be firſt agreed upon.

'This Offer and Deſire of his Majeſty he hopes 'will be chearfully entertained, that a ſpeedy and 'bleſſed Peace may be accompliſhed. If it ſhall 'be rejected, or by inſiſting upon unreaſonable Cir-'cumſtances be made impoſſible, (which he hopes 'God in his Mercy to this Nation will not ſuffer) 'the Guilt of the Blood which will be ſhed, and 'the Deſolation which muſt follow, will lie upon 'the Heads of the Refuſers. However his Majeſty 'is reſolved, thro' what Accidents ſoever he ſhall 'be

'be compelled to recover his Rights, and with what 'prosperous Success soever it shall please God to bless 'him, that by his earnest constant Endeavours to 'propagate and promote the true Protestant Religion, and by his governing according to the known 'Law of the Land, and upholding the just Privileges 'of Parliament, according to his frequent Protestations made before Almighty God, which he will 'always inviolably observe, the World shall see that 'he hath undergone all these Difficulties and Hazards for the Defence and Maintenance of those; 'the zealous Preservation of which his Majesty 'well knows is the only Foundation and Means for 'the true Happiness of him and his People.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Upon the Reading of this *Answer*, the Lords resolved to communicate it to the House of Commons, as a Matter of great and serious Consideration, and to desire them to take it into their utmost Care and Thought.

But before we proceed any farther in the Transactions of *February*, it is necessary to take Notice of a Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, in the *North*; which was delivered to the Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference, and read in that House on the first of this Month. The Letter was address'd to the Speaker:

SIR,

IT is most necessary that I continue my Relation to you of the State and Condition of the Affairs in this Country, that they may be made known to both Houses; and Provision made for Succours to be sent us, which have hitherto come very slowly, though they have made large Expressions of their Care. We have been long destitute of Money to pay the Army, and to supply that Want, I have used all possible Industry, by taking up Money upon Exchange, and by calling upon the Country to supply me for the present upon the Public Faith.

Lord Fairfax's Letter concerning his taking of Leeds.

The Want of Money doth so perplex the Part of the Army here, as I imagine the House will not expect any

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'Power and Rights, be renounced and recalled; 'that no Seed may remain for the like to spring out 'of for the future.

III. 'That whatsoever illegal Power hath been 'claimed and exercised by or over his Subjects, as 'imprisoning their Persons without Law, stopping 'their *Habeas Corpus*, and imposing upon their 'Estates without Act of Parliament, *&c.* either by 'both or either House, or any Committee of both 'or either, or by any Persons appointed by any of 'them, be disclaimed; and all such Persons so com-'mitted, forthwith discharged.

IV. 'That as his Majesty will readily consent, 'having done so heretofore, to the Execution of 'all Laws already made, and to any good Acts to 'be made for the Suppressing of Popery, and for 'the firm Settling of the Protestant Religion now 'established by Law; so he desires that a good Bill 'may be framed for the better preserving the Book 'of Common Prayer from the Scorn and Violence 'of *Brownists*, *Anabaptists*, and other *Sectaries*, with 'such Clauses for the Ease of tender Consciences as 'his Majesty hath formerly offered.

V. 'That all such Persons as, upon the Treaty, 'shall be excepted out of the General Pardon, shall 'be tried *per Pares*, according to the usual Course 'and known Laws of the Land; and that it be left 'to that, either to acquit or condemn them.

VI. And to the Intent this Treaty may not suf-'fer Interruption by any intervening Accidents, that 'a Cessation of Arms, and free Trade, for all his 'Majesty's Subjects may be first agreed upon.

'This Offer and Desire of his Majesty he hopes 'will be chearfully entertained, that a speedy and 'blessed Peace may be accomplished. If it shall 'be rejected, or by insisting upon unreasonable Cir-'cumstances be made impossible, (which he hopes 'God in his Mercy to this Nation will not suffer) 'the Guilt of the Blood which will be shed, and 'the Desolation which must follow, will lie upon 'the Heads of the Refusers. However his Majesty 'is resolved, thro' what Accidents soever he shall 'be

'be compelled to recover his Rights, and with what 'prosperous Success soever it shall please God to bless 'him, that by his earnest constant Endeavours to 'propagate and promote the true Protestant Religion, and by his governing according to the known 'Law of the Land, and upholding the just Privileges 'of Parliament, according to his frequent Protestations made before Almighty God, which he will 'always inviolably observe, the World shall see that 'he hath undergone all these Difficulties and Hazards for the Defence and Maintenance of those; 'the zealous Preservation of which his Majesty 'well knows is the only Foundation and Means for 'the true Happiness of him and his People.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Upon the Reading of this *Answer*, the Lords resolved to communicate it to the House of Commons, as a Matter of great and serious Consideration, and to desire them to take it into their utmost Care and Thought.

But before we proceed any farther in the Transactions of *February*, it is necessary to take Notice of a Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, in the *North*; which was delivered to the Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference, and read in that House on the first of this Month. The Letter was address'd to the Speaker:

SIR,

IT is most necessary that I continue my Relation to you of the State and Condition of the Affairs in this Country, that they may be made known to both Houses; and Provision made for Succours to be sent us, which have hitherto come very slowly, though they have made large Expressions of their Care. We have been long destitute of Money to pay the Army, and to supply that Want, I have used all possible Industry, by taking up Money upon Exchange, and by calling upon the Country to supply me for the present upon the Public Faith.

Lord Fairfax's Letter concerning his taking of Leeds.

The Want of Money doth so perplex the Part of the Army here, as I imagine the House will not expect any

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

any considerable Matter to be done by us; though, God be thanked, the Forces I send from hence, and are raised by the Country in other Places, are daily acting something to advance the Public Service. As in the North-Riding, *where Sir* Hugh Cholmley *hath carried himself very bravely, giving several Defeats to the Enemy near* Malton; *and on* Monday *the sixteenth of this Month, joining his Forces to Sir* Matthew Boynton, *they fell upon Col.* Slingsby *at* Gisbrough, *where they defeated him and* 600 *Horse and Foot with him, that had done much Spoil in the* North-Riding; *they wounded and took Col.* Slingsby *himself, with* 140 *other Prisoners; killed a great many, and recovered* 200 *Arms with the Place. Amongst the Prisoners taken by Sir* Hugh Cholmley *at* Malton, *and here at* Gisbrough, *it is found that a great Number are* Papists; *and indeed the Strength of the Enemies will be found to consist much of* Papists, *and* Popishly *affected, the Earl of* Newcastle *granting his Commissions, for raising Men, to* Papists *for the most Part. I have heard, of late, of Commissions granted to twelve Recusants of these Parts, whose Names I send inclosed; and it is not to be doubted he walks the same Ways in other Places, as well as here; which Courses have so advanced* Popery, *as I hear, that in* York *where many* Recusants *are settled, Mass is ordinarily said in every Street; and such Affronts offered to the* Protestants *and the Ministry, as few dare resort to Church. In other Parts of the Country, I am informed, that for many Miles together, the religious Ministry are all either fled, or imprisoned; which Persecutions, if they be not timely repressed, will extirpate or much depress the* Protestant *Religion in these Parts.*

About Bradford *and* Halifax, *God hath blessed my Son and those small Forces with good Success against the Enemy, in several light Skirmishes: On* Monday *was Sennight, he seized on the Lord* Saville's *House at* Howley, *and put about* 100 *Musqueteers into it; and on* Tuesday, *I sent Sir* William Fairfax *and his Officers, with some Arms, to raise his Regiment in those Parts; and for his Convoy, I sent what Horse and Dra-*

Dragooners I could spare from hence, directing them to stay with my Son to assist him in his Design against Leeds. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Yesternight I received Letters from him, wherein he relates to me, that on Monday *last, he drew his Forces out of* Bradford, *and marched to* Leeds, *where Sir* William Saville *commanded in Chief; my Son first summoned them by a Trumpet to yield, which being refused, the Assault began, wherein his Men carried themselves with great Resolution; for the Town was fortified on all Sides, furnished with two brass Sakers, and manned with* 1500 *Soldiers, yet they forced an Entry in two Hours Fight; there were not lost on both Sides above forty Men, but he took four Colours, and* 500 *Prisoners, of which six are Commanders; and, with the Prisoners, they took many Arms, the Sakers, and all the Munition they had, which was not much; on our Part we lost thirteen Men, and Capt.* Briggs, *and Capt.* Lee, *both sore wounded; and I perceive that in this Exploit, Sir* William Fairfax, *Sir* Thomas Norcliffe, *and Serjeant-Major* Forbes, *with the rest of the Commanders, carried themselves very gallantly. The People do observe that Sir* William Saville, *and the chief Commanders on the other Side, soon after the Fight began, fled by secret Ways towards* Pontefract, *and their Men after them by Degrees; but, by the Way, Serjeant-Major* Beaumont *was drowned crossing the River, and Sir* William Saville *very narrowly escaped the like Fate.*

After Leeds *was thus won, my Son writes that he intended to have marched to* Wakefield, *where Sir* George Wentworth *commanded, but was prevented therein by the Enemies Fears; who, hearing he had taken* Leeds, *fled all away from* Wakefield *to* Pontefract, *and left the Town; so he hath sent some Forces to invest and keep that Place: Thus hath God blessed their Endeavours on that Side; and now I am told that Capt.* Hotham *and Sir* John Saville *are gone up Yesterday with some Forces into those Parts, but upon what Design I know not.*

Yesterday Morning I had some Intelligence that the most Part of the Forces were marched, the Day before, out

An. 18. Car. I 1642. February.

out of Doncaster; *so I have sent my Serjeant-Major-General with six Companies of Foot to invest that Place, and to leave some Forces to keep it untill more Strength come to us out of the* Southern *Counties; which, if it could be hastened hither, might very much advance the Cause, and crush the* Popish *Forces before they be supplied by the Queen's Coming, or their Party in* Scotland, *of which there is some Expectation.*

I desire you will make known to the House the great Extremities that are put upon me; and that a certain Course may be settled for supplying us with Money for the Entertainment of the Army, in such Season as our Men may be encouraged in the Service, and not fall into a Way of plundering for Want of Pay. My Son upon the taking of Leeds, *though he entered it by Force, yet he restrained his Army from Pillaging; so I have ordered that the Malignants, in lieu of the Spoil challenged to be due unto the Soldiers, shall give them a Month's Entertainment, which I hope will content both Parties.*

Yesternight Intelligence was brought to me, that the Earl of Newcastle *hath drawn down all his Forces from the* South *Parts of* Yorkshire, *those only excepted that kept the Castle at* Pontefract; *for Yesterday he marched from* Sherburne *to* York, *with thirty-six Colours, two Pieces of Canon, forty-five other Carriages; the certain Cause I do not yet know, but suppose it is to meet the Arms and Munition coming from* Newcastle; *or to prepare for the Queen's Entertainment at* York, *which is much spoken of. I shall carry a vigilant Eye upon his Designs, and endeavour to prevent them, so far as can be expected from the Forces under the Command of,*

Sir,

Selby, Jan. 26, 1642.

Your most affectionate

Friend and Servant,

FER. FAIRFAX.

P S. *I have sent unto Mr.* White, *to be shewed unto you, three Papers found with Col.* Slingsby, *when he was taken at* Gisbrough, *by Sir* Hugh Cholm-

Cholmley; *which may, peradventure, be thought necessary to be made known to the House, if Sir* Hugh *have not already presented the Transcript to you.*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

The Names of the Recusants *in these Parts, to whom the Earl of* Newcastle *hath granted Commissions to raise Forces, are Mr.* Robert Trapps, *Mr.* Stephenson *of* Thornton, *Sir* John Middleton, *Sir* Walter Vavasour, *Mr.* Ann, *Mr.* Tindale, *Mr.* Bretton, *Sir* Philip Hungate, *Mr.* Waterton, *Mr.* Thwinge, *Capt.* Sare, *and Capt.* Granger.

After the Reading of this Letter, the following *Ordinance* is entered in the *Lords Journals.*

An Ordinance of Parliament in Consequence thereof.

'WHereas many and fervent Prayers have been sent up to God, for his Blessing to be poured down upon the Endeavours of the Parliament in Maintenance of his own Cause and Religion, now openly assaulted by *Papists*; and because it is most just and necessary to observe the Return of these Prayers, that our Mouths and Hearts may be as much enlarged in Praises as they have been in Prayers, the Lords and Commons have thought fit to publish some late good Successes, as so many Answers from Heaven, which God hath given to the Prayers of his Servants.

'And whereas sundry late *Declarations* have shewed to the World divers Informations and Proofs concerning the raising of a *Popish* Army, with an Intention to subvert God's true Religion professed, and by Law established, in this Kingdom, and to introduce *Popish* Idolatry and Superstition; that it may appear what was, before, an Intention is now Matter of Fact, and really put in Execution, a most certain and true Relation is here offered to public Notice and Observation; wherein it may be seen that this *Popish* Army hath set up the open Practice of their abominable Idolatry in *York*, the second City in the Kingdom; and are grown to that Height of Insolency, that they terrify and drive away the *Protestant* Ministers and People from

An. 18. Car. I 1642. February.

out of Doncaster; *so I have sent my Serjeant-Major-General with six Companies of Foot to invest that Place, and to leave some Forces to keep it untill more Strength come to us out of the* Southern *Counties; which, if it could be hastened hither, might very much advance the Cause, and crush the* Popish *Forces before they be supplied by the Queen's Coming, or their Party in* Scotland, *of which there is some Expectation.*

I desire you will make known to the House the great Extremities that are put upon me; and that a certain Course may be settled for supplying us with Money for the Entertainment of the Army, in such Season as our Men may be encouraged in the Service, and not fall into a Way of plundering for Want of Pay. My Son upon the taking of Leeds, *though he entered it by Force, yet he restrained his Army from Pillaging; so I have ordered that the Malignants, in lieu of the Spoil challenged to be due unto the Soldiers, shall give them a Month's Entertainment, which I hope will content both Parties.*

Yesternight Intelligence was brought to me, that the Earl of Newcastle *hath drawn down all his Forces from the* South *Parts of* Yorkshire, *those only excepted that kept the Castle at* Pontefract; *for Yesterday he marched from* Sherburne *to* York, *with thirty-six Colours, two Pieces of Canon, forty-five other Carriages; the certain Cause I do not yet know, but suppose it is to meet the Arms and Munition coming from* Newcastle; *or to prepare for the Queen's Entertainment at* York, *which is much spoken of. I shall carry a vigilant Eye upon his Designs, and endeavour to prevent them, so far as can be expected from the Forces under the Command of,*

Sir,

Selby, Jan. 26, 1642.

Your most affectionate

Friend and Servant,

FER. FAIRFAX.

P S. *I have sent unto Mr.* White, *to be shewed unto you, three Papers found with Col.* Slingsby, *when he was taken at* Gisbrough, *by Sir* Hugh Cholm-

Cholmley; *which may, peradventure, be thought necessary to be made known to the House, if Sir* Hugh *have not already presented the Transcript to you.*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

The Names of the Recusants *in these Parts, to whom the Earl of* Newcastle *hath granted Commissions to raise Forces, are Mr.* Robert Trapps, *Mr.* Stephenson *of* Thornton, *Sir* John Middleton, *Sir* Walter Vavasour, *Mr.* Ann, *Mr.* Tindale, *Mr.* Bretton, *Sir* Philip Hungate, *Mr.* Waterton, *Mr.* Thwinge, *Capt.* Sare, *and Capt.* Granger.

After the Reading of this Letter, the following *Ordinance* is entered in the *Lords Journals*.

An Ordinance of Parliament in Consequence thereof.

'WHereas many and fervent Prayers have been sent up to God, for his Blessing to be poured down upon the Endeavours of the Parliament in Maintenance of his own Cause and Religion, now openly assaulted by *Papists*; and because it is most just and necessary to observe the Return of these Prayers, that our Mouths and Hearts may be as much enlarged in Praises as they have been in Prayers, the Lords and Commons have thought fit to publish some late good Successes, as so many Answers from Heaven, which God hath given to the Prayers of his Servants.

'And whereas sundry late *Declarations* have shewed to the World divers Informations and Proofs concerning the raising of a *Popish* Army, with an Intention to subvert God's true Religion professed, and by Law established, in this Kingdom, and to introduce *Popish* Idolatry and Superstition; that it may appear what was, before, an Intention is now Matter of Fact, and really put in Execution, a most certain and true Relation is here offered to public Notice and Observation; wherein it may be seen that this *Popish* Army hath set up the open Practice of their abominable Idolatry in *York*, the second City in the Kingdom; and are grown to that Height of Insolency, that they terrify and drive away the *Protestant* Ministers and People from

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'frequenting their own Churches, and from the 'Practice of their own Religion; wherein they 'have given a Pattern and Pledge what they intend 'to do, and what must be expected from them, 'through the whole Kingdom. The Consideration hereof (whereby the most precious Things in 'the World, God's Glory and true Worship, and 'the Salvation of the Souls of Men, are brought into Danger) ought to excite and stir up, and we 'are confident it will, the strongest Endeavours and 'most united Conjunctions, of all religious and 'well-affected *Protestants* and Patriots, to resist and 'suppress those Common Enemies of God, in Pity 'to their Country and the Common-wealth; for 'now it plainly appears that, however they pretend 'to defend the Religion and the Laws, yet their main 'Intention is to establish *Popery* in this Kingdom, and 'to extirpate the *Protestant* Religion; which cannot be done without Subversion of the Laws, as 'the *Papists* have, almost, effected in *Ireland*.'

A Committee of Sequestration appointed.

February 3. The Commons, after passing some *Votes*, for sequestring the Estates, real and personal, of some particular Persons, appointed a Committee to consider of the sequestring and seizing the Estates, real and personal, of all such Persons as have been, are, or shall be, in actual War or Arms against the Parliament: And to have Power to appoint Sequestrators, to make Allowances to such as should be employed in this Service; and to use all other Means thought effectual to it. This was the first Beginning of an *Ordinance* of Parliament, which proved so extreme bitter to the Royalists in the Consequence.

An Ordinance for assessing Monies upon Malignants.

Feb. 4. Another severe *Ordinance* for the raising two Troops of Horse and one Regiment of Dragoons in the County of *Northampton*; and for assessing of Monies upon the Malignants, disaffected Persons, Papists, Bishops, Deans, Deans and Chapters, *&c.* for the Maintenance of the said Forces, was read and put to the Question, in the House of Commons, but

but it passed in the Negative, by forty-one Voices against twenty.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Feb. 7. The Lords took into Consideration the King's last *Answer* to their *Propositions*; and, first, it was agreed to proceed in the *Treaty*. Next, it was proposed, That the Armies on both Sides should be totally disbanded, and to have a *Cessation* of Arms, that there might be a *Treaty*; when, after a long Debate, it was resolved, in the Affirmative.

Feb. 8. A Paper was read in the House of Lords, called, *A general Confession of National Sins*; which was agreed to by both Houses, and ordered to be used by their Ministers at the next public Fast. *

And for a general Weekly Assessment.

Several Days were employed in seeking out Ways and Means for raising of Money; and, amongst others, a Weekly Assessment was agreed on for the Maintenance of the Army; and an *Ordinance* was made for that Purpose. These new kind of Taxes lay prodigious hard on the Citizens of *London*, and all those Counties which were within the Power of the Parliament. The King seems to have supported his Army at this Time, chiefly, by Gifts and Loans.

Feb. 13. The Commons sent up their *Resolutions* on the intended *Treaty* at *Oxford*. They told the Lords, in a Conference, That they agreed with them in some Things, and differed in others; and offered the following *Votes*, of their House, to their Lordships Consideration.

Votes and Resolutions relating to disbanding the King's and the Parliament's Armies.

Resolved, 'That this House doth concur with the Lords in their *Votes*, That there shall be a speedy Disbanding of both Armies; and that there should be a fixed Time appointed for it. The *Northern* and *Western* Armies to be first disbanded, which shall be on the first Day of *March* next; and the Day for disbanding all the other Armies, on the tenth of the same Month.'

Resolved, 'That a Message be sent to his Majesty to desire his Consent for disbanding the Armies, ac-

* This Confession is in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 141.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

according to the *Votes* of this House; and that Persons shall be appointed to treat with his Majesty concerning the Manner of Disbanding.'

The Question being put, Whether there shall be a present *Cessation* of Arms, in order to the *Treaty* on the *Propositions*, before the Disbanding of the Armies? it passed in the Negative.

Resolved, 'That when his Majesty shall have assented to a Disbanding, and the Time and Manner of it, then the Time for an immediate *Cessation* shall be agreed on.'

They also presented the following *Reasons* why there should be no *Treaty*, upon the *Propositions*, before disbanding:

'THAT a *Treaty*, before the Disbanding, will be ineffectual to produce such a *Peace*, as may secure Religion against the Designs of the Papists to destroy it, and the Prelatical Party to corrupt it; or to secure the Liberties of the Kingdom, and the Privileges of Parliament, against Projectors and Delinquents. The Grounds and Evidence whereof are these:

1. 'Because Papists, Malignants, and other Delinquents, are now in greatest Power about the King; and this *Treaty* is like to be managed by their Counsels, whose Hopes and Interests are built upon the Breach and Distemper betwixt the King and his People; whereof they having been the greatest Cause, will still endeavour to hinder such a *Peace*, as may interrupt their own Designs: Whereas if the *Treaty* be after the Disbanding, the Authority of Parliament will be more powerful to remove such Impediments.

2. 'If the *Treaty* be before the Disbanding, it will not be safe for his Majesty to yield to any such Propositions as shall be for the suppressing of Papists and Malignants, his Person being in their Power; nor yet so safe for the Kingdom, whilst Arms are in their Hands, and so great a Party, both in *Ireland* and beyond the Seas, to encourage and assist them

them in resisting the Observance and Execution of any such *Treaty*. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

3. 'If the Armies be once disbanded, though the *Treaties* should not succeed, yet the War cannot be carried on, but there will be Time of Mediation to take up those Differences without any further shedding of Blood: Whereas, if the Armies be on Foot, upon every Difference in the *Treaty* both Sides may be provoked, with more Animosity and Bitterness, to refer Matters to the bloody Trial of the Sword; and many intervening Accidents may interrupt the *Treaty*.

4. 'That it will be most honourable for his Majesty, and more safe for his People, that the *Propositions* be yielded after the Disbanding than before; for thereby his Majesty will be freed from the Imputation of granting any thing by Force; which might both trench upon his Honour, and weaken the Validity of the Things granted; and both Houses will be free from that Tax of unparliamentary Proceedings, implied in his Majesty's *Answer*, Of requiring new Laws by Arms.

5. 'That if the *Treaty* be before Disbanding, it will endanger, or delay, his Majesty's Consent to the Disbanding at the Time limited; for there will be the same Reason, on his Majesty's Part, for concluding the *Treaty* before the Disbanding, as for the beginning it; that so, if he be like to have more Advantage by Arms than by the Treaty, he may still have it in his Power to pursue the same Ends for which his Force was at first raised; and all Delays in that Kind will make the Burdens and Miseries insupportable to the Kingdom, by the necessary Maintenance of all the Armies, and other Charges and Mischiefs which will thereby fall upon the Subject.'

To these *Reasons* of the Commons was annexed the following *Resolution:*

'That, forthwith after the Disbanding of both Armies, this House will send a Committee to attend his Majesty, by an humble *Treaty*, to give him

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

due Satisfaction concerning the *Propositions* sent to them from his Majesty, and those presented from them to his Majesty.'

These *Votes*, *Reasons* and *Resolutions*, laid before the Lords till the sixteenth of this Month, when they were quickened by another Message from the Commons. The *Votes* and *Reasons* were again read; and, after Debate, the Lords *resolved*, 'Not to recede from their former *Votes*, but to adhere to them, notwithstanding the *Reasons* of the House of Commons: To have a Conference with them, and acquaint them, That this House thinks it fit that the Time, from the Beginning of the *Treaty*, ought not to exceed twenty Days.

'That the King's *Propositions*, concerning his Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships; and the *Propositions* of both Houses for disbanding of all Armies may be first treated of.

'That the remote Armies may be disbanded by the last Day of *March*, or sooner if it can be: That the King's Army under the Command of the Earl of *Forth*, and that under the Earl of *Essex* raised by Parliament, may be disbanded by the 10th of *April*, or sooner.

'That there may be a present *Cessation* of all Acts of Hostility, on both Sides; and that all other Things may continue in the same State, without any further Intercourse, or free Passage, than is at present.

Lastly, 'Because that Money is necessary to maintain and support the Army, the Lords think fit to propose to the Commons, to join with them in sending to the Lord Mayor of *London*, to call a Common-Council the next Day, to move them to advance Money for the Supply of the Army.'

Feb. 17. The Debates on the disbanding, or not disbanding, the Armies before the *Treaty*, were this Day continued in the House of Commons; and, on two Divisions, one of them 76 against 73, and the other 86 against 83, it was carried to enter upon the *Treaty* before Disbanding. We meet with the following Speech of Sir *Benjamin Rudyard* of this very

very Day *; which probably was one great Means of the Question's being carried in the Affirmative.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Mr. Speaker,

Sir Benjamin Rudyard's Speech on that Occasion.

'I Do verily think that the Vote we have already pass'd, for the disbanding the Armies the first and tenth of *March*, will find us no farther on our Way than where we now are, besides the ill Accidents that may happen, and so much precious Time spent, as till then.

'Sir, the main Business is, whether we shall have a present *Treaty* or no. And this concerns us in all that we have, and are. Since we refused a *Treaty* at *Nottingham*, I do not find that we have gotten much Ground, although our Army then was fresh, full, and full paid; the People erect, bountiful and forward to the War. Now the Disposition of the Kingdom, for the greatest Part, stands bent towards a Peace: So that wheresoever the Refusal, or Delay of the Way to it shall be fix'd, the Disadvantage will fall on that Side. How clear soever the Intentions of the House are, yet abroad it will be taken but as a Shew without Reality, and so it will be returned upon us.

'For the *Propositions*; I have not known, nor heard, that all the Propositions in any *Treaty* of Importance were ever swallowed whole. If some be harsh and rough, they may be wrought and suppled by wise Treaters, made fit for an acceptable Agreement. If others be unpassable, they may be totally rejected. Those that are our unquestionable Rights, may be so claimed, and held.

'Mr. Speaker, we have already tasted the bitter bloody Fruits of War, we are grown exceedingly behind hand with ourselves since we began it: If we persist, there will such a Confluence of Mischiefs break in upon us, as, I am afraid, will ruin the King, the Kingdom, the Nation; unless God be merciful to us, and do step in with a great Miracle, for a little one will not serve our Turn.

'I

* From the original Edition, printed for *Michael Young*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

February.

'I have long and thoughtfully expected that the Cup of Trembling, which hath gone round about us to other Nations, would at length come in amongst us; it is now come at last, and we may drink the Dregs of it, the worst; which God avert.

'There is yet some Comfort left, that our Miseries are not likely to last long: For we cannot fight here as they do in *Germany*, in that great, large, vast Continent; where, although there be War in some Parts of it, yet there are many other remote quiet Places, for Trade and Tillage to support it. We must fight as in a Cock-pit, we are surrounded with the Sea. We have no stronger Holds than our own Skulls, and our own Ribs, to keep out Enemies; so that the whole Kingdom will suddenly be but one Flame.

'It hath been said in this House, That we are bound in Conscience to punish the Shedding of innocent Blood: But, Sir, who shall be answerable for all the innocent Blood which shall be spilt hereafter, if we do not endeavour a *Peace*, by a speedy *Treaty*? Certainly God is as much to be trusted in a *Treaty*, as in a *War*: It is he that gives Wisdom to treat, as well as Courage to fight, and Success to both, as it pleaseth him. Blood is a crying Sin, it pollutes a Land: Why should we defile this Land any longer?

'Wherefore, Mr. Speaker, let us stint Blood as soon as we can. Let us agree with our Adversaries in the Way, by a present, short, wary *Treaty*. God direct us.'

Feb. 18. At a Conference, this Day, the Commons informed the Lords, That they agreed with them in all the Articles relating to the *Treaty*; but these will fall after in another Place.

Propositions from the Citizens of London, as to raising Money, disbanding the Army, &c.

Feb. 20. New *Propositions* having been made to the Citizens for a considerable Advance of Money, some of the Aldermen and Common-Council, this Day, attended the House of Lords; when, being called in, they declared, 'That they were sent from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Common Coun-

Council of the City of *London*, to give their Lordships an Account of the Desire of both Houses for the Advancement of 60,000 *l.* which the Common Council have taken into Consideration, and voted to raise it speedily, if possible it may be; and the Common Council have many Things in Agitation, which are not yet digested; but think it fit humbly to desire of their Lordships, and the House of Commons, some Things that will give Encouragement in the raising of this Money, which they offer to their Lordships Consideration.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

1. 'That both Houses would vouchsafe to advance the raising of 60,000 *l.* by their own Example, and pay it in to the Hands of the Treasurers at *Guildhall*, in *London*, to the end that the Sight of it may encourage others.

2. 'That they may be eased in the Rates of the weekly Assessment, because it exceeds the Proportion of the County, if it be not too late.

3. 'That the 3000 *l. per* Month, granted for Defence of the City, out of the weekly Assessment, may be made 4000 *l.*

4. 'It is humbly desired that the Citizens Lands and Houses in the Country, may not be rated for the weekly Assessment, so that they pay in *London*.

5. 'It is desired, in regard they are informed that divers Misinformations have been made concerning the City of *London* by private Persons, that hereafter no such Credit may be given thereunto, as to be accounted the Sense of the City, unless it proceeds from the Court of Aldermen or Common-Council, signified by special Messengers of their own, or by their Burgesses, directed by one of the said Courts.

6. 'That it will much promote the said Service, if the Money assessed by virtue of divers *Ordinances*, be collected forthwith in *London*, and other Parts of the Kingdom, that the Charge may not lye wholly upon the willing Party; for that otherwise the Well-affected will be either destroyed with them or for them; with them, if they should refuse as others do; or for them, by contributing, alone, to the Public Safety more than their Estates will bear.

7. 'That

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

February.

'I have long and thoughtfully expected that the Cup of Trembling, which hath gone round about us to other Nations, would at length come in amongst us; it is now come at last, and we may drink the Dregs of it, the worst; which God avert.

'There is yet some Comfort left, that our Miseries are not likely to last long: For we cannot fight here as they do in *Germany*, in that great, large, vast Continent; where, although there be War in some Parts of it, yet there are many other remote quiet Places, for Trade and Tillage to support it. We must fight as in a Cock-pit, we are surrounded with the Sea. We have no stronger Holds than our own Skulls, and our own Ribs, to keep out Enemies; so that the whole Kingdom will suddenly be but one Flame.

'It hath been said in this House, That we are bound in Conscience to punish the Shedding of innocent Blood: But, Sir, who shall be answerable for all the innocent Blood which shall be spilt hereafter, if we do not endeavour a *Peace*, by a speedy *Treaty*? Certainly God is as much to be trusted in a *Treaty*, as in a *War*: It is he that gives Wisdom to treat, as well as Courage to fight, and Success to both, as it pleaseth him. Blood is a crying Sin, it pollutes a Land: Why should we defile this Land any longer?

'Wherefore, Mr. Speaker, let us stint Blood as soon as we can. Let us agree with our Adversaries in the Way, by a present, short, wary *Treaty*. God direct us.'

Feb. 18. At a Conference, this Day, the Commons informed the Lords, That they agreed with them in all the Articles relating to the *Treaty*; but these will fall after in another Place.

Propositions from the Citizens of London, as to raising Money, disbanding the Army, &c.

Feb. 20. New *Propositions* having been made to the Citizens for a considerable Advance of Money, some of the Aldermen and Common-Council, this Day, attended the House of Lords; when, being called in, they declared, 'That they were sent from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Common Coun-

Council of the City of *London*, to give their Lordships an Account of the Desire of both Houses for the Advancement of 60,000 *l.* which the Common Council have taken into Consideration, and voted to raise it speedily, if possible it may be; and the Common Council have many Things in Agitation, which are not yet digested; but think it fit humbly to desire of their Lordships, and the House of Commons, some Things that will give Encouragement in the raising of this Money, which they offer to their Lordships Consideration.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

1. 'That both Houses would vouchsafe to advance the raising of 60,000 *l.* by their own Example, and pay it in to the Hands of the Treasurers at *Guildhall*, in *London*, to the end that the Sight of it may encourage others.

2. 'That they may be eased in the Rates of the weekly Assessment, because it exceeds the Proportion of the County, if it be not too late.

3. 'That the 3000 *l.* *per* Month, granted for Defence of the City, out of the weekly Assessment, may be made 4000 *l.*

4. 'It is humbly desired that the Citizens Lands and Houses in the Country, may not be rated for the weekly Assessment, so that they pay in *London*.

5. 'It is desired, in regard they are informed that divers Misinformations have been made concerning the City of *London* by private Persons, that hereafter no such Credit may be given thereunto, as to be accounted the Sense of the City, unless it proceeds from the Court of Aldermen or Common-Council, signified by special Messengers of their own, or by their Burgesses, directed by one of the said Courts.

6. 'That it will much promote the said Service, if the Money assessed by virtue of divers *Ordinances*, be collected forthwith in *London*, and other Parts of the Kingdom, that the Charge may not lye wholly upon the willing Party; for that otherwise the Well-affected will be either destroyed with them or for them; with them, if they should refuse as others do; or for them, by contributing, alone, to the Public Safety more than their Estates will bear.

7. 'That

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

7. 'That Search be made, without the Liberties, in the Parts adjacent, for suspected Persons; and that, upon the Disbanding, those that are called the King's Army may be enjoined to go to their several Habitations, and not to come to *London*, to the Disturbance of the Peace, Safety, and Welfare of the said City, and of the good Government thereof; and that during the Time of the *Treaty* and *Cessation*, none of the said Army may be permitted to come to the City.

8. 'That to prevent Misapprehensions and Jealousies concerning the present Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, about the *Treaty* and *Cessation*, and *Disbanding*, it is humbly prayed it may be declared, That the Resolution of both Houses is the same as at the first, That nothing shall be done but that which tends to the securing the true Protestant Religion, the just Liberties of the Subjects, and Privileges of Parliament.

9. 'It is desired that the *Ordinance* for the weekly Assessment may pass forthwith, for securing the Reimbursement of the 60,000 *l.* which, otherwise, will not be raised.

'The Resolutions of both Houses are humbly desired herein, as an Encouragement to carry on the Business.'

The *Answer* returned to these *Messages* was,

'That their Lordships gave the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council, Thanks for their Readiness and Care in the raising of 60,000 *l.* and to let them know that their Lordships hope nothing shall be done in this *Treaty*, but what shall be for the Security of the true Protestant Religion, the Privilege of Parliament, the just Privileges of the Subject, and the Security of the City of *London*.

'For the *Ordinance* for the weekly Assessment, this House hath passed it already, and sent it to the House of Commons; and concerning the making of 3000 *l.* Allowance a-week to be 4000 *l.* their Lordships will give the best Furtherance they can in it.

it. As for other Particulars their Lordſhips will take them into Conſideration.' An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Feb. 21. The Houſe of Lords had ſent a Copy of the *Votes* of both Houſes concerning the *Ceſſation, &c.* to the Earl of *Eſſex*, their General; at the ſame Time deſiring his Opinion and Advice about them; to which the General returned the following Anſwer, addreſſed to their Speaker:

My Lord,

I Muſt acknowledge the Obligation I have to the Lords, that they deſire my Advice about the Particulars concerning a Ceſſation. *My Lord, if I had known of it before it had been* voted, *I ſhould have clearly delivered my Opinion, and then ſubmitted myſelf and it to your Lordſhips greater Wiſdoms; but, my Lord, now I know my Duty. The Arms you have raiſed are ſo diſperſed, and ſo many Difficulties in it, that it is too great a Burthen for me to undertake to deliver my Opinion; not doubting but that your Lordſhips, in your grave Wiſdoms, have weighed all the Inconveniences that may happen to your Servants employed by you, during this* Ceſſation, *and the Ways how to prevent them, before you voted the* Ceſſation. *My Lord, if I knew how to give a clear Anſwer to a Buſineſs I am ſo great a Stranger to, having been at none of the Debates, I ſhould ſhew my Obedience to their Commands. I am,* Letter from the Earl of Eſſex concerning a Ceſſation.

My Lord,

Windſor, Feb. 20. 1642.

Your Lordſhip's humble Servant,

ESSEX.

After this the Houſe being informed that one Mr. *William Murray* was without, with a Letter from his Majeſty to the Speaker. His Lordſhip was appointed to receive it; which contained only a Command to read the following *Meſſage* in the Houſe, and

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

and afterwards to communicate it to the Commons.

CHARLES R.

And the King's Message on the same Subject.

'WHereas his Majesty hath, together with a 'Treaty proposed a *Cessation* of Arms to 'both his Houses of Parliament, now sixteen Days 'since, to which, as yet, he hath received no An'swer: To the end that his Majesty may so clearly 'understand the Houses, that no such Imputations, 'as have been formerly, may after be laid upon him, 'upon Occasion of any thing that may intervene; 'his Majesty desires, if a *Cessation* shall be approved 'of by them, that the Day upon which the *Cessa*'*tion* is thought fit to begin, and such particular 'Limits and Conditions of that *Cessation* as are ne'cessary to be understood and agreed on before the '*Cessation* itself can actually begin, be proposed by 'them at the same Time, with their Approbation 'of it; since, as his Majesty supposes by the pre'sent great Preparation of several Forces of the Earl 'of *Essex* to march several Ways, that till such 'Time as this be done, they do not conceive them'selves obliged to an actual *Cessation*: So neither, 'till then, doth his Majesty conceive himself obliged 'to it.'

Hereupon the Lords *resolved* to have a Conference with the House of Commons, and communicate this *Message* and the Earl of *Essex*'s *Letter* to them; and to desire that a Committee of Members of both Houses may be appointed to consider in what Manner, and what Limitations, the *Cessation* of Arms may proceed in, and how to be carried on.

Feb. 23. The Parliament had sent a *Petition* to the King, which they called their *Desire and Advice*, That the next *Lent* Assizes, *&c.* should be put off, during these turbulent Times; they, this Day, receiv'd an *Answer* to it from the King, which was read in the House; and, for Connection Sake,

we

we give them both together. And, first, the *Desire* and *Advice*:

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

February.

THE Lords and Commons in Parliament humbly shew, That your Justices and other liege People, who are or shall be summoned, or have other Cause to attend at the next Assizes, *and* General Goal-Delivery *appointed to be shortly kept in the several Counties of* England *and* Wales, *cannot resort thither without great Peril of their Lives, and Damage to their Estates, by reason of the present miserable Distractions, and armed Forces being in all Parts of your Realm: In regard whereof, the Lords and Commons do humbly advise and desire your Majesty to command, That the said* Assizes *and* General Goal-Delivery *be not holden as is appointed; but that the same may be deferred untill it shall please God to restore Peace unto your People.*

The Parliament desire the Lent-Assizes may be put off;

His MAJESTY'S ANSWER *to the foregoing* DESIRE *and* ADVICE.

'HIS Majesty hath weighed the *Desire* and *Advice* of the Lords and Commons, sent in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, from the Earl of *Manchester*, concerning the putting off the *General Assizes* and *Goal-Delivery* throughout the Kingdom. To which his Majesty returns this Answer, That the present bloody Distraction of the Kingdom (which his Majesty hath used all possible Means to prevent, and will still to remove) doth afflict his Majesty, under no Consideration more, than of the great Interruption and Stop it makes in the Course and Proceedings of Justice, and the Execution of the Laws: whereby his good Subjects are robbed of the Peace and Security they were born to: And therefore, as much as in him lies, he will advance that only Means of their Happiness; at least they shall see that their Sufferings, that Way, proceed not from his Majesty: And since they may now expect,

To which the King refuses his Consent.

by

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'by the Laws, Statutes, and Customs of the Kingdom, the *Assizes* and *General Goal Delivery* in every County, his Majesty thinks not fit to command the contrary; but will take severe and precise Order, that none of his good Subjects shall receive the least Prejudice, as they repair thither, by any of his Majesty's Forces; which Rule he shall be glad to see observed by others; and then he hopes, by the due Execution of the Laws, even these Public Calamities may have some Abatement, and the Kingdom recover its former Peace and Prosperity.'

The latter End of this Month was chiefly taken up in framing Articles to be sent to the King for a *Cessation* of Arms, before the intended *Treaty* began. And, after consulting with their Lord-General and a Council of War, a Form was drawn up; which, after many Conferences and Alterations, was, on the 28th of this Month, perfected, read, and agreed to by both Houses, and ran in these Words:

Articles of Cessation, previous to the Treaty.

'WHereas the Lords and Commons in Parliament, out of a tender Sense of the present Miseries and Distractions of the Kingdom, and for the obtaining and settling of a happy Peace between his Majesty and his People, have humbly presented his Majesty divers *Propositions*, to which he hath been pleased to make this Return; *That his Desire was, that a speedy Time and Place might be appointed for the discussing of those* Propositions, *and likewise some others proposed by his Majesty*. It is thereupon agreed in both Houses, that a Committee of both Houses shall be appointed to attend his Majesty, on or before the fourth of *March*, if his Majesty shall so please, to endeavour to give him all humble and fit Satisfaction concerning the said *Propositions*, both his Majesty's and their own.

'And whereas, for the more speedy Removal of the bloody and miserable Effects of War, his Majesty hath likewise been graciously pleased, by a late *Message*, to signify his Desire, *That, for avoid-*

'*ing*

'*ing all intervening Accidents of War, which might* An. 18. Car. I.
'*interrupt this* Treaty, *there might be a* Cessation 1642.
'*of* Arms, *under such particular Conditions and Limi-* February.
'*tations as should be agreed on:* Their humble De-
'sires therein concurring with his Majesty, it is, by
'them, assented and agreed, That a *Cessation of*
'*Arms*, in order to such a *Treaty* as is resolved up-
'on by both Houses of Parliament, may be injoined
'to all the Armies and Forces now on Foot in the
'Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, on
'either Side, under the Restrictions and Limitations
'hereafter following; and that neither Side shall be
'bound and limited by this *Cessation*, in any other-
'wise, or to any other Purpose, than is hereafter
'expressed.

I. 'That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition,
'Victuals, Money, Bullion, and all other Com-
'modities, passing without such a Safe-Conduct as
'may warrant their Passage, may be staid and seized
'on, as if no such *Cessation* were agreed on at all.

II. 'That all Manner of Persons, passing with-
'out such a Safe-Conduct as is mentioned in the
'Article next going before, shall be apprehended
'and detained, as if no such *Cessation* were agreed
'on at all.

III. 'That his Majesty's Forces in *Oxfordshire*,
'shall advance no nearer to *Windsor* than *Wheatly*;
'and, in *Buckinghamshire*, no nearer to *Aylesbury* than
'*Brill*; and that, in *Berkshire*, the Forces respec-
'tively shall not advance nearer the one to the other
'than now they are; that the Parliament Forces in
'*Oxfordshire* shall advance no nearer to *Oxford* than
'*Henley*; those in *Buckinghamshire*, no nearer to
'*Oxford* than *Aylesbury*; that his Majesty's Forces
'shall take no new Quarters above twelve Miles
'from *Oxford*, any Way; and that the Parliament
'Forces shall take no new Quarters above twelve
'Miles from *Windsor*, any Way.

IV. 'That no Siege shall be begun, or continued,
'against *Gloucester*; and that his Majesty's Forces,
'now employed in the Siege, shall return to *Ciren-*
'*cester*,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'*cester* and *Malmsbury*, or to *Oxford*, as shall be 'most for their Conveniency: That the Parliament Forces which are in *Gloucestershire* shall remain in the Cities of *Gloucester*, *Bristol*, and the 'Castle and Town of *Berkley*; or retire nearer to '*Windsor*, as they shall see Cause; and that those of '*Wales*, which are drawn to *Gloucester*, shall return 'into their Quarters, where they were before they 'drew down to *Gloucestershire*.

V. 'That in case it be pretended on either 'Side, that the *Cessation* is violated, no Act of Hostility is immediately to follow; but, first, the Party 'complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on 'the other Side, and to allow three Days, after 'Notice given for Satisfaction: And in case Satisfaction be not given or accepted, then five Days 'Notice to be given before Hostility begin: And 'the like to be observed, in the remoter Armies, by 'the Commanders in Chief.

'*Lastly*, That all other Forces in the Kingdom of *England*, and Dominion of *Wales*, and 'not beforementioned, shall remain in the same 'Quarters and Places, as they are at the Time of 'the publishing of this *Cessation*, and under the same 'Conditions as are mentioned in the Articles before; 'and that this *Cessation* shall not extend to restrain 'the setting forth, or employing, of any Ships for 'the Defence of his Majesty's Dominions.

'All which they humbly desire his Majesty will 'be pleased to ratify and confirm, and that this *Cessation* may begin upon the fourth of *March* next, 'or sooner if it may be, and continue untill the 'twenty-fifth of the same Month; and, in the mean 'Time, to be publish'd to the Commanders, Officers, 'and Soldiers, and all other his Majesty's loving 'Subjects on either Side; and that the *Treaty*, intended, may commence upon the fourth of *March* 'next, or sooner if it may be; and the Continuance 'thereof not to exceed twenty Days.'

The same Day a *Petition* was presented to the Lords, from the City of *London*, by four Aldermen,

men, importing, That by the *Ordinance* lately made for the weekly Supply of 10,000*l.* the said Sum is too much for the City to bear, in regard of the Inequality between them and the Rates of other Counties; and they desired that there might be a clearer Explanation than is yet by the said *Ordinance* made: Also a full Declaration to free the Citizens of *London*, for their Houses and Lands lying in several Counties, they being assessed and paying in the City.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Petition from the City of London, for Relief in the Weekly Assessment.

The Aldermen were called in and told, That since their *Petition* was directed to both Houses of Parliament, the Lords would communicate it to the Commons, and consider of it in due Time.

The Commons sent up an *Ordinance* as a Security to the City for the late Loan of 60,000*l.* at 8*l. per Cent.* the Principal to be repaid out of the first Monies to be raised by the Weekly Assessment, now forthwith to be laid as well on the rest of the Kingdom as on the City of *London*. Agreed to by the Lords; and particular Commissioners were named and appointed to go down into the several Counties, to see this extraordinary Tax levied, and the *Ordinance* for it duly executed, which amounted, according to an Historian of that Age, to 33,580*l.* a Week*.

Notwithstanding the King's *Answer* to the Parliament's *Petition* about putting off the Assizes, they concluded, That the Oath the Judges had taken to obey the King's *Mandates*, and that they might be prejudiced in obeying the Parliament, were no Reasons for holding the Assizes in these Times; when the Power of the Sword was so prevailing, that the public Justice of the Kingdom could not be administred in an equal and indifferent Way: They therefore *ordained*, That the several Judges and Justices of Assize of the several Courts, *&c.* should forbear to execute any Commissions of Assize this *Lent* Vacation, as they would answer the Contempt thereof at their Peril.

The Parliament forbid the Judges to go their Circuits.

* Sir *George Wharton*'s Chronology.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

March.

Commissioners appointed for the Treaty at Oxford.

The last Thing that both Houses agreed upon, as this Day, was the naming and appointing Commissioners to go upon the *Oxford* Treaty. The Lords named the Earl of *Northumberland* and the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*; and the Commons, Sir *William Armyn*, Sir *John Holland*, Mr. *Pierpoint*, and Mr. *Whitlocke*. It was also *ordered*, That the Speaker of the House of Lords should send the *Articles* relating to the *Cessation*, inclosed in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, the King's principal Secretary of State; and likewise to desire a Safe-Conduct from his Majesty, for the Commissioners of both Houses to go to *Oxford* and back again.

An *Ordinance* of Parliament was now made for fortifying the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Borough of *Southwark*; and the stopping up all High-ways and Bye-ways leading to them, *&c.*

March 2. The neighbouring Counties associating with one another against the King, was much encouraged by the Parliament. The King did all he could to prevent it, by *Proclamations*, *&c.* and, this Day, one of them was sent up to the Lords by the Commons, with the latter's *Resolutions* and *Votes* upon it; to which they desired the Lords Concurrence: A Copy of which we think proper to insert, as a Specimen of many more, in the *Journals*, of the same Kind.

By the KING.

His MAJESTY'*s* PROCLAMATION, *forbidding all his loving Subjects of the Counties of* Kent, Surrey, Sussex, *and* Hampshire, *to raise any Forces without his Majesty's Consent, or to enter into any* Association *or* Protestation *for the Assistance of the Rebellion against his Majesty.*

The King's Proclamation against the Associations in favour of the Parliament.

'WHereas we have been informed of certain *Propositions* agreed upon by some seditious 'Persons of our several Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, '*Sussex*, and *Hampshire*, for an *Association* betwixt 'the said Counties, to raise an Army of 3000 Foot 'and

'and 300 Horſe, and great Sums of Money for the 'Maintenance thereof, and an Invitation to our 'good Subjects of thoſe Counties, to enter into a '*Proteſtation* to aſſiſt them in this odious and unna- 'tural Rebellion: We do hereby declare for the Sa- 'tisfaction of all our loving Subjects of thoſe Coun- 'ties, and that they may not be ſeduced from their 'Obedience by the Cunning and Subtilty of thoſe 'Men, That the Entry into ſuch an *Aſſociation* and '*Proteſtation*, and raiſing of Men, or contributing 'Money unto the ſame, is an Act of High Trea- 'ſon, and an Endeavour to take away our Life 'from us: And we do therefore ſtraitly charge and 'command all our loving Subjects whatſoever, up- 'on their Allegiance, not to enter into any ſuch '*Aſſociation* or *Proteſtation*; and that ſuch as, by 'colour of ſuch Authority, have aſſembled together, 'do immediately diſband, and repair to their Houſes.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'And we do, once more, renew our Offer of a 'free and gracious Pardon to all our Subjects of 'our ſaid four ſeveral Counties, excepting thoſe 'whom we before excepted in our ſeveral *Procla-* '*mations* concerning thoſe our Counties; againſt all 'which we ſhall proceed according to the Rules of 'the Law, as againſt Perſons guilty of High Trea- 'ſon; and whom we do hereby require all our 'Officers and Miniſters of Juſtice, and all our 'loving Subjects whatſoever, to apprehend, and 'cauſe to be kept in ſafe Cuſtody.

'And our expreſs Pleaſure is, and we do hereby 'will and command all the ſeveral Tenants of the 'Perſons excepted in our *Proclamation* for thoſe 'four Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Suſſex*, and *Hamp-* '*ſhire*, and all other Perſons who are any ways in- 'debted unto them, and all the Tenants to any 'other Perſon of any of the ſaid Counties who is 'now in actual and open Rebellion againſt us, or 'who, after the publiſhing of this our *Proclamation*, 'ſhall contribute to the Maintenance of the Armies 'now in Rebellion againſt us, under the Conduct 'of *Robert* Earl of *Eſſex*, or of any other Perſon or 'Perſons, or that ſhall join in any ſuch traiterous

An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

March.

Commissioners appointed for the Treaty at Oxford.

The last Thing that both Houses agreed upon, as this Day, was the naming and appointing Commissioners to go upon the *Oxford* Treaty. The Lords named the Earl of *Northumberland* and the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*; and the Commons, Sir *William Armyn*, Sir *John Holland*, Mr. *Pierpoint*, and Mr. *Whitlocke*. It was also *ordered*, That the Speaker of the House of Lords should send the *Articles* relating to the *Cessation*, inclosed in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, the King's principal Secretary of State; and likewise to desire a Safe-Conduct from his Majesty, for the Commissioners of both Houses to go to *Oxford* and back again.

An *Ordinance* of Parliament was now made for fortifying the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Borough of *Southwark*; and the stopping up all High-ways and Bye-ways leading to them, *&c.*

March 2. The neighbouring Counties associating with one another against the King, was much encouraged by the Parliament. The King did all he could to prevent it, by *Proclamations*, *&c.* and, this Day, one of them was sent up to the Lords by the Commons, with the latter's *Resolutions* and *Votes* upon it; to which they desired the Lords Concurrence: A Copy of which we think proper to insert, as a Specimen of many more, in the *Journals*, of the same Kind.

By the KING.

His MAJESTY'*s* PROCLAMATION, *forbidding all his loving Subjects of the Counties of* Kent, Surrey, Sussex, *and* Hampshire, *to raise any Forces without his Majesty's Consent, or to enter into any* Association *or* Protestation *for the Assistance of the Rebellion against his Majesty.*

The King's Proclamation against the Associations in favour of the Parliament.

'WHereas we have been informed of certain *Propositions* agreed upon by some seditious 'Persons of our several Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, '*Sussex*, and *Hampshire*, for an *Association* betwixt 'the said Counties, to raise an Army of 3000 Foot 'and

'and 300 Horse, and great Sums of Money for the 'Maintenance thereof, and an Invitation to our 'good Subjects of those Counties, to enter into a '*Protestation* to assist them in this odious and unna-'tural Rebellion: We do hereby declare for the Sa-'tisfaction of all our loving Subjects of those Coun-'ties, and that they may not be seduced from their 'Obedience by the Cunning and Subtilty of those 'Men, That the Entry into such an *Association* and '*Protestation*, and raising of Men, or contributing 'Money unto the same, is an Act of High Trea-'son, and an Endeavour to take away our Life 'from us: And we do therefore straitly charge and 'command all our loving Subjects whatsoever, up-'on their Allegiance, not to enter into any such '*Association* or *Protestation*; and that such as, by 'colour of such Authority, have assembled together, 'do immediately disband, and repair to their Houses.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'And we do, once more, renew our Offer of a 'free and gracious Pardon to all our Subjects of 'our said four several Counties, excepting those 'whom we before excepted in our several *Procla-'mations* concerning those our Counties; against all 'which we shall proceed according to the Rules of 'the Law, as against Persons guilty of High Trea-'son; and whom we do hereby require all our 'Officers and Ministers of Justice, and all our 'loving Subjects whatsoever, to apprehend, and 'cause to be kept in safe Custody.

'And our express Pleasure is, and we do hereby 'will and command all the several Tenants of the 'Persons excepted in our *Proclamation* for those 'four Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Sussex*, and *Hamp-'shire*, and all other Persons who are any ways in-'debted unto them, and all the Tenants to any 'other Person of any of the said Counties who is 'now in actual and open Rebellion against us, or 'who, after the publishing of this our *Proclamation*, 'shall contribute to the Maintenance of the Armies 'now in Rebellion against us, under the Conduct 'of *Robert* Earl of *Essex*, or of any other Person or 'Persons, or that shall join in any such traiterous

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'*Association* or *Protestation*, That they forbear to 'pay any Rents or Debts due to the said several 'Persons, but detain the same in their Hands to-'wards the Maintenance of the Peace of those 'Counties, and the Reparation of such Men who 'have suffered by the Violence of others.

'And if any Soldier or Soldiers, now under Com-'mand against us in either of our said Counties, 'shall, within six Days after the publishing of this 'our *Proclamation*, apprehend and bring before us, 'or any Officers of our Army, or any other our 'Minister of Justice, so that the Person apprehend-'ed be kept in safe Custody, the Bodies of any of 'the Persons so excepted by us, or of any of the 'Commanders or Officers now in Rebellion against 'us in any of the said four Counties, such Sol-'diers, besides their Pardons, shall receive such 'liberal Rewards, by Pensions or otherwise, as their 'several Services, in respect of the Qualities of the 'Persons so apprehended, shall deserve.

'And if any Commander or Officer, except the 'Persons so excepted, now in Rebellion against us, 'in any of the said four Counties, shall, within five 'Days after this our *Proclamation* published, being 'convinced in his Conscience of his damnable Of-'fence against God and us, in assisting this odious 'Rebellion, return to his Allegiance and repair to 'our Army, and commit no hostile Act in the 'mean while against us, we shall not only pardon 'him, but so far employ him as his Quality and 'Demeanour shall deserve.

'And we do hereby require all our loving Sub-'jects, of what Degree or Quality soever, within 'our said four several Counties, upon their Alle-'giance, and as they tender the Cause of God, (the '*Protestant* Religion being invaded and threatened 'to be rooted up by *Anabaptists*, *Brownists*, and '*Atheists*) of us and our Posterity, (our Life being 'sought after in this Rebellion) and of themselves, '(the Law and Liberty of the Subject being in ap-'parent Hazard to be subjected to an arbitrary law-'less Power of a few schismatical, factious, and

'am-

'ambitious Persons) to assist us in Person, or with 'the Loan of Money, Plate, and Horses, in this 'our present great Necessity.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'And having said thus much out of our tender 'Regard of our Subjects of those our Counties, if 'they shall henceforward be guilty of the Premises; 'and shall, either by Loan or Contribution, assist the 'said Army of Rebels, or assemble and muster them-'selves in Arms, without Authority derived from 'us under our Hand; or shall enter into any Oath 'of *Association* for opposing us and our Army, and 'so compel us to send Part of our Forces thither 'to reduce them to their Obedience, they must an-'swer to God and their Country for the Miseries 'that must follow.

'And our Pleasure is, That this our *Proclama-'tion* be read in all the Parish Churches and Chapels 'in the said four several Counties.

Given at our Court at Oxford, *this sixteenth Day of* February, *in the eighteenth Year of our Reign.*

This *Proclamation* being read, the House of Commons desired their Lordships Concurrence in the following *Votes:*

Votes of the Commons thereupon.

1. 'That in this *Proclamation*, prohibiting the Association of divers Counties, and the Contributions to the Army under the Earl of *Essex*, there are contained divers false and scandalous Charges upon the Proceedings of Parliament; and that it is Treason to the Common-wealth in those that advised his Majesty to the setting forth of this *Proclamation*; and likewise in all such as shall publish the same, or act any thing upon it; and that the Houses will proceed against them according to Law.

2. 'That whosoever did advise the setting forth of this *Proclamation*, did thereby express a malicious Intention to hinder the *Treaty*, and the happy Peace and Union to be hoped from thence, between the King and the People.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

3. 'That these several Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Sussex*, *Hantshire*, or any other Counties, notwithstanding any thing in this *Proclamation*, may proceed to associate themselves.

4. 'That the Lords be moved that a Committee be nominated of some Members of both Houses, for drawing a *Declaration* for vindicating the Proceedings of Parliament from the Scandals in this *Proclamation*, and upon the other Matters contained in these *Votes*.'

The House of Commons also desired the Time might be taken Notice of, in the *Declaration*, when this *Proclamation* was made; which was presently after the King had sent a Message to both Houses, desiring a *Treaty* and *Cessation* of Arms that so all Differences might be settled betwixt his Majesty and the Parliament.

To all which the Lords agree.

The Lords concurred with the House of Commons in all the aforesaid *Votes*, and nominated the Earls of *Northumberland*, *Pembroke*. *Holland*, *Warwick*, and *Bolingbroke*, and the Lord Viscount *Say and Sele*, to join with a proportionable Number of the House of Commons to draw up the said *Declaration*.

March 6. This Day the Lords received an *Answer* from the King to their *Articles* of *Cessation*; which was as follows:

The King's Articles of Cessation.

'HIS Majesty hoped the *Treaty* would have been begun, and the *Cessation* agreed on long since; and that much might, in this Time, have been concluded in order to the Peace and Happiness of the Kingdom; but since, in almost a Month (for his Majesty's *Propositions* were made on the third of *February*, and he heard not, since, from both Houses till the first of *March*) no Consent hath been yielded to it, he conceives the *Cessation* cannot begin so soon as the fourth of this Month; by which Time (though his Majesty uses no Delay in making his Answer) the same can hardly

'hardly be returned to them; and many of the 'Articles now presented to him from both Houses 'concerning the *Cessation*, are so strict, that such 'of his good Subjects, who are not of his Army '(and for whom, generally, he shall always have a 'principal, just, and compassionate Regard) receive 'not any Benefit, or are restored to any Liberty 'thereby, which his Majesty shall ever insist upon; '(when in Matters meerly concerning himself, he 'may descend to easier Conditions) and which he 'hath returned with such Alterations, as he doubts 'not both his Houses will consent to; and do sufficiently manifest how sollicitous his Majesty is for the 'Good of his People, and how desirous he is that, 'in this unnatural Contention, no more Blood of 'his Subjects may be spilt, (upon which he looks 'with much Grief, Compassion, and Tenderness 'of Heart) even of those who have lifted up their 'Hands against him: And his Majesty therefore desires (against which he can imagine no Objection 'can be made) That the *Cessation* may begin upon 'the twelfth of this Month, or sooner, if the Conditions of the *Cessation* shall be sooner agreed on, 'and is willing the same shall continue for twenty 'Days; in which Time he hopes by the *Treaty*, 'and a clear Understanding of each other, a full 'Peace and Happiness may be established throughout the Kingdom. And, during that Time, his 'Majesty is willing that neither Side shall be bound 'or limited by this *Cessation* in any otherwise, or to 'any other Purpose, than is hereafter expressed.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

I. 'That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition, 'Money, Bullion, and Victuals, passing for the 'Use of either Army, without a Pass or Safe Conduct from the Generals of each Army, may be 'stayed and seized on, as if no *Cessation* was agreed 'on at all.

II. 'That all Officers and Soldiers of either Army, passing without such Licence or Safe Conduct 'as aforesaid, may be apprehended and detained, 'as if no such *Cessation* was agreed on at all: And 'that

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

3. 'That these several Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Sussex*, *Hantshire*, or any other Counties, notwithstanding any thing in this *Proclamation*, may proceed to associate themselves.

4. 'That the Lords be moved that a Committee be nominated of some Members of both Houses, for drawing a *Declaration* for vindicating the Proceedings of Parliament from the Scandals in this *Proclamation*, and upon the other Matters contained in these *Votes*.'

The House of Commons also desired the Time might be taken Notice of, in the *Declaration*, when this *Proclamation* was made; which was presently after the King had sent a Message to both Houses, desiring a *Treaty* and *Cessation* of Arms that so all Differences might be settled betwixt his Majesty and the Parliament.

To all which the Lords agree.

The Lords concurred with the House of Commons in all the aforesaid *Votes*, and nominated the Earls of *Northumberland*, *Pembroke*. *Holland*, *Warwick*, and *Bolingbroke*, and the Lord Viscount *Say and Sele*, to join with a proportionable Number of the House of Commons to draw up the said *Declaration*.

March 6. This Day the Lords received an *Answer* from the King to their *Articles* of *Cessation*; which was as follows:

The King's Articles of Cessation.

'HIS Majesty hoped the *Treaty* would have been begun, and the *Cessation* agreed on long since; and that much might, in this Time, have been concluded in order to the Peace and Happiness of the Kingdom; but since, in almost a Month (for his Majesty's *Propositions* were made on the third of *February*, and he heard not, since, from both Houses till the first of *March*) no Consent hath been yielded to it, he conceives the *Cessation* cannot begin so soon as the fourth of this Month; by which Time (though his Majesty uses no Delay in making his Answer) the same can hardly

'hardly be returned to them; and many of the 'Articles now presented to him from both Houses 'concerning the *Cessation*, are so strict, that such 'of his good Subjects, who are not of his Army '(and for whom, generally, he shall always have a 'principal, just, and compassionate Regard) receive 'not any Benefit, or are restored to any Liberty 'thereby, which his Majesty shall ever insist upon; '(when in Matters meerly concerning himself, he 'may descend to easier Conditions) and which he 'hath returned with such Alterations, as he doubts 'not both his Houses will consent to; and do sufficiently manifest how sollicitous his Majesty is for the 'Good of his People, and how desirous he is that, 'in this unnatural Contention, no more Blood of 'his Subjects may be spilt, (upon which he looks 'with much Grief, Compassion, and Tenderness 'of Heart) even of those who have lifted up their 'Hands against him: And his Majesty therefore desires (against which he can imagine no Objection 'can be made) That the *Cessation* may begin upon 'the twelfth of this Month, or sooner, if the Conditions of the *Cessation* shall be sooner agreed on, 'and is willing the same shall continue for twenty 'Days; in which Time he hopes by the *Treaty*, 'and a clear Understanding of each other, a full 'Peace and Happiness may be established throughout the Kingdom. And, during that Time, his 'Majesty is willing that neither Side shall be bound 'or limited by this *Cessation* in any otherwise, or to 'any other Purpose, than is hereafter expressed.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

I. 'That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition, 'Money, Bullion, and Victuals, passing for the 'Use of either Army, without a Pass or Safe Conduct from the Generals of each Army, may be 'stayed and seized on, as if no *Cessation* was agreed 'on at all.

II. 'That all Officers and Soldiers of either Army, passing without such Licence or Safe Conduct 'as aforesaid, may be apprehended and detained, 'as if no such *Cessation* was agreed on at all: And 'that

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'that all Manner of Persons, his Majesty's Subjects, 'of what Quality or Condition soever (except Officers and Soldiers of either Army) shall pass to 'and from the Cities of *Oxford* and *London*, and 'back again at their Pleasures, during this *Cessation*; 'as likewise to and from any other Parts of his Majesty's Dominions, without any Search, Stay, or 'Imprisonment of their Persons, or Seizure and Detention of their Goods or Estates; and that all 'Manner of Trade, Traffick, and Commerce be 'free and open between all his Majesty's Subjects, 'excepting, as aforesaid, between the Officers and 'Soldiers of either Army; or for Arms, Ammunition, Money, Bullion, or Victuals, for the Use 'of either Army, without a Pass or Safe-Conduct 'as aforesaid; which may be a good Beginning to 'renew the Trade and Correspondence of the 'Kingdom, and whereby his good Subjects may be 'restor'd to the Liberty and Freedom they were born 'to, and have so happily enjoyed till these miserable 'Distractions; and which, even during this War, 'his Majesty hath, to his utmost, laboured to preserve; opening the Way, by most strict *Proclamations*, to the Passage of all Commodities, even to 'the City of *London* itself.

III. 'That his Majesty's Forces in *Oxfordshire* 'shall advance no nearer to *Windsor* than *Wheatley*; 'and, in *Buckinghamshire*, no nearer to *Aylesbury* than '*Brill*; and that in *Berkshire*, the Forces respectively 'shall not advance nearer the one to the other than 'they shall be at the Day to be agreed upon for the '*Cessation* to begin; and that the Forces of the other Army in *Oxfordshire*, shall advance no nearer 'to *Oxford* than *Henley*, and those in *Buckinghamshire* no nearer to *Oxford* than *Aylesbury*; and that 'the Forces of neither Army shall advance their 'Quarters nearer to each other than they shall be 'upon the Day agreed on for the *Cessation* to begin, 'otherwise than in Passage and Communication between their several Quarters respectively, without any Acts of Hostility to each other; but may 'en-

'enlarge themselves within their own Quarters respectively, as they shall find convenient.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

IV. 'That the Forces of either Army in *Gloucestershire*, *Wiltshire*, and *Wales*, as likewise in the Cities of *Gloucester* and *Bristol*, and the Castle and Town of *Berkley*, shall be guided by the Rule express'd in the latter Part of the precedent Article.

V. 'That in case it be pretended on either Side, That the *Cessation* is violated, no Act of Hostility is immediately to follow; but first the Party complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on the other Side, and to allow three Days, after Notice, for Satisfaction; and in Case Satisfaction be not given or accepted, then five Days Notice to be given before Hostility begin: And the like to be observed in the remoter Armies by the Commanders in Chief.

VI. 'That all other Forces in the Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, not before mentioned, shall remain in the same Quarters and Places, as they are at the Time of publishing this *Cessation*, otherwise than in Passage and Communication between their several Quarters, as is mentioned in the latter Part of the third Article: And that this *Cessation* shall not extend to restrain the setting forth, or employing, any Ships for the Defence of his Majesty's Dominions; provided that his Majesty be first acquainted with the Particulars, and that such Ships as shall be set forth be commanded by such Persons as his Majesty shall approve of.

Lastly, 'That, during the *Cessation*, none of his Majesty's Subjects be imprisoned, otherwise than according to the known Laws of the Land; and that there shall be no Plundering or Violence offered to any of his Subjects. And his Majesty is very willing, if there be any Scruples made concerning these Propositions and Circumstances of the *Cessation*, that the Committee for the *Treaty*, nevertheless, may immediately come hither, and so all Matters concerning the *Cessation* may be here settled by him.'

At

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

At the ſame Time came a Letter of Safe-Conduct for all the Parliament's Commiſſioners, except the Lord *Say*. His Majeſty's Reaſons for objecting to the laſt were, 'That his Lordſhip was excepted againſt, by Name, in his *Proclamation*, at *Oxford*, of the third of *November*, and by Writ to the Sheriff proclaimed then in that County; in which his Majeſty's Intention is declared to proceed againſt him as a Perſon guilty of High Treaſon; and ſo falling to be within the Caſe of Sir *John Evelyn*, who, upon the ſame Exception, was not admitted to attend his Majeſty, with the reſt of the Committee, at *Colebrooke*, in *November* laſt; yet his Majeſty did ſignify, that in caſe the Houſe ſhall think fit to ſend any other Perſon in the Place of the Lord *Say*, who is not included in the like Exception, his Majeſty hath commanded all his Officers, Soldiers, and other Subjects to ſuffer him as freely to paſs and repaſs, as if his Name had been particularly compriſed in the Safe-Conduct.'

His Majeſty grants a Safe-Conduct to all the Parliament's Commiſſioners except the Lord Say.

With theſe Objections to the Lord *Say* came alſo the following *Meſſage* relating to the *Ceſſation*:

'HIS Majeſty is content that his *Propoſition* 'concerning the Magazines, Forts, Ships, 'and Revenue, and the *Propoſition* of both Houſes 'for the diſbanding of the Armies, ſhall be firſt treat-'ed of, and agreed of before the proceeding to treat 'upon any of the other *Propoſitions*; and that, after-'ward, the ſecond of his Majeſty's, and the ſecond of 'theirs be treated on and agreed of, and ſo on in the 'ſame Order; and that, from the Beginning of the '*Treaty*, the Time may not exceed twenty Days; 'in which, he hopes, a full Peace and right Un-'derſtanding may be eſtabliſhed throughout the 'Kingdom.'

After the reading of theſe Matters in the Houſe of Lords, the Lord *Say* ſtood up and ſaid, That he never heard of this Proclamation before; what he did was in Obedience to the Commands of the Parliament,

liament, for the settling of the County of *Oxford* in Quietness and Security; and if he shall be proclaimed a Person guilty of High Treason, for doing his Duty to the Commands of Parliament, it will be a Case worthy their Lordships Consideration, as a Thing which much concerns the Privileges of Parliament: But, for his Part, rather than the *Treaty* and *Cessation* of Arms, for obtaining a happy Peace between the King and Kingdom, should be hindered, he desired the Lords to give him Leave to attend this House, and dispense with his going on the Service. But the Lords, conceiving this Precedent trenched on the essential Proceedings of Parliament, left it freely to the Lord *Say*, either to go or stay as he shall think proper; as in the like Case of Sir *John Evelyn* in the House of Commons.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

Both Houses agreed to appoint a Committee to consider of the King's last *Message* on the *Cessation*, and report back what they think fit to be done about it.

March 7. A Message came up from the Commons, with their Thoughts on the King's last *Articles* for a *Cessation*, That since the Parliament had, before, sent Committees to consult with the Lord-General about them, they think it fit that the same Committee may be sent again to acquaint him with it, and desire his Advice therein. The Lords *Fielding* and *Hunsdon* were sent to the General for that Purpose.

The King's Articles of Cessation sent to the Earl of Essex.

March 9. These Lords reported to the House the Effect of their Embassy to the Earl of *Essex*, That he had called a Council of War to his Assistance; and, upon due Consideration of the King's *Articles*, they offered some Inconveniences which might ensue by accepting the same, which were read *in hæc Verba:*

'THAT however any Cautions which his Excellency shall propound by way of Advice concerning the *Cessation*, as is now by his Maje-

His Objections to them.

'sty

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'ſty propounded in theſe Articles, may be ſubject 'to Miſinterpretations, as if he were diſaffected to 'Peace; nevertheleſs, in Satisfaction to the Deſire 'of both Houſes, his Excellency offereth unto their 'Conſideration theſe following Inconveniences:

'To the firſt Article theſe Difficulties are pro-'pounded:

1. 'That it cannot poſſibly be known or diſcern-'ed what Carriages of Arms, Ammunition, Bullion, 'and Victuals are intended for the Uſe of the Ar-'my, and which are not; whereby continual Con-'tentions are like to ariſe among the Guards of the 'reſpective Quarters, which will endanger the Vio-'lation of the *Ceſſation*, and the Breach of this '*Treaty*.

2. 'The Words in the laſt Clauſe being ambi-'guous, *The Generals of each Army*, ought to be 'made clearer by this Expreſſion, *The Generals of* '*both Armies, as well of his Majeſty's as the Par-*'*liament's Army*.

To the ſecond Article:

'It is ſcarcely diſcernible who is a Soldier, and who 'not; and then he who was a Soldier Yeſterday, 'may, To-day, be caſhier'd to qualify him for ano-'ther Deſign in either Army; and, as this Article 'lieth, 500 of his Majeſty's Army may be caſhier'd 'for the Purpoſe, and ſent into *London*, to be in 'the Head of the Malignant Party: Beſides, if they 'be Soldiers or not Soldiers, the unreſtrained Paſſage 'of all other Perſons muſt, of Neceſſity, infuſe In-'telligence and bad Impreſſures in the Minds of 'Men in each Army; and the Paſſage of Com-'modities, which muſt be attended by divers Per-'ſons, will open a way to the ſame Inconveniences; 'moreover, upon the free Paſſage of Commodities, 'will, of Neceſſity, follow the Importation of Mo-'ney into each Army; which is agreed to be re-'ſtrained by the firſt Article. Furthermore, in the 'Paſſage of Carriages, unſearch'd, by Water or 'Land, all Manner of warlike Proviſions and contra-'band Goods, may be pack'd up and carried into 'each Army, as ſoon as the Carriages, who pre-

'tend

'tend to go to another Place, be paſt the Guards 'of the reſpective Quarters: Neither can the Search 'of Goods and Perſons be made without great Diſ-'putes and Quarrels, whereby daily Breaches and 'Interruptions of the *Ceſſation* are to be expected.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'In conſideration of which Premiſes, it will be 'ſafer for the Subjects to reſtrain the Paſſage of 'Commodities for a ſmall Time; which, being 'but 20 Days at the moſt, cannot be of any great 'Prejudice.

'To the third Article:

'It is ſaid that the Clauſe of the Communica-'tion, betwixt the ſeveral Quarters reſpectively, ad-'mits of ſo great a Latitude, that thereby the Forces 'of *Cornwall* and *Newcaſtle* may be drawn toge-'ther without Violation of the *Ceſſation*.

'To the laſt Article:

'It is ſaid that the former Part of this Article, 'prohibiting to impriſon any Subject otherwiſe than 'by the known Laws of the Land, doth contradict 'the ſecond Article, which giveth Licence to appre-'hend and detain Soldiers that have no Safe-Conduct 'by Law of War.

'For the latter Part of this Article it is requiſite 'to explain it thus, *That no Violence ſhall be offered to 'any Subject, unleſs it be in caſe of Diſobedience to the 'Order of one or both Houſes of Parliament.*'

A Meſſage was ſent to the Houſe of Commons by Sir *Robert Rich* and Mr. *Page*, to communicate this Advice of the Lord-General to them, and to deſire that the ſelect Committees of both Houſes, formerly appointed to conſider of the King's *Anſwer* touching the *Articles* of the *Ceſſation of Arms*, may meet this Afternoon at Two o'Clock, and take this Paper, ſent from my Lord-General, into Conſideration; and prepare what they conceive fit to be done thereupon, and offer the ſame to the Conſideration of both Houſes.

But whilſt theſe Affairs, tending towards Peace, were in Agitation, both Sides were watchful to take

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

take Advantage of each other, before the *Cessation* took Place, the Spring being now advanced and the Season fit for Action. Accordingly

A Message was, this Day, brought from the Commons, desiring a present Conference, touching some Intelligence they had received from their Lord-General; which was agreed to.

The Commons receive Advice of Prince Rupert's intending to assault Bristol.

The Speaker reported, 'That, at this Conference, the House of Commons acquainted their Lordships with Letters received from Sir *Robert Cook*, to let them know that Prince *Rupert* is within four Miles of *Bristol*, and intends to assault that City: Upon this the Lord-General intends, To-morrow, to march out from *Windsor* with the whole Army; but desires there might be some Course taken to furnish and supply Money and Victuals; for the effecting hereof the House of Commons have made some *Votes*, wherein they desire their Lordships Concurrence.

The *Votes* were read as follows:

1. 'That this House doth approve of the Lord-General's Resolutions to march, upon Information that the King's Forces are in Motion; and that Thanks be given unto him for his Care of the Safety of the Kingdom.

2. 'That the Lord Mayor be desired, that a Common Council be called to meet To-morrow at Ten o'Clock; and that a Committee of both Houses may go thither; and that a Supply of Money, and other Assistance, may be propounded and desired for the important Service of the Army now to march.'

Both these *Votes* were agreed to by the Lords.

Votes of both Houses in Consequence thereof.

Next it was reported, 'That the House of Commons have received some Letters from the *North*, by which it seems there is some Difference amongst the Officers which command in Chief there; whereupon the House of Commons have passed some *Votes*, wherein they desire their Lordships Concurrence, *viz.*

1. 'That Letters be sent to the Lord-Lieutenants and Deputy-Lieutenants of the Counties of

of *Lincoln*, *Nottingham*, and *Derby*, to send what Forces they can, with all convenient Speed, to the Lord *Fairfax*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

2. 'That the Lord *Fairfax* shall be desired to go in Person, if he can, with the best Strength he hath, to the Aid of Captain *Hotham*, in the *East-Riding* of the County of *York*; if not, to send 1000 Foot at least, or more, if he can spare them, to oppose the Army under the Command of the Earl of *Newcastle*; and that the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom do prepare these Letters.'

The Lords agreed to both these *Votes* also.

March 10. The Lords were informed of a Report that some Ships, set out by the Parliament, had shot at the House where the Queen lodged, after she had landed at *Bridlington*, in *Yorkshire*, and had killed a Man very near her Majesty.

The Queen, on her Return to England, landing at Bridlington, the Parliament's Ships fire upon her Lodgings.

Lord *Clarendon* gives us the following Particulars of this Affair: 'About the Middle of *February* the Queen took Shipping from *Holland*, in a *States* Man of War, assigned by the Prince of *Orange*, with others for her Convoy, and arrived safely in *Bridlington* Bay, upon the Coast of *Yorkshire*; where she had the Patience to stay on Shipboard, at Anchor, the Space of two Days, till the Earl of *Newcastle* had Notice to draw such Part of his Forces that way, as might secure her Landing, and wait on her to *York*; which he no sooner did, (and he did it with all imaginable Expedition) but her Majesty came on Shoar; and, for the present, was pleased to refresh herself in a convenient House upon the very Key, where all Accommodations were made for her Reception; there being many Things of Moment to be unshipped before she could reasonably enter upon her Journey towards *York*.

'The second Day after the Queen's Landing, *Batten*, Vice-Admiral to the Earl of *Warwick*, (who had waited to intercept her Passage) with four of the King's Ships, arrived in *Bridlington* Road; and, finding that her Majesty was landed, and that she lodged

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

lodged upon the Key, bringing his Ships to the nearest Distance, being very early in the Morning, discharged above 100 Cannon (whereof many were laden with Cross-bar-shot) for the Space of two Hours upon the House where her Majesty was lodged; whereupon she was forced out of her Bed, some of the Shot making Way thro' her own Chamber, and to shelter herself under a Bank in the open Fields; which barbarous and treasonable Act, says his Lordship, was so much the more odious, in that the Parliament never so far took Notice of it as to disavow it.'

This last Circumstance is confirmed by the *Lords Journals*, in which we find, That though that House, upon Information of the above Report, *ordered*, That the Earl of *Warwick* be desired to examine the Truth of this Business, and certify it to their House, when their Lordships would take it into further Consideration; yet nothing more was done upon it: But we are told in the *Commons Journals*, That it being suspected the Ships which brought over the Queen, then lying before *Bridlington*, had some Design upon *Hull*, a Letter was ordered to be sent to the Earl of *Warwick*, to send some Ships from his Squadron, which might prevent any Mischief from that Quarter.—— Her Majesty shortly after removed to *York*, where she had been many Weeks expected, as appears by some Passages in the last Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, to the Speaker of the House of Commons.

Her Majesty arrives at York.

Both Houses were employed several Days in framing, a-new, their *Articles* of *Cessation*, on the Military Plan laid down by the Earl of *Essex* and his chief Officers, and many Alterations and Emendations were made in them.

March 14. The Commons, at a Conference this Day, acquainted the Lords with divers Letters they had received from *Bristol*, concerning a bloody Massacre, as it is term'd, intended to have been executed

ecuted in that City. The Letters were read, but are not entered; upon Consideration thereof, the Commons made the following *Votes:* An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

1. 'That a *Declaration* might pass from both Houses, to set forth this Conspiracy to the whole Kingdom.

2. 'That an *Ordinance* might pass for the seizing the Estates of all the Conspirators, to be employed for the Maintenance of the War; and that they may be proceeded against, by Direction of the Lord-General, according to the Law of Arms.

3. 'The next Lord's Day to be appointed for giving public Thanks in the City, and another Day throughout the whole Kingdom.'

The Lords agreed to these *Votes*, and a Committee of both Houses was appointed to draw up a *Declaration* of the Fact, to be printed and published. A Letter of Thanks was also *ordered* to be sent down to *Bristol*, to the Mayor, Aldermen, and Soldiery there, for their careful Service in this Business.

It was not untill this Day, (*March* 17) after many Messages and Conferences between the Houses, and some Stiffness shewn on both Sides, that the Articles for a *Cessation* were wholly finished and thoroughly agreed to by them. They were then ordered to be sent to the King by their Commissioners, with full Instructions how to act in this *Treaty*. These two Instruments are of too much Significancy in these Enquiries to be omitted. And, first, we shall give the *Articles* for a *Cessation:*

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, 'being still carried on with a vehement Desire of *Peace*, that so the Kingdom may speedily 'be freed from the Desolation and Destruction 'wherewith it is like to be overwhelmed if the 'War should continue, have, with as much Expedition as they could, considered of the Articles 'of *Cessation*, with those Alterations and Additions

The Parliament's Articles for a Cessation, as alter'd by Advice of the Earl of Essex.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'offered by his Majesty, unto which they are ready 'to agree in such Manner as is expressed in their 'ensuing Articles, *viz.*

I. 'That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition, 'Victual, Money, Bullion, and all other Com- 'modities, passing without a Safe-Conduct from 'the Generals of both Armies, as well of his Ma- 'jesty's as of the Armies raised by the Parliament, 'may be stayed and seized on, as if no such *Cessa-* 'tion were agreed on at all.

II. 'That all Manner of Persons, passing with- 'out such a Safe-Conduct as is mentioned in the 'Article next going before, shall be apprehended 'and detained, as if no such *Cessation* were agreed 'on at all.

III. 'That his Majesty's Forces in *Oxfordshire* 'shall advance no nearer to *Windsor* than *Wheatley*; 'and, in *Buckinghamshire*, no nearer to *Aylesbury* 'than *Brill*; and that, in *Berkshire*, the Forces 'respectively shall not advance nearer the one to 'the other than they shall be at the Day to be 'agreed on for the *Cessation* to begin: And that the 'Forces of the other Army, raised by the Parliament, 'shall advance no nearer to *Oxford* than *Henley*, 'and those in *Buckinghamshire* no nearer to *Oxford* 'than *Aylesbury*; and that the Forces of neither 'Army shall advance their Quarters nearer to each 'other than they shall be upon the Day agreed on 'for the *Cessation* to begin.

IV. 'That the Forces of either Army in *Glou-* 'cestershire, *Wilts*, and *Wales*, as likewise in the 'Cities of *Gloucester* and *Bristol*, and the Castle and 'Town of *Berkley*, shall be guided by the Rule 'expressed in the latter Part of the preceding Ar- 'ticle.

V. 'That in case it be pretended on either Side, 'That the *Cessation* is violated, no Act of Hostility 'is immediately to follow; but, first, the Party 'complaining is to acquaint the Lord General on 'the other Side, and to allow three Days after 'Notice given for Satisfaction; and, in case Satis-

'faction

'faction be not given or accepted, then five Days 'Notice to be given before Hostilities begin; and 'the like to be observed in the remoter Armies by 'the Commanders in Chief.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

VI. 'That all other Forces in the Kingdom of '*England* and Dominion of *Wales*, not before-'mentioned, shall remain in the same Quarters and 'Places as they are at the Time of the publish-'ing of this *Cessation*, and under the same Condi-'tions as are mentioned in the Articles before: And 'that this *Cessation* shall not extend to restrain the 'setting forth, or employing of, any Ships for the 'Defence of his Majesty's Dominions.

VII. 'That as soon as his Majesty shall be plea-'sed to disband the Armies, which both Houses 'earnestly desire may be speedily effected, and to 'disarm the Papists according to Law; the Subjects 'may then enjoy the Benefit of Peace in the Li-'berty of their Persons, Goods, and Freedom of 'Trade; in the mean time, the Generals and Com-'manders of the Armies of both Sides shall be en-'joined to keep the Soldiers from plundering; which 'the two Houses of Parliament have ever disliked 'and forbidden.

'And for the speedy settling of this so much de-'sired *Peace*, they have thought good to send their 'Committees with Instructions, That, if his Ma-'jesty be pleased to consent to a *Cessation*, so limited 'and qualified, they may forthwith proceed to 'treat upon the *Propositions*; and because the Time 'is so far elapsed in these Preparations, they desire 'the *Cessation* may begin the 25th of this Instant '*March*, or sooner if it may be; and, in the mean 'time, Notice to be given to all the Forces in the 'several and remote Parts; and the Commanders, 'Officers, and Soldiers are enjoined to observe this '*Cessation* accordingly; to which they hope and 'pray that God will give such a Blessing, that 'thereupon, Peace, Safety, and Happiness may be 'produced, and confirmed to his Majesty and all his 'People.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

INSTRUCTIONS, *agreed on by the* LORDS *and* COMMONS *in Parliament, for* Algernoon *Earl of* Northumberland, William *Lord Viſcount* Say *and* Sele, William Pierpoint, *Eſq*; *Sir* William Armyn, *Bart. Sir* John Holland, *Bart. and* Bulſtrode Whitlocke, *Eſq*; *Committees appointed to attend his Majeſty upon the* Propoſitions *made by his Majeſty to the Parliament, and likewiſe upon the other* Propoſitions *humbly preſented from them to his Majeſty.*

Their Inſtructions to the Committee appointed to go to Oxford.

I. 'YOU ſhall preſent to his Majeſty the Articles agreed on for the *Ceſſation of Arms*, 'humbly deſiring his Majeſty to ratify and confirm 'the ſame under the Great Seal; which being obtained, you are to ſend it up to the Parliament 'with all poſſible Speed: And ſhall likewiſe beſeech the King to diſpatch away Meſſengers to 'the Generals, Commanders, and Soldiers of all 'his Armies and Forces, with a ſtrict Command 'and Injunction, that they obſerve thoſe Articles 'of *Ceſſation*, according as they are agreed upon; 'as the two Houſes likewiſe intend to give the like 'Direction to the Lord-General of the Armies 'raiſed for their Defence.

II. 'After his Majeſty hath declared and ratified the *Ceſſation*, you ſhall then proceed to the 'Treaty, beginning with the *firſt Propoſition* on his 'Majeſty's Behalf, concerning his Majeſty's own 'Revenue, his Magazines, Towns, Forts, and 'Ships, and thereunto make this *Anſwer:*

'You ſhall declare, That the two Houſes of 'Parliament have not made Uſe of his Majeſty's 'own Revenue, but in a very ſmall Proportion; 'which, for a good Part, hath been employed in 'the Maintenance of his Majeſty's Children, according to the Allowance eſtabliſhed by himſelf; 'and they will ſatisfy what ſhall remain due to his 'Majeſty of thoſe Sums received out of his Majeſty's own Revenues, and ſhall leave the ſame to 'his Majeſty for the Time to come. And you 'like-

'likewise shall propound to his Majesty, That he 'will restore what hath been taken for his Use, 'upon any of the Bills assigned to other Purposes 'by several Acts of Parliament, or out of the Pro-'vision made for the War of *Ireland:*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'That they will remove the Garrisons out of 'all Towns and Forts in their Hands, wherein 'there were no Garrisons before these Troubles, 'and slight all Fortifications made since that 'Time; which Towns and Forts, it is to be a-'greed on both Parts, shall continue in the same 'Condition they were in before; and that those 'Garrisons shall not be renewed, nor the Fortifi-'cations repaired, without Consent of his Ma-'jesty, and both Houses of Parliament:

'That for those Towns and Forts which are 'within the Jurisdiction of the *Cinque-Ports*, they 'shall be delivered up into the Hands of such a 'Noble Person as his Majesty shall appoint to be 'Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, being such a one 'as they shall confide in:

'That the Town of *Portsmouth* shall be redu-'ced to the Number of the Garrison, as was at 'the Time when the Lords and Commons un-'dertook the Custody thereof: And such other 'Forts, Castles, and Towns as were formerly 'kept by Garrisons, as have been taken by them 'into their Care and Custody since the Beginning 'of these Troubles, shall be reduced to such Pro-'portion of Garrison as they had in the Year 1636, 'and shall be so continued: And that all the said 'Towns, Forts, and Castles shall be delivered up 'into the Hands of such Persons of Quality and 'Trust, to be likewise nominated by his Majesty, 'as the two Houses shall confide in:

'That the Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and 'all Governors and Commanders of Towns, Ca-'stles, and Forts, shall keep the same Towns, 'Castles, and Forts respectively, for the Service 'of his Majesty and the Safety of the Kingdom; 'and that they shall not admit into any of them 'any foreign Forces raised without his Majesty's

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'thority and Consent of the two Houses of Parliament; and they shall use their uttermost Endeavours to suppress all Forces whatsoever, raised 'without such Authority and Consent; and they 'shall seize all Arms and Ammunition provided 'for any such Forces:

'That the Ships shall be delivered into the 'Charge of such a Noble Person as his Majesty shall 'nominate to be Lord High Admiral of *England*, 'and the two Houses of Parliament confide in; 'who shall receive the same Office by Letters Pa'tent *quamdiu bene se gesserit*; and shall have 'Power to nominate and appoint all subordinate 'Commanders and Officers, and have all other 'Powers appertaining to the Office of High Admi'ral; which Ships he shall employ for the De'fence of the Kingdom against all foreign Forces 'whatsoever, and for the Safeguard of Merchants, 'securing of Trade, the guarding of *Ireland*, and 'the intercepting of all Supplies to be carried to 'the Rebels; and shall use his uttermost Endea'vour to suppress all Forces which shall be raised 'by any Person without his Majesty's Authority, 'and Consent of the Lords and Commons in Par'liament; and shall seize all Arms and Ammu'nition provided for Supply of any such Forces: 'That all the Arms and Ammunition, taken out 'of his Majesty's Magazines, which shall remain 'in their Hands, shall be delivered into his Stores; 'and whatsoever shall be wanting, they will, in 'convenient Time, supply in Kind, according to 'the Proportions which they have received; and 'that the Persons, to whose Charge those public 'Magazines shall be committed, being nominated 'by his Majesty, shall be such as the Lords and 'Commons shall confide in. And you shall pro'pound to his Majesty, That he will restore all 'such Arms and Ammunition as have been taken 'for his Use, from the several Counties, Cities, 'and Towns.

III. 'To the *Proposition* made by the two 'Houses, concerning the Disbanding of the Ar'mies,

'mies, you ſhall humbly deſire his Majeſty's 'ſpeedy and poſitive Anſwer; unto which if he 'ſhall be pleaſed to give his Aſſent, you ſhall then 'beſeech his Majeſty, in the Name of both Houſes, 'that a near Day may be agreed upon for the Diſ-'banding all the Forces in the remote Parts of '*Yorkſhire*, and the other *Northern* Counties; as 'alſo in *Lancaſhire*, *Cheſhire*, and in the Domi-'nion of *Wales*, and in *Cornwal* and *Devonſhire*; 'and they being fully diſbanded, another Day 'may be agreed on for the diſbanding of all 'Forces in *Lincolnſhire*, *Nottinghamſhire*, *Leice-'ſterſhire*, and all other Places except at *Oxford* 'and the Quarters thereunto belonging, and *Wind-'ſor* and the Quarters thereunto belonging; and 'that, laſt of all, a ſpeedy Day be appointed for 'the Diſbanding thoſe two Armies at *Oxford* and '*Windſor*, and all the Forces Members of either 'of them:

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'That ſome Officers of both Armies may ſpee-'dily meet to agree of the Manner of the Diſband-'ing; and that fit Perſons may be appointed by 'his Majeſty and the Parliament, who may re-'pair to the ſeveral Armies, and ſee the Diſband-'ing put in ſpeedy Execution accordingly:

'That his Majeſty do likewiſe remove the Gar-'riſons out of *Newcaſtle*, and all other Towns, 'Caſtles, and Forts, where any Garriſons have 'been placed by him ſince theſe Troubles; and 'that the Fortifications be likewiſe ſlighted, and 'the Towns and Forts left in ſuch State and Con-'dition as they were in the Year 1636: And

'That all other Towns, Forts, and Caſtles, 'where there have been formerly Garriſons before 'theſe Troubles, be committed to the Charge of 'ſuch Perſons, to be nominated by his Majeſty, 'as the Parliament ſhall confide in, and under 'ſuch Inſtructions as are formerly mentioned.

IV. 'That if his Majeſty ſhall be pleaſed to aſ-'ſent to theſe *Propoſitions*, concerning the Towns, 'Forts, Caſtles, Magazines, and Ships, that then

'his

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'his Majesty be humbly intreated to name Persons of Quality to receive the Charge of the several Offices and Forts, Castles and Towns, to be forthwith certified to the two Houses of Parliament, that thereupon they may express their Confidence in those Persons, or humbly beseech his Majesty to name others; none of which Persons shall be removed during three Years next ensuing, without just Cause, to be approved by Parliament; and if any be so removed, or shall die within the said Space, the Person to be put into the same Office shall be such as both Houses shall confide in:

'That all Generals and Commanders in any of the Armies, on either Side, as likewise the Lord Admiral of *England*, the Lord Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, all Commanders of any Ships, and Commanders of any Town, Castle, or Fort, shall take an Oath to observe these Articles aforementioned; and to use their uttermost Power to preserve the true Reformed Protestant Religion, and the Peace of the Kingdom, against all foreign Force, and all other Forces raised without his Majesty's Authority and Consent of the two Houses of Parliament.

V. 'You shall move his Majesty, That for the better Dispatch of the *Treaty*, and the free Intercourse of Instructions and Advertisements betwixt the two Houses of Parliament and the Committee, that there may be a free Pass of Messengers to and from the Parliament and the Committees, without Search or Interruption; and his Majesty's Safe-Conduct to be obtained to that Effect, to such Persons as are, or shall be, appointed for that Service, *viz.* Mr. *John Rushworth*, Mr. *Michael Welden*, Mr. *John Corbet* of *Gray's Inn*, and Mr. *James Standish*.'

Nothing else intervening worth our Notice, we shall go on with an Account of the Intelligence sent from the Commissioners now at *Oxford*, to Parlia-

Parliament. And, this Day, *March* 23, the Lords read a Letter from the Earl of *Northumberland* in these Words: An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

To the Right Honourable the Earl of *Manchester*, Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*. Letters from that Committee.

My Lord,

AS soon as we came hither, between four and five o'Clock in the Afternoon, we sent to know his Majesty's Pleasure when we should wait on him, who commanded us presently to attend him, which we did in the Garden at Christ-Church; *where I read the Articles for the* Cessation, *and we humbly presented them to the King, who read the Title of them himself, and said,* There was a Difference in them from the *Articles* which he sent to both Houses; *and told us,* before he should be many Hours older, he would give his *Answer* to them; *whereof I shall send your Lordships a speedy and faithful Account, as soon as we shall receive it.*

Your Lordship's

Oxford, March 19, 1642.

Most humble Servant

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.

Besides the foregoing, there was another Letter from this Earl, of a later Date, read the same Day, directed as before, and was to this Effect:

My Lord,

THIS Afternoon my Lord Falkland *and Mr. Secretary* Nicholas *came to us, with a* Message *from his Majesty, to know* Whether, in case he would not agree to the Articles of *Cessation, in Terminis*, that we had any Commission to proceed in the *Treaty* upon the *Propositions? I answered,* We had not.

The Council have met often, and sat long, since the Delivery of the Articles of Cessation. *Mr.* May

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March. May *came to us from his Majesty, and said he was sent with a* Message *to both Houses of Parliament; the Contents he was commanded to let us know, which were*, That his Majesty desired free Trade with the Limitations he formerly sent; and that there might be a *Cessation* by Sea as well as by Land. That, because there might be a Misunderstanding of Expressions, we might have Power to treat on the Articles of *Cessation*; if not, That the *Treaty*, upon the *Propositions*, might go on without a *Cessation*; and that all Prisoners taken in War, except Officers, might be set at Liberty. *This is the Information he gave us; for the present I have no further Account to give to your Lordship, but that I am,*

Your Lordship's

Oxford, March 22, 1642.

Humble Servant,

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.

These Letters being produced at a Conference, they were found to correspond, *verbatim*, with others the Commons had received from their Commissioners at *Oxford*. At this Conference, also, a Letter was read, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, from the Lord *Falkland*, in which was inclosed a *Message* from the King, to both Houses, concerning the *Cessation*, dated at *Oxford*, *March* 22, in these Words:

CHARLES *R.*

The King's Exceptions to the Parliament's last Articles of Cessation.

'HIS Majesty hath immediately, upon their Arrival, admitted the Committee sent to him from both Houses of Parliament, (as the Messengers of Peace) to his Royal Presence, and receiv'd the Articles of *Cessation* brought by them; which are, in Effect, the same his Majesty formerly excepted to, though their Expression in the Preface to these Articles, of their Readiness to agree to those Alterations and Additions offered by

'by his Majesty, in such Manner as is expressed, 'made him expect to have found, at least, some of 'the real Alterations and Additions made by him 'admitted; which he doth not discover.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

I. 'His Majesty desired, *That Provision might 'be made, and Licence given to his good Subjects, 'for their Freedom of Trade, Traffick, and Com-'merce*, (tho', in Matters which concerned him-'self more immediately, as in Arms, Ammunition, 'Money, Bullion, and Victuals for the Use of 'his Army, and the Passage of all Officers and 'Soldiers of his Army, he is contented the Re-'straint should be in such Manner as was proposed) 'of which his Majesty is so tender, that as he hath 'provided for the same by his gracious *Proclama-'tions*, so he doth daily release and discharge such 'Merchandize and Commodities, as are, contrary 'to those *Proclamations*, stayed by any of his Ma-'jesty's Forces.

'To this Freedom and Liberty of his good Sub-'jects, there is not the least Admission given by 'these Articles; so that they have not any Ease 'or Benefit by this *Cessation*; which his Majesty 'desires both Houses to consider of; and whether, 'if his Majesty should take the same Course to stop 'and interrupt the Trade of the Kingdom, as the 'other Army doth, a general Loss and Calamity 'would not seize upon his good Subjects?

II. 'His Majesty, to the end that a full *Cessa-'tion* might be as well at Sea as at Land, and he 'might be secured that the Ships, proposed to be 'set forth for the Defence of his Majesty's Do-'minions, should be employed only to that End 'and Purpose, desired, *That they might be put un-'der the Command of Persons to be approved of by 'his Majesty*; which is not consented to by these 'Articles; but their former, to which his Maje-'sty excepted, strictly and entirely insisted on; by 'which (besides that Part of Hostility remains) 'the Conveying of any Number of Forces from 'one Part to any other, by that Means, remains 'free to them.

'III.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642 March.

III. 'For the Prevention of any Inconveniences 'which might arise upon real Differences, or Mi- 'stakes upon Latitude of Expression; (as if his Ma- 'jesty should now consent to these Articles propo- 'sed, in the Terms proposed, he must confess 'the Army, of which he complains, to be raised by 'the Parliament; and either himself to be no Part 'of the Parliament, or himself to have raised that 'Army) and for Prevention of that Delay which 'he foresaw could not otherwise be avoided, if, 'upon every Difference, the Question must be re- 'mitted to *London*, his Majesty desired, *That the* '*Committee*, for whom he then sent a Safe-Conduct, '*might have Liberty to debate any such Difference* '*and Expressions, and reconcile the same, that all pos-* '*sible Expedition might be used to the main* Treaty.

'In this Point of so high Concernment, no 'Power is given in these Articles; and the Com- 'mittee confessed to his Majesty they have no 'Power given, but are strictly and precisely bound 'to the very Words of the Articles now sent; and 'that, before these are consented to by us, they 'cannot enter into any *Treaty* concerning the o- 'ther *Propositions*.

IV. 'His Majesty desired, *That, during the* Ces- 'sation, *none of his good Subjects might be imprison-* '*ed, otherwise than according to the known Laws* '*of the Land*.

'This is in no Degree consented to; but the 'Privilege and Liberty, to which they were born, 'reserved from them till the disbanding of both 'Armies, though they are no Part of either Ar- 'my; and so have no Benefit by this *Cessation*.

V. 'His Majesty desired, *That, during this* Ces- 'sation, *there should be no Plundering or Violence* '*offered to any of his Subjects*.

'In the Answer to which, his Desire against 'Violence is not at all taken Notice of, nor is his 'Desire again Plundering anywise satisfied; his 'Majesty, not only intending by it the robbing of 'the Subject by the Unruliness of the uncom- 'manded Soldier (which their Clause of requiring

'*the*

'*the Generals and Officers to keep them from it*, 'seems to imply; and the Assertion, *That the two* '*Houses of Parliament had ever disliked and for-* '*bidden it*, declares plainly to be their only 'Meaning) but particularly the Violence and Plun- 'derings used to his Subjects, by forcibly taking 'away their Goods for not submitting to Impoſi- 'tions and Taxes required from them by *Orders* 'or *Ordinances* of one or both Houses of Parlia- 'ment, which are contrary to the known Laws 'of the Land.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

VI 'Besides, that there is no Consent given to 'those Alterations and Additions offered by his 'Majesty, whatsoever is pretended; for where an 'absolute Consent may be supposed, because the 'very Words of his Majesty's Article are wholly 'preserved, yet, by reason of the Relation to some- 'what going before that is varied by them, the Sense 'of those Words is wholly varied too; as in the '*fourth Article*, where the Part of the *third Article*, 'to which that did refer, is wholly left out: So 'that, upon the Matter, all the *Propositions* made 'by his Majesty, which did not in Terms agree 'with those presented to him, are utterly rejected.

'For these Reasons, and that this Entrance to- 'wards a blessed *Peace* and *Accommodation*, which 'hath already filled the Hearts of the Kingdom 'with Joy and Hope, may be improved to the 'wished End, his Majesty desires, That the Com- 'mittee now sent may speedily have Liberty to 'treat, debate, and agree upon the Articles of '*Cessation*; in which they and all the World shall 'find, that his Majesty is less solicitous for his 'own Dignity and Greatness, than for his Sub- 'jects Ease and Liberty: And he doubts not, up- 'on such a Debate, all Differences concerning the '*Cessation* will be easily and speedily agreed upon; 'and the Benefit of a *Cessation* be continued and 'confirmed to his People by a speedy disbanding 'of both Armies, and a sudden and firm *Peace*, 'which his Majesty above all Things desires.

'If

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'If this so reasonable, equal, and just Desire 'of his Majesty shall not be yielded unto, but 'the same Articles still insisted upon: Though his 'Majesty, next to *Peace*, desires a *Cessation*; yet 'that the not Agreeing upon the one, may not 'destroy the Hopes of, nor so much as delay, the 'other, he is willing however to treat (even with-'out a *Cessation*, if that be not granted) upon the '*Propositions* themselves, in that Order as is agreed 'upon, and desires the Committee here may be 'enabled to that Effect; in which *Treaty* he shall 'give all his Subjects that Satisfaction, That if 'any Security to enjoy all the Rights, Privileges, 'and Liberties due to them by the Law; or that 'Happiness in Church and State, which the best 'Times have seen; with such farther Acts of Grace 'as may agree with his Honour, Justice, and Duty 'to his Crown, and as may not render him less 'able to protect his Subjects, according to his Oath, 'will satisfy them, he is confident, in the Mercy 'of God, that no more precious Blood of this 'Nation will be thus miserably spent.'

Resolutions of both Houses at a Conference thereupon.

March 24. Another Conference was held about this Affair; the Effect of which was, That the House of Commons communicated to the Lords some *Resolutions*, which they had made concerning the King's last *Message*; wherein there was an Offer to treat upon the *Propositions*, in case the *Cessation* was not agreed on, to which they desired their Lordships Concurrence. The *Resolutions* were as follows:

1. 'That the Committee at *Oxford* shall have Power to treat and debate with his Majesty upon the two first *Propositions*, according to their *Instructions*, for four Days after the Day of the Receipt of this *Message*, notwithstanding that the *Cessation* be not yet agreed upon.

2. 'That the Committee, formerly appointed to prepare the Articles of *Cessation* and *Instructions* for the Committee at *Oxford*, shall consider of an *Answer*,

Answer to be made to his Majesty's *Message* this Day received; and likewise prepare Reasons to be sent to the Committee, for them to press the Treaty, and debate the former Articles of *Cessation*; and to shew his Majesty the Grounds why the Houses cannot depart from those former Articles.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

For the present, they thought proper to send the following *Message* to his Majesty; and the *Additional Instructions* to their Commissioners. And first the *Message*.

May it please your Majesty,

'WE your loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, having received a *Message* from your Majesty; in which you are pleased to express yourself not to be satisfied with the Articles of *Cessation*, presented unto you by our Committee now attending you at *Oxford*, and yet a Signification of your Majesty's Willingness to treat upon the *Propositions* themselves, even without a *Cessation*; do, with all Humbleness, give our Consent that our Committee shall have Power to treat and debate with your Majesty upon the two first *Propositions* according to their *Instructions*, for four Days after the Day of the Receipt of this *Message*, notwithstanding that the *Cessation* be not yet agreed upon; that, as much as in us lies, there may be no Delay in the Proceedings, for the Obtaining of a blessed Peace, and the Healing up the miserable Breaches of this distracted Kingdom; and do purpose to represent, very speedily, unto your Majesty those just Reasons and Grounds, upon which we have found it necessary to desire of your Majesty a *Cessation*, so qualified as that is; whereby we hope you will receive such Satisfaction, as that you will be pleased to assent unto it; and being obtained, we assure ourselves it will be most effectual to the Safety of the Kingdom; and that Peace, which, with so much Zeal

Their Message to the King in consequence thereof.

'and

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'and loyal Affection to your Royal Person, and 'in a deep Sense of the bleeding Condition of this 'poor Kingdom, we humbly beg of your Maje-'sty's Justice and Goodness.'

The *Additional Instructions* were as follows:

My Lord * and Gentlemen,

And Additional Instructions to their Committee.

WHereas, by your former Instructions, *you are tied up to a Circumstance of Time, and are not to proceed unto the* Treaty *upon the* Propositions, *untill the* Cessation *of Arms be first agreed upon: You are now authorized and required, as you may perceive by the* Votes *of both Houses which you shall herewith receive, to treat and debate with his Majesty upon the two* first Propositions, *according to those* Instructions, *for four Days after the Day of the Receipt hereof, notwithstanding that the* Cessation *be not agreed upon.*

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

March 24, 1642.

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

Thus ends the Legal Year 1642, with a distant Prospect of Peace; but, however pleasing the Idea of it was to some, and we believe much the greater Part of the Kingdom, yet there were not wanting those, who, for their own private Ends, spared no Pains to change it into much more Blood and Slaughter, than had, hitherto, happened in these distracted Times. We may imagine that such Members of the Commons, concerned in making an *Order* of that House, on the 24th of this Month, to forbid the *Tower* Guns to be fired on the 27th, the Anniversary of the King's Accession, under Pretence of the Expence of Powder, and of hindering

* The Reason of this Address being *My Lord*, and not *My Lords*, was because the Lord *Say* did not go; and the House, left they should be thought to countenance the King's Objection, would not appoint another in his stead.

dering the great Concourſe of People, were of the latter Sort: And indeed this *Order* ſeems to have been clandeſtinely obtained; for, the next Day, *March* 25, a Motion being made and the Queſtion put, Whether Liberty ſhould be given to ſpeak againſt the ſaid *Order?* The Houſe divided, and it was carried in the Affirmative, 61 againſt 56. What the Speeches were, *pro* and *con*, on this Occaſion, we know not; but, ſoon after, another Queſtion was put, Whether the *Order* made, concerning the firing and diſcharging the Guns of the *Tower* and *Tower-Hill*, ſhould be revoked? This, alſo, paſſed affirmatively by a greater Majority, 75 againſt 57: Whereby the Honour of the Houſe was ſaved againſt a very great Inſtance of ill Manners, or rather Diſloyalty, in thoſe who had procured the above-mentioned *Order*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Remarkable Votes as to obſerving the Anniverſary of the King's Acceſſion,

The Tellers on this remarkable Occaſion were, on the firſt Queſtion, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Peter Wentworth*, with the Yeas; Sir *Robert Harley* and Sir *Nevile Poole*, with the Noes. And, upon the ſecond Queſtion, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Evelyn*, with the Yeas; Sir *Walter Erle* and Mr. *Strode*, with the Noes.

At the Opening of the Year 1643, the Eyes of a bleeding and miſerable Nation were all turned to the *Treaty* at *Oxford*; but to very little Purpoſe, for, ſo far from any real Advantage being gain'd by it, Matters were left in the ſame, or a worſe, Situation than before.

And Diviſions relating to the Treaty at Oxford.

To ſhew how little Deſire many of the Houſe of Commons had to bring this *Treaty* to a peaceable Concluſion, we ſhall mention the following Inſtances.——When the King deſired the Commiſſioners to get the Time, preſcribed for the *Treaty*, enlarged, which was voted in the Lower Houſe on the firſt of *April*, it was carried for the Enlargement by the ſmall Majority of 62 againſt 56. And it being *reſolved*, on that *Vote*, to give further Time to *Friday* the ſeventh of *April*, for the *Treaty*, the Queſtion was again put, Whether that

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Day was included in this Term? and it passed in the Affirmative by yet a smaller Majority, 57 against 54. Two Days after, *April* 3, another Question was started, Whether, if the Commissioners received no positive Answer from the King, to the two first *Propositions*, by *Friday* Night, they should come away on *Saturday*? The House again divided, when 54 were for the Question, and 41 against it. But this last *Order* was, soon after, revoked, and the Time enlarged to the *Saturday* following. So that it is plain, near one Half of the House, then present, were for knocking the *Treaty* down at once; and, 'tis too probable, were really against any *Treaty* at all. It shews also to what a low Ebb the House of Commons was then reduced, that, even at this critical Conjuncture, scarcely one fifth Part of the Members were present: The Reasons for which, being set forth in the Beginning of this Volume, we pass over without further Remark.

We have, already, given the Initial Forms for the constituting this *Treaty:* What followed, as it takes up many Pages in the *Journals*, and is exactly printed in *Rushworth*'s and *Husband*'s *Collections*, and in the Pamphlets published, both by the King and Parliament, at that Time, we pass over; and shall content ourselves with the Account of this unsuccessful Negotiation, as drawn up by those two Cotemporary Opposites, the Earl of *Clarendon* and Mr. *Whitlocke*; the former of whom was, at this Time, attending the King's Service at *Oxford*; and the other employed, as himself tells us, by his Brother-Commissioners in drawing up all their Papers to the King, which were afterwards transcrib'd by their Secretaries.——And, first, Lord *Clarendon*.

Lord Clarendon's Account of what passed between the King and the Commissioners there.

'WHEN the *Treaty* was first consented to by the two Houses, they ordered that it should be upon the *first Proposition* made by his Majesty, and the *first Proposition* made by themselves; and that those should be first concluded on, before they proceeded to treat upon any of the other

ther *Propositions:* So that the Committee, in the first Place, applied themselves to his Majesty, upon his own *first Proposition*, which was, *That his own Revenue, Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships, which had been taken or kept from him by Force, should be forthwith restored to him.* To which the Committee answered, 'That the two Houses had 'made use of his Majesty's own Revenue but in a 'very small Proportion, which in a good Part had 'been employed in the Maintenance of his Children, according to the Allowance established by 'himself: And the Houses would satisfy what 'should remain due to his Majesty of those Sums 'which they had received; and would leave the 'same to him for the Time to come. And they 'desired likewise, that his Majesty would restore 'what had been taken for his Use upon any of the 'Bills, assigned to other Purposes by several Acts 'of Parliament, or out of the Provision made for 'the War of *Ireland:* That all the Arms and 'Ammunition, taken out of his Magazines, should 'be delivered into his Stores, and whatsoever should 'be wanting they would supply in Kind, according to the Proportions they had received; but 'they proposed the Persons, to whose Charge those 'public Magazines should be committed, being 'nominated by his Majesty, might be such as the 'two Houses of Parliament might confide in; and 'that his Majesty would restore all such Arms and 'Ammunition, as had been taken for his Use, from 'the several Counties, Cities, and Towns.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643 April.

'That the two Houses would remove the Garrisons out of all Towns and Forts in their Hands, 'wherein there were no Garrisons before these 'Troubles, and slight all Fortifications made since 'that Time, and those Towns and Forts to continue in the same Condition they were in before; 'and that those Garrisons should not be renewed, 'or the Fortifications repaired, without Consent 'of his Majesty, and both Houses of Parliament: 'That the Towns and Forts, which were within 'the Jurisdiction of the *Cinque-Ports*, should be

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'delivered into the Hands of ſuch a Noble Perſon 'as the King ſhould appoint to be Warden of the '*Cinque-Ports*, being ſuch as they ſhould 'confide in: That *Portſmouth* ſhould be reduced 'to the Number of the Garriſon, as was at that 'Time when the Lords and Commons undertook 'the Cuſtody of it; and that all other Forts, 'Caſtles, and Towns, in which Garriſons had 'been kept, and had been, ſince the Beginning of 'theſe Troubles, taken into their Care and Cuſto-'dy, ſhould be reduced to the ſame Eſtabliſhment 'they had in the Year 1636, and ſhould be ſo con-'tinued; and that all thoſe Towns, Forts, and 'Caſtles ſhould be delivered up into the Hands of 'ſuch Perſons of Quality and Truſt, to be likewiſe 'nominated by his Majeſty, as the two Houſes 'ſhould confide in: That the Warden of the *Cinque-'Ports*, and all Governors and Commanders of 'Towns, Caſtles, and Forts, ſhould keep the ſame 'Towns, Caſtles, and Forts, reſpectively, for the 'Service of his Majeſty, and the Safety of the 'Kingdom; and that they ſhould not admit into 'them any foreign Forces, or any other Forces 'raiſed without his Majeſty's Authority, and Con-'ſent of the two Houſes of Parliament; and they 'ſhould uſe their utmoſt Endeavour to ſuppreſs all 'Forces whatſoever raiſed without ſuch Authority 'and Conſent; and they ſhould ſeize all Arms and 'Ammunition provided for any ſuch Forces.

'They likewiſe propoſed to the King, that he 'would remove the Garriſon out of *Newcaſtle*, 'and all other Towns, Caſtles, and Forts where 'any Garriſons had been placed by him ſince theſe 'Troubles; and that the Fortifications might be 'likewiſe ſlighted, and the Towns and Forts left 'in ſuch State as they were in the Year 1636; 'and that all other Towns and Caſtles in his 'Hands, wherein there had been formerly Garri-'riſons, might be committed to ſuch Perſons, no-'minated by him, as the Houſes ſhould conſide 'in, and under ſuch Inſtructions as were formerly 'mentioned; and that the new Garriſons ſhould

'not

'not be renewed, or the Fortifications repaired, 'without the Consent of the King and both Houses 'of Parliament: That the Ships should be deli- 'vered into the Charge of such a Noble Person as 'the King should nominate to be Lord High-Ad- 'miral of *England*, and the two Houses confide 'in; who should receive that Office by Letters 'Patent, *quamdiu se bene gesserit*, and should have 'Power to nominate and appoint all subordinate 'Commanders and Officers, and have all other 'Powers appertaining to the Office of High-Ad- 'miral; which Ships he should employ for the 'Defence of the Kingdom, against all foreign 'Forces whatsoever, and for the Safeguard of 'Merchants, securing of Trade, and the guard- 'ing of *Ireland*, and the intercepting of all Sup- 'plies to be carried to the Rebels; and should use 'his utmost Endeavours to suppress all Forces 'which should be raised by any Person without his 'Majesty's Authority, and Consent of the Lords 'and Commons in Parliament; and should seize 'all Arms and Ammunition provided for Supply 'of any such Forces.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'To this Answer, by which they required, at least, to go whole Sharers with him in his Sovereignty, the King replied, 'That he knew not 'what Proportion of his Revenue had been made 'Use of by his two Houses, but he had Reason to 'believe, if much of it had not been used, very 'much remained still in their Hands; his whole 'Revenue being so stopped and seized on, by the '*Orders* of one or both Houses, even to the taking 'of his Money out of his *Exchequer* and *Mint*, 'and Bonds forced from his Cofferer's Clerk, for 'the Provisions of his Houshold, that very little 'had come to his Use for his own Support; but 'he would be well contented to allow whatsoever 'had been employed in the Maintenance of his 'Children, and to receive the Arrears due to him- 'self, and to be sure of his own for the future. 'He was likewise willing to restore all Monies ta- 'ken for his Use, by any Authority from him, up-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'on any Bills assigned to other Purposes, being 'assur'd he had receiv'd very little, or nothing, that 'Way: And he expected, likewise, that Satisfac- 'tion should be made by them for all those several 'vast Sums received and diverted to other Pur- 'poses, by *Orders* of one or both Houses, which 'ought to have been paid, by the Act of Pacifi- 'cation, to his Subjects of *Scotland*, or employed 'for the Discharge of the Debts of the Kingdom; 'or, by other Acts of Parliament, for the Re- 'lief of his poor Protestant Subjects in *Ireland*.

'For what concerned his Magazines, he was 'content that all the Arms and Ammunition, 'taken out of his Magazines, which did re- 'main in the Hands of both Houses, or of Persons 'employed by them, should be, as soon as the '*Treaty* was concluded, delivered into the *Tower* 'of *London*; and that whatsoever should be want- 'ing of the Proportions taken by them, should be 'supplied by them, with all convenient Speed, in 'Kind; which, he said, should be committed to, 'and continued in, the Custody of the sworn Offi- 'cers, to whose Places the same belong'd: And 'if any of those Officers had already forfeited, or 'hereafter should forfeit, that Trust, by any Mis- 'demeanors, his Majesty would by no Means de- 'fend them from the Justice of the Law: That he 'always intended to restore such Arms and Am- 'munition, which he had been compelled to take 'from any Persons and Places, when his own had 'been taken from him; and would make them 'Recompence as soon as his own Stores were re- 'stored to him.

'To whatsoever they proposed for the slighting 'all Fortifications, and reducing all Garrisons 'which had been made since the Beginning of 'the Troubles, and leaving them in the State 'they were before, the King fully and absolutely 'consented; and that the old Castles and Garri- 'sons should be reduced to their antient Propor- 'tion and Establishment; but, for the Governors 'and Commanders of them, he said, That the

'*Cinque-*

'*Cinque-Ports* were already in the Cuſtody of a Noble Perſon, againſt whom he knew no juſt Exception; and who had ſuch a legal Intereſt therein, that he could not, with Juſtice, remove him from it, untill ſome ſufficient Cauſe were made appear to him; but he was very willing, if he ſhould at any Time be found guilty of any thing that might make him unworthy of that Truſt, that he might be proceeded againſt according to the Rules of Juſtice: That the Government of the Town of *Portſmouth*, and all other Forts, Caſtles, and Towns, as were formerly kept by Garriſons, ſhould be put into the Hands of ſuch Perſons, againſt whom no juſt Exceptions could be made; all of them being, before theſe Troubles, by Letters Patent, granted to ſeveral Perſons, againſt any of whom he knew not any Exceptions, who ſhould be removed, if juſt Cauſe ſhould be given for the ſame. The Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and all other Governors and Commanders of the Towns and Caſtles, ſhould keep their Charges, as by the Law they ought to do, and for the King's Service, and Safety of the Kingdom; and they ſhould not admit into any of them foreign Forces, or other Forces, raiſed or brought in to them contrary to Law, but ſhould uſe their utmoſt Endeavours to ſuppreſs ſuch Forces; and ſhould ſeize all Arms and Ammunition, which, by the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom, they ought to ſeize.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'To that Part which concern'd the Ships, the King told them, 'That he expected his own Ships ſhould be deliver'd to him, as by the Law they ought to be; and that when he ſhould think fit to nominate a Lord High-Admiral of *England*, it ſhould be ſuch a Perſon againſt whom no juſt Exception could be made; and if any ſhould be, he would always leave him to his due Trial and Examination; and he would grant his Office to him by ſuch Letters Patent, as had been uſed. In the mean Time he would govern the Admi-

'ralty

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'ralty by Commiſſion, as had been in all Times 'accuſtom'd; and whatſoever Ships ſhould be ſet 'out by him, or his Authority, ſhould be employ-'ed for the Defence of the Kingdom againſt all 'foreign Forces whatſoever, for the Saſeguard 'of Merchants, Securing of Trade, Guarding of '*Ireland*, and the Intercepting of all Supplies to be 'carried to the Rebels; and they ſhould uſe their 'utmoſt Endeavours to ſuppreſs all Forces which 'ſhould be raiſed, by any Perſon whatſoever, a-'gainſt the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom; 'and to ſeize all Arms and Ammunition provided 'for the Supply of any ſuch Forces.'

'It is evident to all Men where the Difference now lay between them, being Whether the King would reſerve the Diſpoſal of thoſe Offices and Places of Truſt to himſelf, (which all Kings had enjoyed, and was indeed a Part of his Regality) or Whether he would be content with ſuch a Nomination, as, being to paſs, and depend upon their Approbation, no Man ſhould ever be admitted to them, who was nominated by him. The Committee, upon his Majeſty's Anſwer, deſired to know, 'Whether he did intend, that both Houſes 'ſhould expreſs their Confidence of the Perſons, 'to whoſe Truſt thoſe Places were to be commit-'ted; for that they were directed by their *Inſtruc-'tions*, that, if his Majeſty was pleaſed to aſſent 'thereunto, and to nominate Perſons of Quality 'to receive the Charge of them, that they ſhould 'certify it to both Houſes of Parliament; that 'thereupon they might expreſs their Confidence 'in thoſe Perſons, or humbly deſire his Majeſty 'to name others, none of which Perſons to be re-'moved during three Years next enſuing, with-'out juſt Cauſe to be approved by both Houſes; 'and if any ſhould be ſo remov'd, or die within 'that Space, the Perſons, to be put in their Pla-'ces, to be ſuch, as the two Houſes ſhould Con-'fide in.'

'The King anſwered, 'That he did not intend 'that the Houſes ſhould expreſs their Confidence

'of

'of the Persons, to whose Trusts those Places 'should be committed, but only that they should 'have Liberty, upon any just Exception, to pro- 'ceed against any such Persons according to Law; 'his Majesty being resolv'd not to protect them 'against the Public Justice. When any of the 'Places should be void, he well knew the Nomi- 'nation and free Election of those who should 'succeed, to be a Right belonging to, and inhe- 'rent in, his Majesty; and having been enjoyed by 'all his Royal Progenitors, he could not believe his 'well-affected Subjects desired to limit him in that 'Right; and desired they would be satisfied with 'this Answer, or give him any Reasons to alter 'his Resolution, and he would comply with them.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

They told him, 'There could be no good and 'firm Peace hoped for, if there were not a Cure 'found out for the Fears and Jealousies; and they 'knew none sure, but this which they had pro- 'posed.'

'The King reply'd, 'That he rather expected 'Reasons grounded upon Law, to have shew'd 'him, by the Law, that he had not that Right he 'pretended, or that they had a Right superior to 'his, in what was now in Question; or that they 'would have shew'd him some legal Reason, why 'the Persons trusted by him were incapable of such 'a Trust, than that they would only have insist- 'ed upon Fears and Jealousies; of which as he 'knew no Ground, so he must be ignorant of the 'Cure. That the Argument they used might 'extend to the depriving him of, or at least sha- 'ring with him in, all his just Regal Power; since 'Power, as well as Forces, might be the Object of 'Fears and Jealousies; and there would be always 'a Power left to hurt, whilst there was any left to 'protect and defend.' He told them, 'If he had 'as much Inclination, as he had more Right, to 'Fears and Jealousies, he might, with more Rea- 'son, have insisted upon an Addition of Power, as 'a Security to enable him to keep his Forts when 'he had them; since it appear'd it was not so great,

'but

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'but that they had been able to take them from 'him, than they to make any Difficulty to restore 'them to him in the same Case they were before. 'But, he said, as he was himself content with, 'so, he took God to Witness, his greatest Desire 'was to observe always and maintain, the Law of 'the Land; and expected the same from his Sub-'jects; and believ'd the mutual Observance of that 'Rule, and neither of them to fear what the Law 'fear'd not, to be, on both Parts, a better Cure 'for that dangerous Disease of Fears and Jealou-'sies, and a better Means to establish a happy and 'perpetual Peace, than for him to divest himself 'of those Trusts, which the Law of the Land had 'settled in the Crown alone, to preserve the Power 'and Dignity of the Prince, for the better Protec-'tion of the Subject and of the Law, and to a-'void those dangerous Distractions, which the In-'terest of any Sharers with him would have infal-'libly produced.'

'The Committee neither offer'd to answer his Majesty's Reasons, nor to oppose other Reasons to weigh against them; but only said, 'That they 'were commanded, by their *Instructions*, to insist 'upon the Desires of both Houses formerly ex-'press'd.'

To which the King made no other Answer, 'than 'That he conceiv'd it all the Justice in the 'World for him to insist, That what was, by Law, 'his own, and had been, contrary to Law, taken 'from him, should be fully restored to him, with-'out conditioning to impose any new Limitations 'upon him, or his Ministers, which were not 'formerly required from them by the Law; and 'he thought it most unreasonable, to be press'd 'to diminish his own just Rights himself, because 'others had violated and usurped them.' This was the Sum of what pass'd in the *Treaty* upon that *Proposition*.

'To the *first Proposition* of the two Houses, *That his Majesty would be pleased to disband his Armies, as they likewise would be ready to disband* 'all

all their Forces, which they had raised, and that he would be pleased to return to his Parliament: An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'The King answer'd, 'That he was as ready 'and willing that all Armies should be disbanded, 'as any Person whatsoever; and conceiv'd the best 'Way to it, would be a happy and speedy Con-'clusion of the present *Treaty*; which, if both 'Houses would contribute as much as he would 'do to it, would be suddenly effected. And as 'he desired nothing more than to be with his two 'Houses, so he would repair thither as soon as he 'could possibly do it with his Honour and Safe-'ty.'

'The Committee asked him, 'If by a happy and 'speedy Conclusion of the present *Treaty*, he in-'tended a Conclusion upon the two *first Proposi-'tions*, or a Conclusion of the *Treaty* in all the '*Propositions* of both Parts?'

'The King, who well knew it would be very ungracious to deny the Disbanding of the Armies, till all the *Propositions* were agreed, some whereof would require much Time, answer'd, 'That he 'intended such a Conclusion of, or in, the *Treaty*, 'as there might be a clear Evidence to himself, 'and his Subjects, of a future Peace, and no Ground 'left for the Continuance, or Growth, of those 'bloody Dissensions; which, he doubted not, might 'be obtain'd, if both Houses would consent that 'the *Treaty* should proceed without farther Inter-'ruption, or Limitation of Days.'

'They asked him, 'What he intended should be 'a clear Evidence to him, and his good Subjects, 'of a future Peace, and no Ground left for the 'Continuance, and Growth, of those bloody Dis-'sensions?'

'His Majesty told them, 'If the Conclusion of 'the present *Treaty* upon his *first Proposition*, and 'the *first Proposition* of both Houses, should be so 'full and perfectly made, that the Law of the 'Land might have a full, free, and uninterrupted 'Course, for the Defence and Preservation of the 'Rights of his Majesty, and of themselves, and 'the rest of his Subjects, there would be thence a

'clear

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'clear Evidence to him, and all Men, of a future 'Peace; and it would be such a Conclusion as he 'intended, never meaning that both Armies should 'remain undisbanded untill the *Propositions* on both 'Sides were fully concluded.'

'To the other Clause of their own *Proposition*, concerning the King's Return to the Parliament, they said, 'They had no Instructions to treat upon it;' which the King much wonder'd at; and finding that they had no other Authority to treat, or debate what was necessary to be done in order to Disbanding, but only to press him to appoint a Day for the actual Disbanding; and that the Forces in the *North*, where he had a great Army, and they had none, might be first disbanded, he endeavour'd to draw them to some *Propositions* upon his Return to the Parliament; from whence Expedients would naturally result, if they pursued that heartily, which would conclude a general Peace. And it seem'd very strange, that, after so many Discourses of the King's Absence from the Houses, from whence they had taught the People to believe that most of the present Evils flow'd and proceeded, when a *Treaty* was now enter'd upon, and that was a Part of their own *first Proposition*, that their Committee should have no Instructions or Authority to treat upon it. After this they receiv'd new Instructions, 'To declare to his Majesty the Desire of both Houses, for his coming to his Parliament; which, they said, they had often express'd 'with full Offers of Security to his Royal Person, 'agreeable to their Duty and Allegiance, and they 'knew no Cause why he might not repair thither 'with Honour and Safety.'

'When the King found he could not engage them in that Argument to make any particular Overture or Invitation to him; and that the Committee, who express'd Willingness enough, had not in Truth the least Power to promote, or contribute to an Accommodation, lest they should make the People believe that he had a Desire to continue the War, because he consented not to their

their *Proposition* of Disbanding the Armies, he sent this *Message*, by an Express of his own, to the two Houses, after he had first communicated it to their Committee.' An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Oxford, April 12, 1643.

CHARLES *R.*

TO shew to the whole World, how earnestly his Majesty longs for Peace, and that no Success shall make him desire the Continuance of his Army to any other End, or for any longer Time, than that; and untill Things may be so settled, as that the Law may have a full, free, and uninterrupted Course, for the Defence and Preservation of the Rights of his Majesty, both Houses, and his good Subjects:

1. *As soon as his Majesty is satisfied in his* first Proposition, *concerning his own Revenue, Magazines, Ships, and Forts, in which he desires nothing, but that the just, known, legal Rights of his Majesty (devolved to him from his Progenitors) and of the Persons trusted by him, which have violently been taken from both, be restored unto him, and unto them; unless any just and legal Exception against any of the Persons trusted by him (which are yet unknown to his Majesty) can be made appear unto him:*

2. *As soon as all the Members of both Houses shall be restored to the same Capacity of Sitting and Voting in Parliament, as they had upon the first of* January 1641; *the same, of Right, belonging unto them by their Birth-rights, and the free Election of those that sent them; and having been voted from them for adhering to his Majesty in these Distractions; his Majesty not intending that this should extend either to the Bishops, whose Votes have been taken away by Bill, or to such, in whose Places, upon new Writs, new Elections have been made:*

3. *As soon as his Majesty, and both Houses, may be secured from such tumultuous Assemblies, as, to the great Breach of the Privileges, and the high Dishonour of Parliaments, have formerly assembled about both Houses, and awed the Members of the same; and*

occa-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

occasioned two several Complaints from the Lords House, and two several Desires of that House to the House of Commons, to join in a Declaration *against them; the Complying with which Desire might have prevented all these miserable Distractions which have ensued; which Security, his Majesty conceives, can be only settled by adjourning the Parliament to some other Place, at the least twenty Miles from* London, *the Choice of which his Majesty leaves to both Houses:*

His Majesty will, most chearfully and readily, consent that both Armies be immediately disbanded, and give a present Meeting to both his Houses of Parliament at the Time and Place, at, and to which, the Parliament shall be agreed to be adjourned: His Majesty being most confident that the Law will then recover due Credit and Estimation; and that upon a free Debate, in a full and peaceable Convention of Parliament, such Provisions will be made against seditious Preaching and Printing against his Majesty, and the established Laws, which have been one of the chief Causes of the present Distractions; and such Care will be taken concerning the legal and known Rights of his Majesty, and the Property and Liberty of his Subjects, that whatsoever hath been published or done, in or by Colour of any illegal Declaration, Ordinance, *or* Order *of one or both Houses, or any Committee of either of them, and particularly the Power to raise Arms without his Majesty's Consent, will be in such Manner recalled, disclaimed, and provided against, that no Seed will remain for the like to spring out of for the future, to disturb the Peace of the Kingdom, and to endanger the very Being of it. And in such a Convention his Majesty is resolved, by his Readiness to consent to whatsoever shall be proposed to him, by Bill, for the real Good of his Subjects (and particularly for the better Discovery, and speedier Conviction of* Recusants; *for the Education of the Children of* Papists *by* Protestants *in the* Protestant *Religion; for the Prevention of Practices of* Papists *against the State, and the due Execution of the Laws, and true le-*

levying of the Penalties against them) to make known to all the World, how causeless those Fears and Jealousies have been, which have been raised against him; and by that so distracted this miserable Kingdom. And if this Offer of his Majesty be not consented to (in which he asks nothing for which there is not apparent Justice on his Side, and in which he defers many Things highly concerning both himself and People, till a full and peaceable Convention of Parliament, which in Justice he might now require) his Majesty is confident, that it will then appear to all the World, not only who is most desirous of Peace, and whose Fault it is that both Armies are not now disbanded; but who have been the true and first Cause that this Peace was ever interrupted, or those Armies raised, and the Beginning or Continuance of the War; and the Destruction and Desolation of this poor Kingdom (which is too likely to ensue) will not, by the most interested, passionate, or prejudicate Person, be imputed to his Majesty.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'To this *Message* the two Houses returned no Answer to the King, but required the Committee to return to *Westminster* (having been in *Oxford* with his Majesty just twenty Days) with such positive Circumstances, that the House of Commons enjoined their Members to begin their Journey the same Day, which they obeyed; though it was so late, that they were forced to very inconvenient Accommodations; and, at their Return, some of them were looked upon with great Jealousy, as Persons engaged by the King, and disinclined to the Parliament; and this Jealousy prevailed so far, that Mr. *Martin* opened a Letter from the Earl of *Northumberland* to his own Lady, presuming he should therein have discovered some Combination; and this Insolence was not disliked.'——Thus far the Noble Historian. The Proceedings of both Houses, in relation to this Intercepting of the Earl of *Northumberland*'s Letter, will appear more at large, from their *Journals*, in its proper Order of Time.

We

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

We now proceed to give Mr. *Whitlocke*'s Account of what pass'd, between the King and the abovementioned Committee of Parliament, at *Oxford*.

And Mr. Whitlock's Account of that Treaty.

'THE King used the Commissioners with great Favour and Civility; and his General, *Ruthen*, and divers of his Lords and Officers came frequently to their Table, and they had very friendly Discourses and Treatments together. The King himself did them the Honour sometimes to accept of part of their Wine and Provisions, which the Earl of *Northumberland* sent to him, when they had any Thing extraordinary.

'Their *Instructions* were very strict, and tied them up to treat with none but the King himself, whom they often attended at his Lodgings in *Christ-Church:* They had Access at all Times when they desired it, and were allowed by his Majesty a very free Debate with him.

'He had commonly waiting on him, when he treated with them, Prince *Rupert*, the Lord-Keeper *Littleton*, the Earl of *Southampton*, the Lord Chief-Justice *Banks*, and several other Lords of his Council, who never debated any Matters with them; but gave their Opinions to the King in those Things which he demanded of them, and sometimes would put the King in mind of some particular Things; but otherwise they did not speak at all.

'In this *Treaty* the King manifested his great Parts and Abilities, Strength of Reason, and Quickness of Apprehension, with much Patience in hearing what was objected against him; wherein he allowed all Freedom, and would himself sum up the Arguments, and give a most clear Judgment upon them.

'His Unhappiness was, That he had a better Opinion of others Judgments than of his own, tho' they were weaker than his own; and of this the Parliament's Commissioners had Experience to their great Trouble.

'They

'They were often waiting on the King, and debating some Points of the *Treaty* with him untill Midnight, before they could come to a Conclusion. Upon one of the most material Points they pressed his Majesty with their Reasons, and best Arguments they could use, to grant what they desired.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'The King said, 'He was fully satisfied, and 'promised to give them his *Answer* in Writing, 'according to their Desire; but, because it was 'then past Midnight, and too late to put it into Wri-'ting, he would have it drawn up the next Morn-'ing (when he commanded them to wait on him 'again); and then he would give them his *An-'swer* in Writing, as it was now agreed upon.'

'They went to their Lodgings, full of joyful Hopes to receive this *Answer* the next Morning; and which, being given, would have much conduced to a happy Issue and Success of this *Treaty*; and they had the King's Word for it, and they waited on him the next Morning at the Hour appointed.

'But, instead of that *Answer* which they expected, and were promised, the King gave them a Paper quite contrary to what was concluded the Night before, and very much tending to the Breach of the *Treaty*. They did humbly expostulate this with his Majesty, and pressed him upon his Royal Word, and the ill Consequences which they feared would follow upon this his new Paper.

'But the King told them, 'He had altered his 'Mind; and that this Paper, which he now gave 'them, was his *Answer*, which he was now re-'solved to make upon their last Debate:' And they could obtain no other from him, which occasioned much Sadness and Trouble to them.

'Some of his own Friends, of whom the Commissioners enquired touching this Passage, informed them, That after they were gone from the King, and that his Council were also gone away, some of his Bed-Chamber (and they went higher) hearing from him what *Answer* he had promised,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

and doubting it would tend to ſuch an Iſſue of the *Treaty* as they did not wiſh, they being rather for the Continuance of the War, never left preſſing and perſuading of the King, till they prevailed with him to change his former Reſolutions, and to give Order for his *Anſwer* to be drawn as it was now delivered.

'The *Treaty*, upon the King's *Propoſitions* as well as upon the Commiſſioners, going ſlowly on, and their *Inſtructions* being ſtrict, and ſuch as they could not ſhew to the King when he deſired it, he thought fit, *April* 12, to ſend a *Meſſage* to the Parliament during the *Treaty*.

[*Here follow the Heads of this* Meſſage, *which we have already given at Length*, *p*. 221.]

'This being intimated to the Commiſſioners, they diſſuaded the ſending of it, as that which they feared might break off the *Treaty*; and the Improbability that the Houſes would adjourn, and leave the City of *London*, their beſt Friends and Strength, and put a Diſcontent upon them.

'Yet the King was prevailed with to ſend it; and, upon the Receipt of it by the Houſes, they preſently reſolved to call away their Commiſſioners, and ſent their Orders to them to return to the Parliament, which they obeyed; and ſo this *Treaty*, having continued from the 4th of *March* to the 15th of *April*, was now diſſolved, and all their Labours and Hazards become fruitleſs and of no Effect; and all good *Engliſhmen*, Lovers of the Peace of their Country, were troubled and diſappointed.

'When they were come to the Parliament they gave them a particular Account of all their Negotiation, wherewith they were ſo well ſatisfied, that they ordered the Thanks of the Houſe to be given them; and, by *Vote*, approved of all their Proceedings.'

Thus much for the fruitleſs *Treaty* of *Oxford*: We now return to the other Proceedings of both Houſes.

The

The Month of *April* begins with an *Ordinance* of Parliament, which, afterwards, proved the moſt oppreſſive to the Royal Party in the Kingdom, of any thing yet done by them. This was the *Ordinance* for ſeizing and ſequeſtring the real and perſonal Eſtates of Delinquents. The whole is in *Ruſhworth*, except the Names of the Sequeſtrators, which, probably, were omitted in thoſe *Collections* to prevent giving Offence to particular Perſons at that Time: But theſe we have ſupplied from the Original Edition of this *Ordinance*, publiſhed by the Authority of both Houſes. By this Liſt the Reader will ſee who were the Perſons the Parliament then nominated to be *Sequeſtrators* throughout the whole Kingdom; though ſome of them, there named, had too much Regard for their Character, or their Safety, to put the Office in Execution; and others of them, afterwards, declared in favour of the King. The Liſt runs thus:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

BEDFORDSHIRE.

SIR *Beauchamp St. John*, and Sir *John Burgoyn*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Alſton*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Roger Burgoyn*, Sir *Oliver Luke*, and Sir *Samuel Luke*, Knights; *Thomas Rolt*, *Thomas Sadler*, *James Beverley*, *Humphry Monoux*, *Edward Oſborn*, *Robert Stanton*, and *Samuel Brown*, Eſquires.

Names of the Perſons appointed to ſequeſter the Eſtates of ſuch as adher'd to the King.

BEDFORD *Town*. The Mayor for the Time being.

BERKSHIRE.

Sir *Francis Pile*, Bart. Sir *Francis Knollis*, jun. Knt. *Peregrine Hobby*, *Henry Martin*, *Roger Knight*, *Henry Powle*, *Thomas Fettiplace*, and *Tanfield Vachell*, Eſquires.

BUCKINGHAMSHIRE.

Sir *Richard Ingoldſby*, Knt. *Henry Bulſtrode*, *Thomas Tyrrel*, and *Richard Grenville*, Eſquires; Sir *Peter Temple*, Bart. Sir *Thomas Sanders*, Knt. *Anthony Ratcliffe*, and *Thomas Weſtall*, Eſquires; Sir *William Andrews*, Knt. *Bulſtrode Whitlocke*,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

and doubting it would tend to ſuch an Iſſue of the *Treaty* as they did not wiſh, they being rather for the Continuance of the War, never left preſſing and perſuading of the King, till they prevailed with him to change his former Reſolutions, and to give Order for his *Anſwer* to be drawn as it was now delivered.

'The *Treaty*, upon the King's *Propoſitions* as well as upon the Commiſſioners, going ſlowly on, and their *Inſtructions* being ſtrict, and ſuch as they could not ſhew to the King when he deſired it, he thought fit, *April* 12, to ſend a *Meſſage* to the Parliament during the *Treaty*.

[*Here follow the Heads of this* Meſſage, *which we have already given at Length*, *p.* 221.]

'This being intimated to the Commiſſioners, they diſſuaded the ſending of it, as that which they feared might break off the *Treaty*; and the Improbability that the Houſes would adjourn, and leave the City of *London*, their beſt Friends and Strength, and put a Diſcontent upon them.

'Yet the King was prevailed with to ſend it; and, upon the Receipt of it by the Houſes, they preſently reſolved to call away their Commiſſioners, and ſent their Orders to them to return to the Parliament, which they obeyed; and ſo this *Treaty*, having continued from the 4th of *March* to the 15th of *April*, was now diſſolved, and all their Labours and Hazards become fruitleſs and of no Effect; and all good *Engliſhmen*, Lovers of the Peace of their Country, were troubled and diſappointed.

'When they were come to the Parliament they gave them a particular Account of all their Negotiation, wherewith they were ſo well ſatisfied, that they ordered the Thanks of the Houſe to be given them; and, by *Vote*, approved of all their Proceedings.'

Thus much for the fruitleſs *Treaty* of *Oxford*: We now return to the other Proceedings of both Houſes.

The

The Month of *April* begins with an *Ordinance* of Parliament, which, afterwards, proved the moſt oppreſſive to the Royal Party in the Kingdom, of any thing yet done by them. This was the *Ordinance* for ſeizing and ſequeſtring the real and perſonal Eſtates of Delinquents. The whole is in *Ruſhworth*, except the Names of the Sequeſtrators, which, probably, were omitted in thoſe *Collections* to prevent giving Offence to particular Perſons at that Time: But theſe we have ſupplied from the Original Edition of this *Ordinance*, publiſhed by the Authority of both Houſes. By this Liſt the Reader will ſee who were the Perſons the Parliament then nominated to be *Sequeſtrators* throughout the whole Kingdom; though ſome of them, there named, had too much Regard for their Character, or their Safety, to put the Office in Execution; and others of them, afterwards, declared in favour of the King. The Liſt runs thus:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

BEDFORDSHIRE.

SIR *Beauchamp St. John*, and Sir *John Burgoyn*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Alſton*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Roger Burgoyn*, Sir *Oliver Luke*, and Sir *Samuel Luke*, Knights; *Thomas Rolt*, *Thomas Sadler*, *James Beverley*, *Humphry Monoux*, *Edward Oſborn*, *Robert Stanton*, and *Samuel Brown*, Eſquires.

Names of the Perſons appointed to ſequeſter the Eſtates of ſuch as adher'd to the King.

BEDFORD *Town*. The Mayor for the Time being.

BERKSHIRE.

Sir *Francis Pile*, Bart. Sir *Francis Knollis*, jun. Knt. *Peregrine Hobby*, *Henry Martin*, *Roger Knight*, *Henry Powle*, *Thomas Fettiplace*, and *Tanfield Vachell*, Eſquires.

BUCKINGHAMSHIRE.

Sir *Richard Ingoldſby*, Knt. *Henry Bulſtrode*, *Thomas Tyrrel*, and *Richard Grenville*, Eſquires; Sir *Peter Temple*, Bart. Sir *Thomas Sanders*, Knt. *Anthony Ratcliffe*, and *Thomas Weſtall*, Eſquires; Sir *William Andrews*, Knt. *Bulſtrode Whitlocke*,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

John Hampden, *Arthur Goodwyn*, and *Richard Winwood*, Esquires.

CAMBRIDGESHIRE.

Sir *Dudley North*, Sir *John Cuts*, and Sir *Thomas Martin*, Knights; Capt. *Symonds*; *Dudley Pope*, Esq; Sir *Miles Sandys*, Knt. *Francis Russell*, *Oliver Cromwell*, *William Fisher*, *Thomas Thompson*, *Thomas Becket*, *Walter Clopton*, *Robert Castle*, *Thomas Bendish*, *John Welbore*, *Robert Clark*, *Michael Dalton*, jun. *Thomas Parker*, *Thomas Ducket*, *John Hobart*, *Thomas Castle*, *George Clapthorn*, *John Towers*, *Edward Leeds*, and *William Marsh*, Esquires.

CAMBRIDGE *Town and University*. The Mayor for the Time being; *Oliver Cromwell*, *John Lowry*, *William Welbore*, *Talbot Pepys* Recorder, *John Sherwood*, *Samuel Spaulden*, *Thomas French*, and *Robert Robson*, Esquires.

CHESHIRE.

Sir *George Booth*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *William Brereton*, Bart. *Thomas Stanley*, *Henry Manwaring*, *Henry Brook*, *John Bradshaw*, *Robert Duckenfield*, *Henry Vernon*, *John Crewe*, and *William Marbury*, Esquires.

CHESTER *City*. *William Jaunce*, Mayor; *John Aldersey*, *Peter Leigh*, and *William Edwards*, Merchants.

CORNWALL.

Sir *Richard Carew*, Bart. *Francis Buller*, *Alexander Carew*, *John Trefusis*, *John St. Aubin*, *Richard Erisey*, *John Moyle*, *Francis Godolphin* of *Tremonegue*, *Thomas Gawen*, *John Carter*, and *Thomas Arundell*, Esquires.

CUMBERLAND.

William Lawson, *William Briscoe*, *Thomas Lamplugh*, *Richard Barwis*, and *John Barwis*, sen. Esquires.

DEVONSHIRE.

Sir *George Chudleigh*, Sir *John Pool*, and Sir *John Northcote*, Baronets; Sir *Edmund Fowell*, Sir *Samuel Rolle*, Sir *Shilston Calmady*, and Sir *Nicholas Martin*, Knights; Sir *Francis Drake*, Bart.

Bart. *Robert Savery*, *Henry Walrond*, *Francis Rous*, *Edmund Prideaux*, *Henry Wroth*, *Hugh Fortescue*, *Arthur Upton*, *John Yeo*, *William Frye*, and *George Trobridge*, Esquires; the Mayor of *Plymouth* for the Time being. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

EXON *City*. *Christopher Clark*, Mayor; *Richard Sanders*, *Thomas Crossing*, *Walter White*, and *John Hakewill*, Aldermen; *James Gould*, Sheriff.

DERBYSHIRE.

Sir *John Curzon*, and Sir *John Gell*, Baronets; Sir *John Coke*, Knt. *Francis Revitt*, *Nathaniel Hallowes*, and *James Abney*, Esquires.

DORSETSHIRE.

Denzil Holles, Esq; Sir *Thomas Trenchard* and Sir *Walter Erle*, Knights; *John Brown*, *Thomas Tregonall*, *John Bingham*, *John Hanham*, *John Trenchard*, *Dennis Bond*, *Richard Broderope*, *William Savage*, *Robert Butler*, and *William Sydenham*, jun. *Richard Rose*, *John Henley*, *Thomas Ceely*, and *Thomas Erle*, Esquires.

POOL *Town and County*. *Henry Martin*, Mayor; *George Skut*, *William Skut*, *Anthony Wait*, *William Williams*, *Aaron Durell*, *Richard Mayer*, and *Haviland Healy*, Aldermen.

DORCHESTER *Town*. The Mayor for the Time being; Mr. *John Hill* and Mr. *Richard Bury*.

DURHAM.

Henry Warmouth, *George Lilbourn*, *Thomas Mitford*, *Robert Hutton*, *Thomas Shadforth*, *Clement Falthrop*, *Richard Lilbourn*, *Francis Wren*, *John Blakiston*, *Henry Draper*, and *John Brackenbury*, Esquires.

ESSEX.

Sir *Thomas Barrington*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Henry Mildmay* of *Wanstead*; Sir *Martin Lumley*, and Sir *Harbottle Grimston*, Knights and Baronets; Sir *Richard Everard*, and Sir *William Hicks*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Cheek*, Sir *Henry Halcroft*, Sir *William Rowe*, Sir *Thomas Honeywood*, Sir *William Martin*, and Sir *John Barrington*, Knights; Sir *William Musham*, Bart. *William Masham*, *John*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Wright, *Oliver Raymond*, *Harbottle Grimston*, *John Sayer*, *John Burket*, *Anthony Luther*, *Timothy Middleton*, *Thomas Coke*, *Deane Tyndal*, *James Herne*, *William Goldingham*, *John Atwood*, *John Sorrell*, *Richard Harbackenden*, *Henry Wiseman*, *Robert Smith*, *Robert Browne*, *William Atwood*, *Nathaniel Bacon*, *John Meade*, *Robert Wiseman* of *Mayland*, *Isaac Allen*, —— *Haseley*, *Samuel Friborne*, *Peter Whitcombe*, *Robert Young*, *Jeremy Aylet*, *William Collard*, *Robert Crane*, *Robert Calthrop*, and *Arthur Barnardiston*, Esquires.

COLCHESTER *Town*. The Mayor for the Time being; *Harbottle Grimston* and *Henry Barrington*, Esquires.

GLOUCESTERSHIRE, *with the City of* Gloucester *and County thereof*.

Sir *Robert Cooke*, Knt. *Nathaniel Stephens*, *John George*, *Edward Stephens*, and *John Stephens*, Esquires; *Thomas Pury*, Alderman; Sir *John Seymour*, Knt. *Thomas Hodges* and *John Coddrington*, Esquires.

HEREFORDSHIRE.

Sir *Robert Harley*, Knight of the *Bath*; Sir *Richard Hopton*, Knt. *Walter Kirle*, *Edward Broughton*, and *Henry Vaughan*, Esquires.

HEREFORD *City*. Sir *Robert Harley*, Knight of the *Bath*; *Walter Kirle*, *Richard Hobson*, *John Flacket*, and *Henry Vaughan*, Esquires.

HERTFORDSHIRE.

Charles Lord Viscount *Cranborne*; *Robert Cecil*, Esq; Sir *John Garrat*, and Sir *John Reade*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Dacres*, Sir *William Litton*, and Sir *John Witterong*, Knights; *Richard Jennings*, *Ralph Freeman*, *William Lemon*, *William Priestley*, *John Heydon*, *Alexander Wild*, *Richard Porter*, and *Adam Washington*, Esquires.

ST, ALBANS. The Mayor for the Time being; *John Robotham*, *Ralph Pemberton*, and *Graveley Norton*, Esquires.

HUNTINGDONSHIRE.

Sir *Thomas Cotton*, Bart. Sir *John Hewit*, Knt. *Onslow Winch*, *Terril Jocelyne*, *Thomas Temple*, *John*

John Castle, *Oliver Cromwell*, *Abraham Burwell*, *Edward Montague*, and *John Bulkley*, Esquires. An. 19. Car. I 1643. April.

KENT.

Sir *Thomas Walsingham* and Sir *Anthony Weldon*, Knights; Sir *John Sidley*, Sir *Edward Hales*, Sir *Humphry Tufton*, and Sir *Henry Heyman*, Knights and Baronets; Sir *Michael Livesey*, Bart. Sir *Henry Vane*, jun. Sir *Edward Scot*, Sir *Edward Bois*, Sir *William Brook*, Sir *Peter Wroth*, Sir *George Sandys*, Sir *John Honeywood*, Sir *James Oxenden*, and Sir *Richard Hardresse*, Knights; *Augustine Skinner*, *Richard Lee*, *Thomas Selliard*, *John Bois*, sen. *Thomas Blunt*, and *Samuel Short*, Esquires.

CANTERBURY *City*. The Mayor for the Time being; Sir *William Man*, Knt. Sir *Edward Master*, Knt. *John Nutt* and *Thomas Courthorpe*, Esquires; *Avery Savine*, Alderman.

ROCHESTER *City*. The Mayor for the Time being; Sir *Anthony Weldon*, Sir *William Brooke*, and Sir *Thomas Walsingham*; *Richard Lee*, Esq; the Mayor of *Tenterden* for the Time being; *William Bois*, *William James*, *Mark Dixwell*, and *Henry Samford*, Esquires.

LANCASHIRE.

Sir *Ralph Ashton* and Sir *Thomas Stanley*, Baronets; *Ralph Ashton* of *Downham*, *Ralph Ashton* of *Middleton*, *Richard Shuttleworth*, *Alexander Rigby*, *John Moore*, *Richard Holland*, *Edward Butterworth*, *John Bradshaw*, *William Ashurst*, *Peter Egerton*, *George Dodding*, *Nicholas Cunliff*, *John Starkey*, *Thomas Birch*, and *Thomas Fell*, Esquires; *Robert Cunliff*, *Robert Curwen*, and *John Nowell*, Gentlemen.

LEICESTERSHIRE.

Henry Lord *Grey* of *Ruthyn*, *Thomas* Lord *Grey* of *Groby*; Sir *Arthur Hasterig*, Bart. Sir *Edward Hartop* and Sir *Thomas Hartop*, Knights; *William Hewet*, *John Bembridge*, *Peter Temple*, *George Ashby*, *William Roberts*, *Richard Bent*, *Arthur Stanley*, *William Danvers*, and *John Goodman*, Esquires.

LEI-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

LEICESTER *Town*. *Richard Ludlam*, Mayor; *William Stanley*, Alderman.

LINCOLNSHIRE.

For the Parts of Lindsey. Sir *John Wray*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Edward Ascough* and Sir *Samuel Oldfield*, Knights; *John Wray*, *Willoughby Hickman*, *Edward Whichcot*, *Edmond Anderson*, *Edward Rositer*, and *John Broxholme*, Esquires; Sir *William Armyn*, Bart. Sir *Hamond Whichcot*, Knt. Sir *John Brownlow* and Sir *Thomas Trollop*, Baronets; *Thomas Hatcher*; Sir *Christopher Wray*; *Thomas Grantham*, *Thomas Lister*, and *John Archer*, Esquires; Sir *William Brownlow*.

For the Parts of Holland. Sir *Anthony Irby*; *William Ellis* and *John Harrington*, Esquires; the Mayor of *Boston* for the Time being; *Thomas Hall*, *Thomas Welby*, and —— *Willesby*, Esquires.

LINCOLN *City and the Close*. The Mayor for the Time being; *Thomas Grantham*, and *John Broxholme*, Esquires; *Robert Moorecroft*, *William Watson*, and *Stephen Dawson*, Aldermen.

MIDDLESEX.

Sir *Gilbert Gerrard*, Bart. Sir *Edward Barkham*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Richard Sprignal*, Bart. Sir *John Franklyn*, Sir *John Hippesley*, Sir *William Roberts*, Sir *James Harrington*, and Sir *Robert Wood*, Knights; *Lawrence Whitacre*, *Justinian Paget*, *William Swallow*, *John Hucksley*, *Thomas Wilcox*, *John Morris*, *Richard Dutton*, and *John Smith*, Esquires.

LONDON *City, and Jurisdiction of the Lord Mayor*. The Lord Mayor and the Aldermen, Aldermens Deputies, and Common Councilmen of the said City.

WESTMINSTER *City and Liberties*. Sir *Robert Pye*, Sir *William Ashton*, and Sir *John Corbet*, Knights; *John Glyn*, *John Trenchard*, and *William Wheeler*, Esquires; *John Brigham*, *George Beverhasset*, *Anthony Withers*, and *William Barns*, Gentlemen; *Josias Fendall*, *William Bell*, —— *Tuckey*,

key, ——— *Colchester*, and *Stephen Higgons*, Esquires. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

NORFOLK *County, and City of* Norwich *with the County thereof.*

Sir *Thomas Woodhouse*, Sir *John Holland*, Sir *John Potts*, and Sir *John Hobart*, Baronets; Sir *Miles Hobart* and Sir *Thomas Huggen*, Knights; *John Cook*, *John Spelman*, *Philip Beddingfield* and *Samuel Smith*, Esquires; the Sheriffs of *Norwich*; the Bailiffs of *Yarmouth*; *Thomas Toll* and *John Percival* of *Lynn*; *Thomas Windham*, *Francis Jermy*, *Robert Wood*, *Gregory Causell*, *John Haughton*, *Thomas Weld*, *Martin Sedley*, and *Thomas Sotherton*, Esquires; Sir *Edmond Mountford*, Knt. *William Heveningham*, *William Cook*, and *Robert Rich*, Esquires; Sir *Richard Berney*, Sir *Isaac Astley*, and Sir *John Palgrave*, Knights; *Brigg Fountayn* and *John Tooly*, Esquires.

NORTHAMPTONSHIRE.

Sir *Rowland St. John*, Knight of the *Bath*; Sir *John Norwich*, Knt. Sir *Gilbert Pickering*, Bart. Sir *Richard Samwel*, Knt. *John Crew*, *John Barnard*, *Edward Harvey*, *Edward Farmer*, *John Norton*, and *John Chappoole*, Esquires; Sir *John Dryden*, Bart. *Richard Knightley*, Esq; Sir *Christopher Yelverton*, Knt. and Bart. *Zouch Tate*, *Philip Holeman*, and *Thomas Pentlow*, Esquires.

NORTHAMPTON *Town*. The Mayor for the Time being; *Thomas Martin* and *John Fisher*, Aldermen.

NORTHUMBERLAND.

Sir *John Fenwick*, Bart. Sir *Jo. Delaval*, Knt. *Thomas Middleton*, *William Shaftoe*, *Michael Welden*, and *Henry Ogle*, Esquires.

NEWCASTLE *Town*. *John Blakiston*, Esq;

For the Town of BERWICK *upon* TWEED. *John Sleigh*, Mayor; Sir *Robert Jackson*, Knt. *Ralph Salkeld*, Esq;

NOTTINGHAMSHIRE.

Francis Pierpoint, Esq; Sir *Francis Thornehaugh* and Sir *Thomas Hutchinson*, Knights; *Francis Thorne-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Thornehaugh, *Joseph Widmerpoole*, *Robert Reynes*, *Gilbert Millington*, and *John Hutchinson*, Esquires; Sir *Francis Molineux*, Knt. *Charles White* and *Henry Ireton*, Esquires.

NOTTINGHAM *Town and County thereof*. The Mayor for the Time being; *James Chadwick*, Esq; *Huntington Plumtre*, M. D. *John James*, Alderman, and *John Gregory*, Gent.

OXFORDSHIRE. *

RUTLANDSHIRE.

Sir *Edward Harrington*, Knt. *Evers Armyn*, *Robert Horsman*, *John Osborne*, *Christopher Browne*, *Robert Horsman*, jun. and *Thomas Wait*, Esquires.

SOMERSETSHIRE.

Sir *John Horner*, Sir *Thomas Wroth*, and Sir *George Farwell*, Knights; *Clement Walker*, *Alexander Popham*, *William Strode*, *Richard Cole*, *John Harrington*, *John Hippesley*, *William Long*, *John Preston*, *Henry Henley*, *Henry Stamford*, *John Pym*, *James Ash*, and *John Ash*, Esquires; *Roger Hill*, *George Serle*, and *Jasper Chaplyn*, Gentlemen; *Richard Capell*, *William Bull*, *Robert Harbin*, *John Hunt*, and *Robert Blake*, Esquires; the Mayor of *Bridgewater* that now is.

BRISTOL *City*. *Richard Aldworth*, Mayor; *Joseph Jackson*, *Hugh Browne*, Sheriffs; *Richard Allworthy*, Alderman; *Luke Hodges* and *Henry Gibbs*.

SOUTHAMPTON *County*, *the Town and County thereof*, *and the Isle of* Wight.

Sir *Henry Worsley* and Sir *William Lewis*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Jervois*, Sir *William Lisle*, Sir *John Leigh*, Sir *Henry Clerke*, Sir *John Compton*, and Sir *Richard Kingsmill*, Knights; *Robert Dillington*, *Robert Wallop*, *Richard Whitehead*, *Richard Norton*, *John Doddington*, *Richard Jervois*, *John Lisle*, *John Button*, *Edward Hooper*, *John Bulkley*, *Thomas Clerke*, *John Kemp*, *Richard Major*, *Francis St. Barbe*, *Nicholas Love*, *John Fielder*, *Wil-*

* There are no Sequestrators nominated for this County: —— As the King at this Time kept his Court at *Oxford* surrounded with his Army, we presume the Parliament thought it to no Purpose to appoint any.

William Withers, *Thomas Chandler*, *James Tutt*, *John Pitman*, and *John Hooke*, Esquires; *George Gallop* and *Edward Exon*, Aldermen of *Southampton*; and the Mayor of *Winchester* for the Time being.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

SUFFOLK.

Sir *William Playters*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Nathaniel Barnardiston*, Knt. Sir *William Spring*, Bart. Sir *Roger North*, Sir *Thomas Barnardiston*, Sir *William Soame*, Sir *John Wentworth*, and Sir *Philip Parker*, Knights; *William Heveningham*, *Nathaniel Bacon* of *Froston*, *Nicholas Bacon*, *Maurice Barrow*, *William Blois*, *Henry North*, *Robert Brewster*, *Brampton Gourdon*, *Francis Bacon*, *Theophilus Vaughan* of *Beckles*, *William Cage*, *William Rivet* of *Bilson*, *Edmund Harvey*, *John Gourdon*, and *Thomas Coale*, Esquires; *John Basse* and *Francis Brewster*, Gentlemen; the Bailiffs of the Town of *Ipswich* that now are; *John Sicklemer*, *Richard Puplet*, and *John Aldus*, Gentlemen; *Nathaniel Bacon*, of *Ipswich*.

ST. EDMUNDS BURY. *Samuel Moody*, *Thomas Cole*, —— *Chaplin*; the Bailiffs of the Town of *Aldborough* for the Time being; *Thomas Gibbs*, Alderman, and *Thomas Johnson*.

SURREY.

Sir *Richard Onslow*, Sir *William Elliot*, and Sir *Robert Parkhurst*, Knights; *Nicholas Stoughton*, *George Evelin* of *Wotton*, *Henry Weston*, and *Arthur Onslow*, Esquires; Sir *Ambrose Browne*, Bart. Sir *Anthony Vincent*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *John Dignley* and Sir *Matthew Brand*, Knights; *Edward Sanders*, *Robert Holman*, *Robert Houghton*, *George Evelin*, *Francis Drake*, *Thomas Sandys*, *George Myn*, and *William Muscamp*, Esquires; Sir *John Howland* and Sir *John Evelin*, Knights; *Robert Goodwin*, *George Fairwell*, and *John Goodwyn*, Esquires; *Richard Wright* and *Cornelius Cooke*, Gentlemen.

SUSSEX.

Sir *Thomas Pelham*, Bart. *Anthony Stapley*, *Herbert Morley*, *Thomas Whitfield*, *John Baker*, and *Her-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Herbert Hay, Esquires; *Herbert Springate* of the *Broyle*, *Ralph Cooper*, *Hall Ravenscroft*, *Edward Apsley*, *John Downes*, *William Cawley*, *Edward Higgons*, *Thomas Chute*, *George Oglander*, *George Simpson*, *John Bushridge*, *Thomas Middleton*, and *James Temple*, Esquires; Captains, *Thomas*, *Collins*, *Carleton*, and *Everton*.

SALOP.

Sir *John Corbet*, Knt. *William Pierpoint*, *Richard Moore*, *Thomas Witton*, *Thomas Nichols*, *Humphry Mackworth*, *Andrew Lloyd* of *Aston*, *Lancelot Lee*, *Thomas Hunt*, and *John Corbet*, Esquires.

STAFFORDSHIRE.

Sir *Richard Skeffington*, Knt. *Richard Pyott*, *Michael Rydolph*, *Edward Manwaring*, *Matthew Morton*, *John Birch*, *Ralph Rudyard*, *Michael Lowe*, *Michael Noble*, and *Edward Leigh*, Esquires; Sir *Walter Wrotesley*, Sir *Edward Littleton*, and Sir *Edward Brereton*, Baronets.

LITCHFIELD *City*. The Bailiffs and the Sheriff of the said City for the Time being; *Michael Noble*, *Richard Draffgate*, *Richard Baxter*, and *Thomas Burnes*, Gentlemen.

WARWICKSHIRE.

The now Mayor of the City of *Coventry*; Sir *Peter Wentworth*, Knight of the *Bath*; Sir *Edward Peyto*, Knt. *John Hales*, *Godfrey Boswell*, *John Barker*, *William Purefoy*, *Anthony Staughton*, *George Abbot*, *Thomas Boughton*, *William Colemore*, *Thomas Basnet*, *William Jesson*, *Gamaliel Purefoy*, and *Thomas Willoughby*, Esquires.

COVENTRY *City and County thereof*. *John Barker*, *Isaac Bromich*, and *Robert Philips*, Esquires.

WILTSHIRE.

Denzil Holles, Esq; Sir *Edward Hungerford*, Sir *Edward Baynton*, Sir *Nevil Poole*, and Sir *John Evelyn*, Knights; *Edward Baynton*, *Edward Tucker*, *William Wheeler*, *Edward Goddard*, *Alexander Thistlethwait*, jun. *John White*, *Edward Poole*, *Thomas Moore*, *John Ash*, and *Robert Jennour*, Esquires.

WEST-

WESTMORELAND.

Sir *Henry Bellingham*, Knt. and Bart. *George Gilpin*, *Edward Wilson*, *Nicholas Fisher*, *Thomas Sleddall*, *Rowland Dawson*, and *Allan Bellingham*, Esquires; *Roger Bateman*, *Richard Branthwaite*, *Robert Phillipson*, and *Gervase Benson*, Gentlemen.

WORCESTERSHIRE.

John Wilde and *Richard Creswell*, Serjeants at Law; *Humphry Salloway*, *Edward Digmley*, *Edward Pit*, *Thomas Greves*, and *William Jeffryes*, Esquires.

YORKSHIRE.

East-Riding. *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*; Sir *John Hotham*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *William Strickland*, Bart. Sir *Philip Stapylton* and Sir *Thomas Rymington*, Knights; *Richard Rymington*, *John Hotham*, *John Anlaby*, *Richard Darley*, *Henry Darley*, and *John Allured*, Esquires.

North-Riding. *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*; Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, Sir *Henry Foulis*, Sir *Thomas Norcliffe*, and Sir *Matthew Boynton*, Barts. Sir *William Sheffield*, Knt. *John Hotham*, *Bryan Stapylton*, *Henry Darley*, *Henry Anderson*, *John Wastell*, *Christopher Percey*, *George Trotter*, *Matthew Smelt*, *John Legard* de *Malton*, *Francis Lascelles*, *Geoffrey Gate*, *John Dent*, *Thomas Robinson*, *Francis Boynton*, and *Christopher Waters*, Esquires.

West-Riding. *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*; Sir *Thomas Maleverer*, Bart. Sir *William Lister*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, Sir *William Fairfax*, Sir *John Savill*, and Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, Knights; *John Hotham*, *Charles Fairfax*, *Henry Arthington*, *John Farrer*, *William White*, *Thomas Maleverer*, *George Marwood*, *John Robinson*, *Thomas Stockdale*, *Thomas Westby*, *John Bright*, *Thomas Boseville*, *Godfrey Bosevile*, and *John Ellis*, Esquires; and Capt. *Edward Briggs*.

YORK *City*. Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and Sir *Thomas Widdrington*, Knights; *Thomas Hodgson*, *James Hutchinson* and *John Vaux*, Aldermen; Sir *William Allanson*, and *Thomas Hoyles*.

Town

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Town of KINGSTON *upon* HULL *and C thereof.* Sir *John Hotham*, Knt. and Bart. *Th Raikes*, Mayor; *John Hotham* and *Peregrine ham*, Esquires; *Lancelot Roper*, *John Ber Joshua Hall*, *Nicholas Denman*, and *William ple*, Gentlemen.

Sir Hugh Cholmley deserts the Parliament.

April 3. A Letter to the House of Com from Sir *John Hotham* was read, intimating, Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, Governor of *Scarbrough* C had deserted the Parliament; but that, by his rections, the Castle was regained by Capt. *B* on which the House immediately expelled Sir *H* and disabled him from ever sitting as a Member t and ordered that he should be impeached of Treason, for falsly and perfidiously betrayin Trust reposed in him by the Parliament, falsi his *Protestation*, and revolting to the Popish *A* raised against the Parliament.

Nothing else occurring in the *Journals* from Time worth Notice, except the foregoing, shall pass on to the 18th of this Month; whe Parliament's Commissioners being all returned Earl of *Northumberland* had the public Th of the House of Lords given him for his pru Management in that Business. Lord *Clare* in his Account of the *Treaty* before given, has ed, that this Nobleman was one of the Susp amongst the Commissioners, as too much fav ing the Royal Cause; and that Mr. *Martin*, of the Committee of Safety at *Westminster*, opened a Letter from the Earl, at *Oxford*, to Lady. We find, by the *Journals*, that this A was highly resented by his Lordship; who, a Return, meeting Mr. *Martin* at a Conferen the *Painted-Chamber*, took him aside and quest ed him upon it; but Mr. *Martin* justifying he had done, the Earl caned him in the Presen several Persons. Mr. *Martin* complained of to the House of Commons; which produced foll

The Earl of Northumberland having caned Mr Martin for opening a Letter of his,

following *Message* to the Lords, brought up by Mr. *Glynne*, who said, An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'He was commanded by the House of Commons to tell their Lordships, that they had always been very tender of their Lordships Privileges, and very desirous of the Continuance of a fair Agreement between both Houses; and they were very confident that their Lordships would be as tender of the Privileges of the House of Commons. That they were informed, That, this Day, Mr. *Martin*, a Member of the House of Commons, appointed by them to be one of the Managers at a Conference, as he was returning from it, (as the Members ought to do without any Hindrance or Violence) was assaulted in the *Painted-Chamber* by a Peer of great Worth, the Earl of *Northumberland*; which they held to be a Breach of the Privilege of Parliament: And for this, he said, he was commanded by the House of Commons to desire Reparation.'

This occasions a Conference on Breach of Privilege.

The Earl being then in the House, stood up and said, 'That he submitted himself to their Lordships Judgment in this Business; but desired them to take his Case first into Consideration, and to get Reparation for the great Breach of Privilege done to the House of Lords, and the Injury to himself, by Mr. *Martin*, in opening his Lordship's Letter sent from *Oxford*, without any Authority; he being a Peer of that House, and then employed by it as one of the Committee to treat with his Majesty about the Affairs of the Kingdom.'

All the Answer the Lords gave to this *Message* from the Commons, at first, was, That they would send one by Messengers of their own. They then took into Consideration the Fact done by Mr. *Martin*, in opening the Earl's Letter without any Authority: And considering the Earl of *Northumberland* as a Member of the House of Lords, and as a Person of that Capacity he was in when the Fact was committed, being employed by their House to treat with his Majesty about the great Affairs of the King-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April. Kingdom, they conceived the Matter to be a great Breach and Violation of the Privileges of their Houſe; and it was reſolved to have a Conference with the Commons, the next Morning, concerning their Privileges, and to give them a Narration of the whole Buſineſs; and a Meſſage was ſent down accordingly. But though we are told, by the *Lords Journals*, that a Conference was held the next Day, and a Narration of the Fact made by their Lordſhips; yet it is not enter'd in either *Journal*, nor is there any more ſaid about this Buſineſs. It is probable the Affair was privately made up, and that Mr. *Martin* was prevail'd upon to give Satisfaction to the Earl, rather than diſoblige a Man of ſuch Conſequence to the whole Party.

April 21. Mr. *Martin* had dropp'd ſome Expreſſions, at a Conference, the Day before, which the Lords reſented: It ſeems that Houſe was not ſo forward in paſſing *Ordinances* for ſeizing the Eſtates of Delinquents, as the other; and, this Day, the Lords making ſome Objections to an *Ordinance* of that Sort, they recollected that Mr. *Martin* ſaid,

'I have ſomething to deliver to your Lordſhips, in the Behalf of the Houſe of Commons. It is true, my Lords, there are ſome Privileges belonging to the Houſe of Peers, and others to the Houſe of Commons; and this of raiſing Monies you have ever, ſolely, attributed to them; ſo as your Lordſhips have never refuſed to join with them, when they have brought up any thing that concerns the raiſing of Money: And, therefore, they expect you would not now refuſe to paſs this *Ordinance*, without giving them ſome very good Reaſons for it.'

The Lords debated this Matter for ſome Time, and afterwards appointed a Committee of ten Lords to conſider of a fit Way how to vindicate the Privilege of their Houſe, in this Particular: But it is probable this Matter was dropp'd as the former, for we find nothing more of it in the *Journals*.

This

The Civil War now breaking out again, with fresh Fury, in most Parts of the Nation, there are few Proceedings in the *Journals* of either House worth Notice, in this Month, which are not relative thereto. We shall not enter into a Description of the Battles, Sieges, Skirmishes, or other Military Transactions of these Times; any further than giving the Letters of Intelligence, which both Houses received from their Generals in different Parts. These being most unquestionably authentic, and very few of them ever printed, highly deserve the Public Attention; as either confirming, or setting aside, the Accounts given by later Historians.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

April 25. A Letter from the Earl of *Essex*, who then lay before *Reading* with his whole Army, was read, in the House of Lords, addressed to their Speaker, in these Words:

My Lord,

The Earl of Essex's Letter from before Reading.

I Hold it my Duty to acquaint the Parliament with some Passages, that happened Yesterday Morning and this last Night. In the Morning, about two of the Clock, Captain Kerr, *that commands Sir* William Balfour's *Troop, with two Troops more, being upon the Guard at* Caversham, *to take Care that no Provisions should be put into the Town, the General* Ruthen, *with about* 1500 *Horse and Dragoons, namely seven Regiments of Horse and two or three hundred Dragoons, surprized two Centinels; but, having the Alarm, our Troops charged with forty Horse, and so retreated to Colonel* Berkeley's *Regiment that was drawn over the Bridge. The Enemy charging, the Musqueteers gave Fire, and attack'd Colonel* Holborn *with his Musqueteers so resolutely, that they wheeled about and went away, our few Horse following them three Miles. Their Intention was to put forty Barrels of Powder into the Town.*

That Evening I sent out Col. Middleton *and Col.* Meldrum *with their Horse, and Col.* Milne *with four Troops of his Dragoons, to find out the Enemy. They fell in with them about Eleven at Night, at* Dorchester, *where the Life-Guard of Foot lay,*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

and the King's Standard, which they knew not of till afterwards.

If the Soldiers could have been kept from Plundering, they might have done much more; but there being four Troops of Horse there besides a Regiment of Foot, and being in Danger of having the Communication with Wallingford *cut off between them and us, they only routed most of that Regiment, took the Captain and Lieutenant of the Life-Guard, another Lieutenant, two of the King's Harbingers, one Cornet, which they say was Sir* Thomas Aston's, *and* 40 *other Prisoners, with* 150 *Horse.*

The King draws together all his Forces, Prince Maurice *being come, and Prince* Rupert *hourly expected at* Brill, *and is marching this Way; so that we expect this Night, or* Tuesday *Night which we rather conjecture, all their Forces to fall upon us: Besides,* Proclamations *are sent out to raise all the Country from sixteen to sixty; which, if the Parliament had sent out in that Kind, it would well have strengthened their Army.*

We doubt not but that God, which hath shewed us so many Blessings hitherto, will protect us out of these Storms that threaten us. We, that serve you, are in a hard Condition, losing all our Fortunes; and those that are violentest against the Parliament, have their Estates protected; if the Army be well paid, it is no Matter; if not, it must break; which I think, for the Number, is the bravest Army in Christendom. *I believe that the Time is thought long that* Reading *holds yet out. I assure you it is a very strong fortified Town, all pallisadoed, and strong in Out-Works.*

I am very loth to venture the Soldiers upon such Work, it being probable that many may be lost in storming; and, now especially, it were our great Hazard, the Enemy being so near, and we must be in a Posture to fight. But I doubt not, by God's Blessing, I shall give a good Account of this great Business. Sir William Waller *doth not come to me according to my Expectation and Order, though Prince* Maurice *be come from him, and turned upon me;*

me; so that I have now all the King's Forces to deal with, both without and within the Town, without the Assistance which I had Reason to look for. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Your Lordship's

From before Reading, April 24, 1643.

Humble Servant,

ESSEX.

The same Day the Commons, at a Conference, communicated a Letter, which they had drawn up to be sent to the Lord *Fairfax*, in the *North*, to which they desired their Lordships Concurrence; which was as follows:

My Lord,

A Letter of Encouragement from both Houses to Lord Fairfax.

YOUR Letter of the 17th of April *hath been imparted to both Houses of Parliament, who have commanded us to let you know, that they do join with you in their Thanks to God, who hath hitherto preserved you and those small Forces from the Power and Violence of such a Multitude of malicious and devouring Enemies; and, by your Means, hath kept some Part of that Country from their Fury and Rapine.*

They would have you rest assured, that they do very much value your Merit, Industry, and Courage expressed in so many great Services; and that they cannot manifest it in so plentiful Supplies of Money, Men, and Ammunition, as they would, and as the Danger, Necessity, and Importance of those Parts do require; which they desire you to believe not to proceed from any Neglect of that County, which they acknowledge to have contributed as much to the Support of the Common Cause as any County in the Kingdom, and have borne as great Burden of the Public Miseries.

The true Reason is, That, in this general Combustion of the Kingdom, the Contribution of most Counties are consumed in their own Defence; and the City hath been so extremely exhausted, that it can

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

hardly support the Lord-General's Army, unto which a great Arrear remains unpaid, both for Pay and Supply of the Magazine: Yet, in this great Difficulty, they have taken Care to assist you both with Men, Money, and Munition; and have, especially, recommended it to the Committee of Lords and Commons, both to procure such a Proportion of all, as the Affairs and Necessity of the State can afford, and to dispatch them to you with as much Expedition as may be.

Your Lordship is desired to tell Sir Thomas Fairfax *your Son, and the rest of your Commanders, that their Courage and Constancy are very much approved by both Houses; and that they will endeavour to find some Opportunity of a more real and advantageous Expression of the Esteem they have of their Service; and likewise to publish to all the Soldiers, that the Lords and Commons will not forget what they have done and endured for the Public Defence of Religion, and of the Kingdom; or omit any Occasion of giving them all due Encouragement to continue their Faithfulness in this Service for the future, and a just Recompence for that which is past. Other Particulars shall be communicated to you by your Agent, Mr.* White.

This is all we have now received in Command, we shall add nothing of our own, but our hearty Prayers for the Continuance of God's Protection and Blessing to you, and the affectionate Respects of

Your Lordship's

Westminster, April 25, 1643.

Friends and Servants,

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*,

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the House of Commons in Parliament.

The *Palatine* Family has been long laid aside in these Memoirs, the Parliament, during these Troubles,

Troubles, taking very little Notice of them: And the two Princes of that House, *Rupert* and *Maurice*, acting at this Time as principal Commanders in the King's Army, the Commons were much enraged against them. Some Letters had also been intercepted by the Parliament from the Queen of *Bohemia* to the King her Brother, and to her Sons; which that Princess was afraid would have so far exasperated them against her, as to deprive her of that small Allowance, for a Crown'd Head, which the Parliament had made her, and was then almost her only Support. To take off therefore any evil Notions they might have inculcated against her by these Letters, the Queen wrote the following artful one to the House of Commons; which, being a Singularity in its Kind, well deserves our Notice. It was directed to the Speaker, and was in these Words:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

SIR,

The Queen of Bohemia's Letter to the Speaker of the House of Commons.

HAving understood, by imperfect Reports, of the Interception of some Letters, which I wrote occasionally to the King and my Sons, whereat the Parliament had taken Offence; I cannot be at Rest 'till I have endeavoured to remove all such Impressions, as might deprive me of their good Opinion, which I so truly value, and have ever found favourable in my Behalf. I would therefore intreat you to acquaint the Honourable House of Commons, whereof you are Speaker, that albeit I cannot at present remember what I then particularly wrote, yet if any Thing did, perchance, slip from my Pen, in the private Relation between a Mother and a Son, which might give them the least Distaste, I intreat them to make no worse Construction of it, than was by me intended; having never admitted of any Thought or Resolutions, which hath not been sincere and constant to the Public Peace and Prosperity of the Kingdom.

With this Profession I desire the Honourable House to rest satisfied; that I may stand as upright in their

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Judgments as I am in my own Affections; and that thereupon, considering the Distress whereunto I am brought by the Wrongs and Oppression of mine Enemies, they would give them Occasion to rejoice by stopping those necessary Supplies, which, by the Love of the King my Father, and King my Brother, I have hitherto enjoyed, and without which I have no other Subsistence in this World.

I do therefore intreat the Honourable House to take my pressing Wants into their kind Consideration; and give such speedy Order for my Relief, that I may be kept from Inconvenience in a foreign Country.

Sir, I crave your Favour in representing hereof, and I shall ever remain

Your most assured Friend,

Haghe, April 13, 1643.

ELIZABETH.

After this Letter was read, it was ordered, to be entered in the *Journals* of the House of Commons, to be considered of on *Thursday* Morning next, this Day being *Tuesday*; and the Speaker directed to put the House in mind of it. But we find no farther Mention of it, neither on that Day, nor any succeeding.

A Conference on the Means for supplying the Earl of Essex's Army.

April 27. The House of Commons finding that their Armies were in great Want of Pay, they had a Conference with the Lords about it; in which they offered the following *Propositions*:

First, 'On account of the Lord-General's Letter, they considered that his Estate was all sequestred and seized upon, whereby he was utterly unable to bear the Charge now laid upon him; therefore the Commons desired the Lords to expedite the *Order*, formerly sent to them, for to put the Lord-General into Possession of the Lord *Capel*'s Estate.

'In the same Letter they took Notice, that the Army was in Danger to disband, unless Care be taken to supply it with Money; therefore the Commons desired their Lordships to join with them in sending

ſending a ſelect Committee of both Houſes to the City of *London*, this Morning, to communicate the Lord-General's Letter to them, except that Part of it concerning Sir *William Waller* and Delinquents Eſtates; and to offer to them Perſonal Security, of the Members of both Houſes, to raiſe a conſiderable Sum of Money for the Relief of the Army: Likewiſe to return the Common Council Thanks for the procuring of the late Sum of 44,000*l.* Alſo

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'To let them know, that the King is now drawing his Forces into the Field, and has made Proclamation for all, from ſixteen to ſixty, to come in to his Aſſiſtance; therefore to deſire the City to get their Forces in Readineſs to defend it, the adjacent Counties, and the Lord-General, if there be Occaſion. And

'To deſire the City to collect, ſpeedily, the Money that is behind on the Weekly Aſſeſſment; and, ſince the Burdens of voluntary Contributions are very great, and divers rich Men have done nothing in the Counties, the Houſe of Commons deſired their Lordſhips to paſs the *Ordinance* for ſeizing the Twentieth Part of the Malignants Eſtates in the Country, which would ſpeedily bring in a conſiderable Sum.'

The Lords agreed to ſend a Committee of both Houſes into the City, upon the Particulars aforementioned; but they objected againſt enjoining any Lords to give their Perſonal Securities for the procuring of Money, and left every Lord to do therein as he pleaſed. And as to the *Ordinance* for ſequeſtring all the Lord *Capel*'s, and that for the Twentieth Part of Malignants Eſtates, the Lords would take them into their Conſideration. The Earls of *Bolingbroke*, *Mancheſter*, and *Rutland*, were nominated, by the Lords, to viſit the City.

April 29. Many Judgments of Sequeſtration againſt Clergymen from their Livings, with the Addition

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

Addition of Imprisonment to their Persons, for preaching against the Proceedings of the Parliament, are entered in both *Journals* about this Time. And,

This Day, a Message was brought up from the Commons, importing, That whereas it had pleased God to give the Lord-General good Success in the Taking of *Reading* with so little Blood, the Commons had voted to have public Thanks given in all Churches and Chapels in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Suburbs, the next Day, for so great a Mercy which God had vouchsafed them.——Agreed to by the Lords.

A Thanksgiving for the Taking of Reading.

May 2. We now first meet with the Name of Mr. *Oliver Cromwell*, as an Officer of Rank in the Parliament's Army; a particular *Ordinance* being made concerning him and some more Officers, as *Charles Fleetwood*, *Edward Whalley*, and *John Desborough*: Names which will occur more frequently in the Sequel. The said *Ordinance* appoints, 'That whereas Authority was given, by a former, to Col. *Oliver Cromwell* and others, for the seizing of the Persons, Horses, Arms, Money, and Plate of Malignants and ill-affected Persons in the County of *Cambridge*, the Isle of *Ely*, *&c.*' It was now further *ordained*, That the said Col. *Cromwell*, *&c.* shall have Authority to seize their Corn and Cattle, as well as other Goods, under the Protection of both Houses of Parliament.

The *Dutch* had been, of late, much courted by the *English* Parliament, to prevent any Supplies of Men, Arms, or Money being sent over to the King's Assistance; but their Agent, Mr. *Strickland*, at the *Hague*, could not hinder them from selling Arms, or taking Pawns of the Queen's, or Crown Jewels, for that Purpose. At this Time the Parliament was alarmed with the Report of a naval Armament, then getting ready at *Dunkirk*, which was to act against theirs at Sea; to prevent which, the

the following Letter was agreed upon, by both Houſes, to be ſent to their High Mightineſſes with all Speed.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

High and Mighty Lords,

The Parliament's Letter to the United Provinces, deſiring a good Correſpondence.

WE are commanded, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, to make known to your Lordſhips, that ſeveral Advertiſements have been given to the Committee of the Lords and Commons, appointed by both Houſes to take Care of the Safety of the Kingdom on all Occaſions that concern the ſame, both at home and abroad, That the King hath hired divers Ships and Frigats of Dunkirk, *to the Number of* 24, *or thereabouts; and that he intended to employ them againſt the Fleet appointed by the Parliament for the Defence of this Kingdom. It was further informed, That two of theſe Ships, or Frigats, were permitted to paſs, out of* Dunkirk, *by the Admiral of your Lordſhips Fleet, by Warrant or ſome Command from his Highneſs the Prince of* Orange; *which Information that Committee ordered ſhould be communicated to Mr.* Strickland, *now reſident in the* Hague *by Authority and Inſtructions from both Houſes; which Direction of that Committee of both Houſes was likewiſe ſeconded by an* Order *of the Commons Houſe, and Mr.* Strickland *commanded to preſent it to your Lordſhips, as he hath done.*

We are to intreat your Lordſhips to believe, that the two Houſes have ſuch an Opinion of the Wiſdom and Juſtice of your State, that they cannot eaſily conceive you would do any Thing ſo much to the Prejudice of the Intereſt of yourſelves, as well as of the Kingdom; and the high Eſteem and Value which they ſet upon your Friendſhip and Correſpondency is ſuch, that they would not ſuffer any Report of that Nature to be ſpread in the World, but ſpeedily preſent it to your Lordſhips, as an Information only commonly ſpoken of, to the great Prejudice and Diſreputation of that near Union and Concurrence between this Kingdom and your State, which they moſt earneſtly

deſire

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

May 8. The Lords were ſtill much occupied in trying and condemning to Sequeſtration, Impriſonment, *&c.* many more of the Clergy, whom the Commons had accuſed of Diſaffection to their Cauſe, and Superſtition in Religion, as bowing to the Altar, and the like: To prevent which, the King put out a *Proclamation* againſt oppreſſing the Clergy, and intruding of factious and ſchiſmatical Perſons into their Cures; and inverting or detaining their Tythes and Poſſeſſions, by Order of one or both Houſes of Parliament, contrary to all Law and Juſtice. But this had no Effect, for they ſtill went on to ſequeſter Numbers of the Clergy; though, this Day, they were interrupted by a *Meſſage* from the King, occaſioned by a Bill lately ſent down to his Majeſty, for his Royal Aſſent to it. This *Meſſage* was introduced, as uſual, by a Letter to the Speaker of the Houſe of Lords, from the Lord *Falkland*, and was as follows:

CHARLES *R.*

The King's Meſſage concerning the Subſcriptions for the Relief of Ireland.

'HIS Majeſty hath, with great Deliberation, 'conſidered and weighed a Bill, lately pre'ſented to him by Sir *Robert King*, Knt. *William* '*Jephſon* and *Arthur Hill*, Eſquires, from both 'Houſes of Parliament, intitled, *An Act for the* '*ſpeedy Payment of Monies ſubſcribed towards the* '*reducing of the Rebels in* Ireland, *which yet re*'*mained unpaid.* And though, in theſe miſerable 'Times of Diſtraction, where there are Armies, 'pretended to be levied by Order of both Houſes, 'almoſt in every County of the Kingdom, and the 'good old Laws (the Obſervation whereof would 'preſerve the Public Peace) violated and ſuppreſ'ſed; when the *Treaty*, hopefully begun towards 'a happy Peace, is broken, and the Committee 'recalled by both Houſes, as if they intended no 'farther Overture for laying down Arms, but to 'decide all Differences by the Sword; the World 'will eaſily judge, whether his Majeſty might not well

'well deny to consent to any new Act of Parliament; 'the much Major Part of both Houses being by 'Force and Violence driven and kept from those 'Councils, and his Majesty himself not suffered 'to be present: Yet such is his Compassion of 'Soul towards his poor Protestant Subjects of 'that his Kingdom of *Ireland*, that he would willingly entertain any Expedient whereby it might 'be evident the Condition of that Kingdom might 'be relieved, and the Distractions of this in no 'Danger of being increased: And therefore his 'Majesty desires to be satisfied in these Particulars:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

I. 'How the great and vast Sums of Money already raised by the several Acts of Parliament for 'the Relief of *Ireland*, and which, by those Acts, 'ought not to be employed to any other Purpose 'than reducing the Rebels, untill they shall be declared to be subdued, have been expended? His 'Majesty having been informed, that no less than '100,000*l.* of that Money was, by one *Order* of 'one or both Houses, issued for the Maintenance 'of the Army, which hath given him Battle, under the Command of the Earl of *Essex*.

II. 'How his Majesty shall be secured, that the 'Money, which, by his Majesty's Consent, shall 'be raised for the Support of his Army in *Ireland*, 'shall not, for the future, be diverted from that 'Use, and employed against him in this Kingdom.

III. 'Whether it be just to compel his good 'Subjects, who have subscribed, to pay those Subscriptions, when as, at the Time they did subscribe, they conceived themselves absolved from 'their Undertaking, if at any Time they were content to forfeit the Sum mentioned in that Act: 'For his Majesty doth not conceive, that, by that 'Act, they are liable to pay the whole Subscriptions, but to submit to the Penalty injoined: 'And then his Majesty is not satisfied, that, by a 'new Law, it can be just to compel them to what, 'at the first, they undertook voluntarily; and, it 'may be, would not have undertaken but upon 'the Liberty they conceived to be then left them?

IV.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

IV. 'Whether the Power given by this new 'Bill to *Warner*, *Towse*, and *Andrews* (Persons of 'whose Integrity and Affections to the Public 'Peace, his Majesty is in no Degree satisfied) be 'not too great; any Certificate of theirs being 'Ground enough to extend the Estate of any Sub-'ject in *England*, whether he ever under-writ or 'not?

V. 'Whether all Lands, extended by Virtue of 'this Act, being to continue in Extent till all For-'feitures be satisfied, it may not be very prejudi-'cial to Creditors to whom those Lands are liable; 'and so the common Justice may be disturbed?

VI. 'Whether, by this Act, the Extents being 'not to be avoided, or delayed, for Omission of any 'Lands, the same may not be prejudicial to all 'Purchasers; and whether it be not against the 'known Course of the Law?

'His Majesty desires to receive Satisfaction from 'both Houses of Parliament in these Particulars 'with all possible Expedition; and then he shall 'give all the World an Account how sensible he is 'of the Misery of *Ireland*, and how desirous he 'is to find or embrace any Way for their Relief; 'the best, if not the only Way to which, his Ma-'jesty conceives, would be by a good and blessed 'Accommodation of the lamentable Distractions 'of this Kingdom; which, if the Matter of his 'Majesty's last *Message* were so entertained, as his 'Majesty hoped and expected, might, by the Bless-'ing of God, in a short Time be effected.'

May 12. On the Petition of a Clergyman to the Lords, complaining, That the Archbishop of *Canterbury* refused to institute and collate him to a Parsonage, it was *resolved*, That an *Ordinance* of Parliament should be passed, by both Houses, for sequestring all his Jurisdiction and Power of bestowing Livings, and to place them in the Power and Disposal of Parliament: That the King's Counsel should draw up an *Ordinance* to this Purpose, and when it came to be sent down to the Commons,

to

to desire that House to think of proceeding against the said Archbishop, upon their Charge of High Treason.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

The same Day the Lord-General, being in the House of Lords, represented the State and Condition of the Army, and the great Want of Money; which was the Reason why they could not march and take the Advantages which occurred to them: He likewise made a short Narrative of the Taking of *Reading*. Upon which it was *resolved* to return Thanks to his Excellency for his good Conduct, and also to have a Conference with the other House, in order to quicken them to consider of a certain Way of supplying the Army with Money; that it might not be again in the Straits it had been before, and lose the Opportunities that are offered; which might discourage the Lord General's Forces, and encourage the other Side.

The Lord-General further signified, that he gave Command to the Lord *Grey*, Colonel *Cromwell*, and other Forces in the *North*, to draw themselves into a Body, which had not been done according to his Directions; by which Neglect Convoys of Waggons and Ammunition were come to the King without any Interruption. On this the Lords thought fit to recommend the Examination of this Affair to the Lord-General, why his Commands were not obeyed, and where he found the Disobedience and Neglect, to recall his Commissions.

The next Day the Effect of this Conference was reported, That the House of Commons agreed with their Lordships in giving public Thanks to the Lord-General, and desired that the Speakers of both Houses might go to his Lordship for that Purpose: Also that they agreed in settling some certain Way of raising Money for the Supply of the Army; and desired that a Committee of both Houses might be sent into the City, to declare to them the Necessity of it. A Committee was sent accordingly.

A Committee ordered to go into the City, to solicit Money for the Army.

It

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

It is neceſſary to be remembered in this Place, that a Committee of Lords and Commons had, for ſome Days paſt, ſat conſtantly at *Haberdaſhers-Hall*, appointed purely for Advance of Monies; and, to all that would freely lend, the Parliament allowed 8 *l. per Cent.* But, to thoſe that would neither give nor lend, nor pay the Weekly Aſſeſſment, a Power was given to their Collectors to diſtrain, by Force, and publickly ſell the Goods for the ſpeedier Payment of it; for which Service Threepence in the Pound, and all other incident Charges, were allowed them for it: And this was practiſed, where they had the Power, all over *England*, as well as at *London*. Twelvepence in the Pound was alſo ordered to be paid to any Perſons who could inform where ſuch Goods were ſecreted or hid.

Order of the Commons, for puniſhing ſuch Commiſſioners of Sequeſtration, &c. as refuſed to act.

We have already taken Notice that ſeveral Gentlemen, nominated by the Parliament as Sequeſtrators of Delinquents Eſtates, had forborn, for different Reaſons, to execute that Office; and there appearing the ſame Backwardneſs in executing the *Ordinances* for raiſing Money by Aſſeſſments, the Commons found it neceſſary to make an *Order*, whereby ſuch Commiſſioners as ſhould refuſe to join, or ſign any Warrants, or to meet the reſt of the Commiſſioners, not being detained by Sickneſs, or other inevitable Impediments, ſhould be reputed Perſons ill affected to the Parliament; and that their Names ſhould be returned to the Houſe of Commons, in order that their Eſtates might be ſeized and ſequeſtred in the ſame Manner as thoſe of Papiſts and Delinquents.——But it does not appear that the Conſent of the Lords was ever aſked, or given, to this *Order*.

May 15. The Parliament's *Declaration* concerning the late *Treaty* was this Day agreed to by both Houſes, and ordered to be printed and publiſhed. The King's came out ſome Time before. Both

Both these, which are too prolix for our Purpose, may be found in the Collections of these Times†.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

The Lord-General delivered to the Lords divers Copies of Examinations, taken at *Bristol*, concerning a late Conspiracy there to give up that City to the King. This Affair is also fully discussed by *Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, and other Historians.

On the 9th of this Month there had been a Message sent up from the Commons to the other House desiring them to nominate and appoint a Committee of Lords, to join with a proportionable Number of the Commons, to be sent into *Scotland*, to intreat the *Scots* to give Aid and Assistance to this Kingdom, according to the Act of *Pacification*. This Day the said Request was again renewed by the Commons, but not yet agreed to by the other House.

At the same Time a Letter was brought up, ready drawn, with an Intent to send it into *Scotland*, as a Complaint against some *Scots* Lords, for assisting the King against the Parliament; which was agreed to by the Lords. This Letter was directed to the Privy Council of *Scotland*, and to the Commissioners for the Preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, and was as follows:

A Letter of Complaint to the Privy Council of Scotland, against the Earl of Roxburgh, &c.

Our very good Lords,

THE Lords and Commons of England, *now assembled in Parliament, in Pursuance of that Amity and Correspondency which they desire should ever continue between the two Nations, have commanded us to remonstrate unto your Lordships, That divers great Officers and Peers of the Realm of* Scotland, *namely, the Earl of* Roxburgh, *Earl of* Morton, *Earl of* Annandale, *Earl of* Kinnoul, *Earl of* Carnwath, *and Earl of* Lanerk, *have, during the Time of their Continuance here, made themselves Incendiaries between the King and his People; and have advised Acts of Hostility against the Subjects of this Realm, to their great Harm and Wrong; contrary to the Laws of the Realm,*

† *Husbands*, Fol. Edit. from p. 91, to p. 117.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

and contrary to the Act of Pacification, *as appears by a Letter under their own Hands, a Copy whereof they send here inclosed* *.

They do earnestly, therefore, desire your Lordships, That Order may be taken for speedy Proceedings to be had against them, and against such, within the said Realm of Scotland, *that shall assist, receive, and harbour them, or any of them; that so they may receive such Punishment for their said Offence, as by the said Act of* Pacification *is provided. Herewith we take our Leaves, and rest*

Your Lordships

Westminster, May 15, 1643.

Friends and Servants,

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the House of Commons.

May 16. An *Order* was made by the Commons, directed to all Justices of Peace, *&c.* all over *England* and *Wales*, to put the Statute, 1*mo Jacobi*, in Execution, That no strong Beer or Ale should be sold at above one Penny the Quart; and, of all other Beer, two Quarts for the Penny.

An Excise was also laid on at this Time as follows:

An Excise laid on Ale, Cyder, Perry, &c.

	s.	*d.*
For each Barrel of strong Beer or Ale, of 8 *s.* the Barrel,	1	0
For a Hogshead of Cyder or Perry	1	0
To be paid by the first Buyer. The same Tax was laid on the House-keeper, for Beer, Ale, Cyder or Perry, brewed or made for his own Spending.		
All Alehouse-keepers, or Inn-holders, that brew and sell strong Beer and Ale of their own, each Barrel,	2	0

For

* This Letter was intercepted, in the *North*, by the Lord *Fairfax*, and by him sent to the Parliament: But it is not enter'd in the *Journals*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

	s.	d.
For all Sorts of retailed Wines, over and above the Customs due for the same, to be paid by the first Retailer, a Quart,	0	2
On all Sorts of Wines bought here, besides Customs, to be paid by the first Buyer, for all he shall use in his own House, for a Quart,	0	1
The same to be paid by the Merchant for all the Wine he shall use in his own House, besides the due Customs.		
For a Barrel of six Shillings Beer sold, to be spent, as well in private as in victualling-Houses, to be paid by the common Brewer, or those that brew or sell the same Beer,	0	6
On all Tobacco, not of *English* Plantation, the Pound Value, not Weight,	4	0
For the *English* Plantation Tobacco, the same Value; both over and above all other Customs,	2	0

The Committee, who brought in these Rates, were ordered to proceed in raising of Money, by laying a Charge on other Commodities*.

May 18. At a Conference, this Day, the Commons communicated the following Letter they had received out of *Buckinghamshire*, containing an Account of divers Murders, Burnings, and Plunderings, committed by the King's Forces in that County. It was directed, *For our much honoured Friend Colonel* Hampden, *or, in his Absence, to Colonel* Goodwyn, *or* Bulstrode Whitlocke, *Esq*;

SIR, Aylesbury, May 16, 1643.

A Letter from Buckinghamshire concerning Plundering by the King's Troops.

WE cannot but acquaint you, that you may make it known to the House of Commons, if you please, in what miserable Condition this County is at this Time. The King hath sent into these Parts about 12 *or* 1400

* This is the first Instance we meet with of an *Excise*. The Plan (which is printed at large in *Husband's Collections*, p. 267, *&c.*) was vigorously pursued in the Protectorship of *Cromwell*, and established by Act of Parliament soon after the Restoration. How far it has since been extended every Body knows.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

1400 *of his Forces, commanded, as we are informed, by the Earl of* Cleveland, *who is accompanied with the Lord* Chandois, *Lord* Crawford, *Sir* John Byron, *and others of Note; who, contrary to the known Laws of the Land, pillage and plunder all the Towns where they come. They murder our Neighbours that make any Defence to preserve their Goods, one Woman, among the rest, big with Child, who could make no Resistance; they cut in Pieces what Houshold Goods they cannot carry away; they sweep clean divers of our Pastures, leaving no Cattle behind them; and that no Cruelty might be left unexercised by them, they have, this Day, fired a Country Village, called* Swanburne, *in seven Places of the Town, for no other Reason but because they were not willing to be plundered of all they had; and guarded the Fire so carefully, with all their Forces divided into several Parts, that no Neighbour durst adventure to come to quench it all the while it burned.*

Our Forces in this Garrison consisting only of Foot, saving one Troop of Horse, we were not able to encounter with the Enemy, nor relieve our Neighbours thus despoiled; but yet, to interrupt that which to them is a Sport, we drew out some Forces in their Sight, as far as with Safety we could; whereby they have not acted this Day all the Mischief they intended to execute before Night: But what they have left undone To-day, we expect, e'er they leave us, they will make up; for they are now so strong that they quarter at Buckingham, *and where they please in these Parts, without Resistance.*

We wish the Parliament's Army were so accommodated that this County, which hath hitherto been, and yet is, most ready to serve and obey the Orders *of the Houses, might not be destroyed, and made utterly unable to contribute unto it, before we can be relieved by it; but relying upon God's Providence, and the best Means which may be afforded to preserve it, we rest*

Your loving Friends
JOHN WITTEWRONG.
THOMAS TYRREL.

Upon

Upon this Letter the House of Commons pass'd some *Votes*, to which they desired their Lordships Concurrence, and that the said Letter might be speedily printed and published. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

1. 'That this House shall invite the several Counties under the Power of the Parliament, at the Moving of my Lord-General, to rise and join with his Excellency with all their Force and Strength, in the Maintenance of this Cause of Religion, for the Preservation of the *Protestant* Religion, and to prevent the setting up of *Popery* in *England* and *Ireland*; and to redeem themselves from the Rapines, Cruelties, Spoils, and Murders committed upon them by the King's Forces; and that Letters be sent from both Houses for this Purpose.' Votes of both Houses thereupon.

The Lords agreed to this *Vote*.

Next it was desired by the House of Commons, That Mr. *Jephson* might make a Narrative to the Lords of some Passages that came to his Knowledge at *Oxford* when he was there, *viz.*

'That when he was at *Oxford* he did see the Lord *Dillon* and the Lord *Taaffe* near about his Majesty, being great Papists, and keeping Correspondency with the Rebels in *Ireland*; and he calling to Mind what Letters he had seen in *Munster*, in *Ireland*, written to the Earl of *Muskerry*, a chief Rebel, under their Hand-writing, which was to this Effect: 'To exhort him to encourage the 'Rebels there to go on; and though the King's 'Affairs were now such that he could not be seen 'in it, yet, in the End, he would thank them for 'it.' Upon this Mr. *Jephson* said, he went to the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, to acquaint him therewith, and told him of this particular Business, and what dangerous Persons they were to be near the King. His Lordship said, *He that writ this deserved to be hang'd*; nevertheless nothing is yet done to remove them from the King's Council; but the Lord *Taaffe* is since sent into *Ireland* about the Affairs there.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

The Houſe of Commons taking theſe Particulars into Conſideration, and ſeeing the ſame Spirit here againſt the Proteſtant Religion, and the rooting out of Proteſtants, as is in *Ireland*, have made another *Vote*, wherein they deſire their Lordſhips Concurrence, *viz.*

2. 'That Proceedings ſhall be had againſt all Papiſts whatſoever, as Traitors, that have been in Arms or actual War againſt the Parliament, or have furniſhed the King with Horſe, Arms, Ammunition, or Money, to the Maintenance of this War.'

The Lords agreed with the Commons in this *Vote*, leaving out the Word *whatſoever*.

May 20. Another Conference was held between the two Houſes, the Effect of which was, That the Commons preſented to the Lords certain *Votes* they had lately paſſed, and left them to their Lordſhips Conſideration.

Reſolutions of the Commons relating to the Great Seal.

1. 'That the Great Seal of *England* ought, by the Law of the Land, to attend the Parliament.

2. 'That the Great Seal of *England* doth not attend the Parliament, as, by the Laws of the Land, it ought to do.

3. 'That, by reaſon of this, the Commonwealth hath ſuffered many grievous Miſchiefs, tending to the Deſtruction of King, Parliament, and Kingdom.

4. 'That it is the Duty of both Houſes of Parliament to provide a ſpeedy Remedy for theſe Miſchiefs.

5. 'That a Great Seal of *England* ſhall be forthwith made, to attend the Parliament for the Diſpatch of the Affairs of Parliament and Kingdom.'

This laſt *Vote* occaſioned a Diviſion in the Houſe, when the Numbers were 86 for making a new Seal, and 74 againſt it; in all 160 Members preſent: The moſt that have divided on any Queſtion for a long Time.

The Commons alſo added ſome Reaſons, upon which theſe *Votes* were grounded; which are not enter'd

enter'd. The Lords deferred debating on all these Matters till another Day.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

May 22. A *Message* from the King was this Day read in the House of Lords. It was directed to their Speaker, and was as follows:

CHARLES *R.*

The King requires an Answer to his Message of the 12th of April.

'SInce his Majesty's *Message* of the 12th of 'April, in which he conceived he had made 'such an Overture for the immediate Disbanding 'of all Armies, and Composure of these present 'miserable Distractions, by a full and free Con-'vention in Parliament, that a perfect and settled 'Peace would have ensued, he hath, in all this 'Time, (above a full Month) procured no *Answer* 'from both Houses; his Majesty might well believe 'himself absolved, before God and Man, from the 'least possible Charge of not having used his utmost 'Endeavours for Peace; yet when he considers 'that the Scene of all the Calamity is in the Bow-'els of his own Kingdoms; that all the Blood 'which is spilt is of his own Subjects; and what 'Victory soever it shall please God to give him, it 'must be over those who ought not to have lifted 'up their Hands against him: When he considers 'these desperate civil Dissentions may encourage 'and invite a foreign Enemy to make a Prey of 'the whole Nation; that *Ireland* is in present Dan-'ger of being totally lost; that the heavy Judg-'ment of God's Plague, Pestilence, and Famine 'will be inevitable Attendants of this unnatural 'Contention; and that, in a short Time, there 'will be so general a Habit of Uncharitableness 'and Cruelty contracted throughout the Kingdom, 'that even Peace itself will not restore his People 'to their old Temper and Security: His Majesty 'cannot but again call for an *Answer* to that his '*Message*, which gives so fair a Rise to end these 'unnatural Distractions. And his Majesty doth 'this with the most Earnestness, because he doubts

'not

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

'not but the Condition of his Armies in ſeveral 'Parts; his Strength of Horſe, Foot, and Artil- 'lery; his Plenty of Ammunition (which ſome 'Men lately conceived he might have wanted) is 'ſo well known and underſtood; that it muſt be 'confeſs'd, that nothing but the Tenderneſs and 'Love to his People, and thoſe Chriſtian Impreſ- 'ſions which always have dwelt, and, he hopes, 'always ſhall dwell, in his Heart, could move him, 'once more, to hazard a Refuſal: And he requires 'them, as they will anſwer to God, to himſelf, 'and all the World, that they will no longer ſuf- 'fer their Fellow-Subjects to welter in each other's 'Blood; that they will remember by whoſe Autho- 'rity, and to what End, they met in that Council; 'and ſend ſuch an *Anſwer* to his Majeſty, as may 'open a Door to let in a firm Peace and Security 'to the whole Kingdom.

'If his Majeſty ſhall again be diſappointed of 'his Intention herein, the Blood, Rapine, and Di- 'ſtractions which muſt follow in *England* and *Ire- 'land*, will be caſt upon the Account of thoſe who 'are deaf to the Motion of *Peace* and *Accommo- 'dation*.'

Ordered, That this *Meſſage* ſhould be communicated to the Houſe of Commons; and ſome Lords being appointed to draw up what was fit to be delivered to them beſides, at this Conference, as the Senſe of this Houſe about it, they ſoon after brought in the following:

'That the Lords conceive it neceſſary to ſend the Reaſons to the King, why the two Houſes of Parliament could not agree to the *Propoſitions* offered in his Majeſty's *Meſſage* of the 12th of *April* laſt. To expreſs, in that *Anſwer* to be made to his Majeſty, That their Endeavours had been, and ever ſhall be, to put an End to theſe unhappy Differences; ſo as their Religion, Laws, and Liberties might be ſecured. To deſire the Commons to appoint a Committee to meet one from

from the House of Lords, to consider of this whole *Message*, and to prepare such an *Answer* as they think fit to offer to the two Houses.' An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* having now lain a very long Time in the *Tower*, and no Process, as yet, brought against him by the Commons, his Accusers, tho' often urged to it by the Lords; an humble Petition was, this Day, (*May* 23.) presented to that House, from this fallen Prelate in these Words:

The HUMBLE PETITION of WILLIAM Archbishop of *Canterbury*,

Shewing,

THAT he hath neither Lands, Lease, nor Money; that the small Store of Plate he had is long since melted down for his necessary Support and Expences, caused by his present Troubles: That his Rents and Profits are sequestered, and now all his Goods taken from him, and no Maintenance at all allowed him; insomuch that, if some Friends of his had not Compassion on his Wants, and sent him some little Supply, he had not been able to subsist till this present; and now this Supply is at the last. Abp Laud's Petition for Relief.

He humbly prays that your Lordships would take his sad Condition into your Considerations, that somewhat may be allowed him out of his Estate to supply the Necessities of Life; assuring himself that your Lordships will not, in Honour and Justice, suffer him either to beg or starve.

And your Petitioner, *&c.*

The Lords seem to have been touch'd with Compassion on the hearing of this Petition, and immediately *resolved* to allow the Archbishop some Maintenance, out of Charity, to supply his Necessities; and further *ordered*, That the Petition should be recommended from that House to the Commons. The Commons returned for Answer, That they would send one by Messengers of their own;

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

own; but we hear no more of it from that Quarter.

A Meſſage being ſent up from the Lower Houſe, to deſire the Lords to ſit a while, for they had a Matter of great Importance to communicate to them: Soon after came up Mr. *Pym* to acquaint their Lordſhips, that the Commons had diſcharged their Conſciences by the following *Vote* which they had paſſed:

The Commons accuſe the Queen of High Treaſon.

'That the Queen had levied War againſt the Parliament and Kingdom; and, having diſcharged their Conſciences, they think it fit to diſcharge their Duty too; and ſaid, He was commanded by the Houſe of Commons aſſembled in Parliament, in the Name of themſelves, and of all the Commons of *England*, to accuſe and impeach, and he did accordingly now accuſe and impeach, *Henrietta Maria*, Queen of *England*, of High Treaſon. And they deſired their Lordſhips to iſſue forth Proclamations to ſummon her to appear before them, and receive a Trial and due Sentence for the ſame.' It is obſervable that theſe *Votes* were carried in the Houſe of Commons *Nemine contradicente*. The Queen had juſt before met the King at *Edgehill*, with a Reinforcement of 3000 Foot, 30 Troops of Horſe and Dragoons, and ſix Pieces of Cannon, beſides great Store of other Warlike Ammunition, which made the Houſe of Commons ſo exaſperated againſt her.

All that is entered in the *Lords Journals* on this extraordinary Impeachment is, *This to be conſidered of*; but we hear no more of it for ſome Time. There is a remarkable Letter of this Queen's, publiſhed in Duke *Hamilton*'s Memoirs, wherein ſhe mentions this Impeachment in theſe Words: After giving the Duke an Account of the good State the King's Army was then in, ſhe adds,

You will give a Share of theſe News to all our Friends, if any dare own themſelves ſuch after the Houſe of Commons have declared me Traitor,

and

and carried up their Charge against me to the Lords. This, I assure you, is true; but I know not yet what the House of Lords have done upon it. God forgive them for their Rebellion, as, I assure you, I forgive them from my Heart for what they do against me.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

May 27. The Committee for the Excise brought into the House of Commons a Charge of one Penny in the Pound on all Manner of Currants imported; upon Raisins of the Sun, one Halfpenny; *Malaga* Raisins, and all Figs imported, one Farthing; to be paid by the first Buyer, over and above all other Duties and Customs. Next an Excise was laid on all the different Sorts of Sugars, imported and refined here; likewise so much a Yard on all imported Silks, Sattins, *&c. &c.* by Name, a long List of which is enter'd in the *Commons Journals*; by which may be seen that they did not even then want a Taste for foreign Fineries.

An Excise laid upon Currants, Raisins, Sugars, Silks, &c.

This Day the Lords entered into a long Debate, concerning the *Votes* lately brought up from the House of Commons, about making a new Great Seal: And, the first *Vote* being debated, these Questions were put, Whether the Use of the Great Seal of *England* ought to be applied to the Commands of the Parliament, by the Laws of the Land? It passed in the Affirmative. The next, Whether the Great Seal ought to attend the Commands of the Parliament, according to Law? Resolved Negatively.

The Lords agree only to some of the Commons Votes relating to the Great Seal.

The second *Vote*, 'That the Great Seal doth not attend the Parliament, as by the Laws of the Land it ought to do,' being read, the Lords *resolved* to have a Conference, to be informed by the Commons wherein the Great Seal hath not been applied to the Commands of the Parliament. They likewise resolved to defer giving any Resolution as to the third *Vote* till the second was cleared.

The House then proceeded to the fourth *Vote*, 'That it is the Duty of both Houses of Parliament to

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

to provide a speedy Remedy to these Mischiefs;" and, after Debate hereof, the Lords came to this *Resolution*, somewhat different from the other, that it is the Duty of both Houses of Parliament to use their best Endeavours to provide a fitting and speedy Remedy.

The fifth *Vote*, 'That a Great Seal of *England* shall be forthwith made to attend the Parliament, for Dispatch of the Affairs of Parliament and Kingdom,' was put to the Question, and pass'd in the Negative.

To palliate these *Resolutions* to the Commons, the Lords appointed a considerable Committee to consider what was fit to be delivered to them, on this Subject, at the ensuing Conference.

The same Day another Conference was held between the two Houses; in which the Commons communicated to the Lords some Letters which they had received from their General in the *North*, the Lord *Fairfax*, and other Officers, concerning the taking of *Wakefield*, *&c.* and that they had voted a publick Thanksgiving for the same; which the Lords agreed to. These Letters, which were address'd to the Speaker of the House of Commons, were ordered to be printed and published *.

Lord FAIRFAX's Letter.

SIR,

A Letter from the Lord Fairfax to the Speaker, about his taking of Wakefield.

UPON the 6th of this Month I writ to you by a special Messenger, which I hope is come to your Hand: Presently after the Dispatch of that Letter, the News was brought me, that the Earl of Newcastle

* From the original Edition, published by *Edward Husbands*, *May* 27, 1643. In the Title Page it is called *A miraculous Victory obtained by the Right Honourable* Ferdinando *Lord* Fairfax, *against the Army under the Command of the Earl of* Newcastle, *at* Wakefield; and has the following remarkable *Introduction*:

'Whereas it has too often been seen that, in a great Appearance 'of outward Means, we are over confident; and that, in the Small-'ness or Diminution of the same, we are too low and distrustful; 'so walking by Sight, and not by Faith: The Divine Goodness and 'Wisdom, to wean us from this Corruption, and to teach us the con-

'trary;

castle *had possessed himself both of* Rotheram *and* Sheffield: *The Forces in* Rotheram *held out two Days Siege, and yielded up the Town upon Treaty; wherein it was agreed, that the Town should not be plundered, and that all the Gentlemen, Commanders, and Soldiers, (six only excepted, that were specially named) leaving their Arms, should have free Liberty to go whither they pleased: But, when the Enemy entered, they not only, contrary to their Articles, plundered the Town, but have also made all the Commanders and Soldiers Prisoners, and do endeavour to constrain them to take up Arms on their Party. The*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

trary Lesson, to walk by Faith and not by Sight, hath often wrought and given great Victories, by little Means, and unexpected Ways.

'A notable Pattern and Proof whereof is now seen in the Victory given at *Wakefield*; wherein God gave a happy Success upon great Disadvantage and Inequality, a far lesser Number, even less by half, overcoming a greater in a fortified Town, and the Persons taken far exceeding in Number those that took them; and all this not with the Loss of ten Persons. As this calls for the Eye of Faith, spiritually to discern the great Power and Goodness of God, which gives the Advantage of Victory on the Side of the Disadvantage in outward Force; so it calls upon us to maintain and continue a Course of Faith for the Time to come; and, by continually looking up to God, and Dependance on him, to expect from his Goodness and Bounty the like Blessing in other Times of Inequality and Disadvantage. And as this ought to confirm our Expectations for the future, so both now and hereafter, when God's Strength doth so visibly appear in our Weakness, we ought to give the whole Glory and Praise to his Strength, and none to our own Weakness.

'Thankfulness for Blessings past being an Invitation of Blessings to come; and God not failing to supply that, which he knows will certainly turn to his own Glory. Neither ought our Thanksgiving only to bound itself in Words, or in short Thoughts and Intentions; but it should especially be express'd in a hearty and real Conversion and Conformity of Soul and Life to him, whose Will ought to be the Rule of our Life, and whose Service is the End of our Being.

'Let it also be further observed, That both this and other Victories have been given on that Day, which hath been so much opposed by dissolute and Popish Persons, even to a Confutation of it by set Discourses and practical Profanations.

'And having given all the Glory to God, it is next just and commendable to take Notice of those whom God hath vouchsafed to use in his Service, as to encourage them in God's Work, and that Cause which God doth maintain by his own mighty and outstretched Arm, thus made good in this extraordinary both Deliverance and Victory.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

The Commanders at Sheffield *hearing of the Loſs of* Rotheram, *and ſeeing ſome of the Enemy's Forces advanced in View of the Town, they all preſently deſerted the Place, as not tenable with ſo few againſt ſo potent an Army; and fled away with their Arms, ſome to* Cheſterfield, *and ſome to* Manchester.

The Loſs of theſe two Places hath much elated the Enemy, and caſt down the Spirits of the People in theſe Parts, who daily ſee the Enemy increaſe in Power, and to gain Ground; and no Succours come to them from any Part: The Earl of Newcaſtle's *Army do now range over all the South-Weſt Part of this County,* * [pillaging and cruelly uſing the well-affected Party;] *and the laſt Week there was a Garriſon of Horſe and Foot laid at* Knareſborough, *where they begin to fortify the Town,* [and pillage and utterly ruin all the religious People in thoſe Parts, and round about them.]

On Friday *Sennight laſt three Troops and ſome other Forces, of which many were* French, *came from that Garriſon and pillaged* Otley, [and there barbarouſly uſed ſome honeſt Women of that Town;] *and, in their Retreat to* Knareſborough, *upon the Foreſt they took a Man and a Woman; the Man they wounded and beat cruelly, and before his Face raviſhed the Woman.*

Theſe Particulars I repeat, that you may the more clearly diſcern the Miſeries which this Country groans under; and here, about Leeds, Bradford, *and* Halifax, *being a mountainous barren Country, the People now begin to be ſenſible of Want; their laſt Year's Proviſions being ſpent, and the Enemy's Garriſons ſtopping all Proviſions both of Corn and Fleſh, and other Neceſſaries that were wont to come from the more fruitful Countries to them; their Trade utterly taken away, their Poor grow innumerable, and great Scarcity of Means to relieve them. And this Army, which now lies amongſt them to defend them from*

*This and the following Letter is printed in *Ruſhworth*; but the Introduction before given, and the Paſſages between Crotchets are omitted; as is likewiſe the Poſtſcript in Mr. *Stockdell*'s Letter, relating to the King's Commiſſion for plundering.

from the Enemy, cannot defend them from Want, which causeth much Murmur and Lamentation amongst the People. And for the Army itself, it is so far in Arrear, and no Way appearing how they shall either be supplied with Money nor Succours, as they grow very mutinous. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

Yet, upon Saturday *last, in the Night, I caused to be drawn out of the Garrisons in* Leeds, Bradford, Halifax, *and* Howley, *some Horse, Foot, and Dragooners, in all about* 1500 *Men, and sent them against* Wakefield, *commanded by my Son, and assisted by Major-General* Gifford, *Sir* Henry Foulis, *and Sir* William Fairfax, *with divers other Commanders: They appeared before* Wakefield *about Four o'Clock on* Sunday *in the Morning, where they found the Enemy, who had Intelligence of their Design, ready to receive them; there was in the Town General* Goring, *Serjeant-Major-General* Mackworth, *the Lord* Goring, *with many other principal Commanders and eminent Persons, about seven Troops of Horse, and six Regiments containing* 3000 *Foot; the Town well fortified with Works, and four Pieces of Ordnance; yet our Men, both Commanders and common Soldiers, went on with undaunted Courage; and, notwithstanding the thick Vollies of small and great Shot from the Enemies, charged up to their Works, which they entered, seized upon their Ordnance, and turned them upon themselves; and pursued the Enemy so close as they beat quite out of the Town the most Part of the Horse, and a great Number of the Foot, and made all the rest Prisoners; with them they took four Pieces of Ordnance and all the Ammunition then in the Town, and a great Number of Arms; and, amongst the Prisoners, General* Goring *himself, with divers other Commanders and other common Soldiers, in all about* 1500 *Men,* 27 *Colours of Foot, and three Cornets of Horse; of which I send a more particular Account inclosed. The more exact and particular Relation of this Service, as it is testified to me under the Hands of the principal Commanders employed*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

ployed in that Design, I send you inclosed for your better Information; and truly, for my Part, I do rather account it a Miracle than a Victory; and the Glory and Praise be ascribed to God that wrought it; in which I hope I derogate nothing from the Merits of the Commanders and Soldiers, who every Man, in his Place and Duty, shewed as much Courage and Resolution as could be expected from Men. When the Town was thus taken, they found their Number and Strength too weak to keep it and their Prisoners, so left the Place and marched away with their Booty.

In taking the Town we lost no Man of Note, and only seven Men in all; of which one was the Clerk of the Stores, an Ensign of Foot, and one Quarter-master of Horse, the rest common Soldiers; but many of our Men were shot and wounded. This Overthrow hath much enraged the Enemy, who threaten a present Revenge, and are drawing all their Forces this Way to effect it.

I perceive there are Succours sent to Lincolnshire *and other adjacent Counties, which, if they were here, might be employed to as much Advantage for the Public Safety, as in any Place. I desire our Condition may be seriously thought on by the House, and the Aids, often promised, may presently march away to us; and that Col.* Cromwell, *with his Horse and Foot, may also be ordered to march to me; that, being joined together, I may be able to draw this Army into the Field, and gain fresh Quarters for the Soldiers, and furnish ourselves with Powder, Arms, and Ammunition; which is now grown very scarce, and cannot be supplied untill the Passage to* Hull *be forced open, which now is possessed by the Enemy. If such Succours come not timely to us, we cannot long subsist, but must be forced to accept of dishonourable Conditions; which, besides the Loss and Ruin of this Country, will be a great Disadvantage to the general Safety; and, withall, some Course must be thought on to furnish some large Proportion of Money to defray the Soldiers Arrears, which*

which I beseech you to endeavour for them and me, who am, An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

Your most affectionate

Leeds, May 23, 1643. Friend and Servant,

FER. FAIRFAX.

P. S. *I send you a Letter inclosed from the Lord* Goring *to his Son General* Goring, *found in his Chamber at* Wakefield, *which will let the House see the Enemies great Desire to have this Army ruined; that they might, with their whole Force, march* Southwards.

Lord GORING's LETTER *to his* SON.

George,

'I Saw what you wrote to *H. Jermin*, and find 'that the Business will be put on that Way: 'But I am of Opinion that your General will never 'consent to it, the latter Way of dividing his 'Force, unless it be in the Country where he will 'abide himself; this will be tried To-morrow, at 'his Return hither, where the Queen expects 'him. In the Interim, if it were possible to give 'the Enemy any such Knock, or considerable 'Disturbance to the Country round about them, 'which hath not yet felt the Misery of their 'Neighbours, I would not doubt the *Treaty* might 'be resumed again; by which Means, and by no 'other, your Army may be set at Liberty to change 'your Stations, and do something that may be of 'Consequence indeed. I pray you think seriously 'hereof, and once in your Life follow the Advice 'of

Your best Friend,

April 17, 1643. *and dearly loving Father,*

GORING.

'After I had sealed my Letter I was advised to 'advertise you, that the Lord *Fairfax* never be-'lieved you would look into the Parts where now

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

'you are, but intended to draw back to the Place 'from whence you came, which made him so lofty 'in his Conditions; wherefore if you can (as my 'Authors propose) get between *Bradford* and *Leeds*, 'you will so annoy, divert, and separate them in 'all their Designs, as you may be sure to carry '*Halifax* and *Bradford* on that Hand, or *Leeds* on 'the other. Take this to Heart, and let General '*King*, with my humble Service, know thus much, 'not as new to him and the rest of you, but as that 'which all the wiseft and most knowing Men in 'the Country advise and hope; this will so hare 'them, and satisfy this Country, and will give such 'other Advantages as will render you happy and 'glorious too; whereas, on the contrary, all will 'fall flat, both in Power and Reputation, past 'Expression; her Majesty will be either unprovided 'of such a Convoy from thence as is fit for her, 'and the King's present Occasions, or else leave 'this Country naked to the Tyranny of the mer-'cilefs Enemy, contrary to Contract and all due 'Justice. This is the Opinion of others far bet-'ter able to advise than he that so heartily prays 'for you, and is

Yours,

York, April 17. 1643.

GORING.

P. S. 'Cudgel them to a Treaty, and then let 'us alone for the rest.'

A Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and other Officers.

On Saturday *Night, the* 20*th of* May, *the Lord-General gave Order for a Party of* 1000 *Foot, three Companies of Dragooners, and eight Troops of Horse, to march from the Garrisons of* Leeds, Bradford, Halifax, *and* Howley. *Sir* Thomas Fairfax *commanded in Chief; the Foot were commanded by Serjeant-Major-General* Gifford *and Sir* William Fairfax; *the Horse were divided into two Bodies, four Troops commanded by Sir* Thomas Fairfax, *and the other four Troops by Sir* Henry Foulis.

Foulis. Howley *was the Rendezvous, where they all met on* Saturday *last, about Twelve o'Clock at Night; about Two next Morning they marched away, and coming to* Stanley, *where two of the Enemy's Troops lay with some Dragooners, that Quarter was beaten up, and about twenty-one Prisoners taken. About Four o'Clock in the Morning we came before* Wakefield; *where, after some of their Horse were beaten into the Town, the Foot, with unspeakable Courage, beat the Enemies from the Hedges, which they had lined with Musqueteers, into the Town, and assaulted it in two Places,* Wrengate *and* Northgate. *After an Hour and a Half's Fight, we recovered one of their Pieces, and turned it upon them, and entered the Town at both Places, at one and the same Time: When the Barricadoes were opened, Sir* Thomas Fairfax, *with the Horse, fell into the Town, and cleared the Street; where Col.* Goring *was taken by Lieutenant* Alured, *Brother to Captain* Alured, *a Member of the House; yet in the Market Place there stood three Troops of Horse, and Col.* Lambton's *Regiment, to whom Major-General* Gifford *sent a Trumpet with Offer of Quarter, if they would lay down their Arms; they answered, They scorned the Motion; then he fired a Piece of their own Ordnance upon them, and the Horse fell in upon them, beat them out of Town, and took all these Officers hereafter mentioned, also, Twenty-seven Colours of Foot, three Cornets of Horse, and about* 1500 *common Soldiers. The Enemy had in* Wakefield 3000 *Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, besides Col.* Lambton's *Regiment, which came into the Town after we had entered it. The Enemy left behind them four Pieces of Ordnance, with Ammunition, which we brought away; and made the following Commanders Prisoners,* viz. *General* Goring; *Sir* Thomas Bland, *Lieutenant-Colonel to Sir* George Wentworth; *Lieutenant-Colonels* Saint George *and* Macmoyler; *Serjeant-Major* Carr; *Captains,* Carr, Knight, Wildbore, Rudston, Pemberton, Croft, Legard, Lashley, Kayley *and* Nutall; *Captain-Lieutenant* Benson;

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

'you are, but intended to draw back to the Place 'from whence you came, which made him so lofty 'in his Conditions; wherefore if you can (as my 'Authors propose) get between *Bradford* and *Leeds*, 'you will so annoy, divert, and separate them in 'all their Designs, as you may be sure to carry '*Halifax* and *Bradford* on that Hand, or *Leeds* on 'the other. Take this to Heart, and let General '*King*, with my humble Service, know thus much, 'not as new to him and the rest of you, but as that 'which all the wisest and most knowing Men in 'the Country advise and hope; this will so hare 'them, and satisfy this Country, and will give such 'other Advantages as will render you happy and 'glorious too; whereas, on the contrary, all will 'fall flat, both in Power and Reputation, past 'Expression; her Majesty will be either unprovided 'of such a Convoy from thence as is fit for her, 'and the King's present Occasions, or else leave 'this Country naked to the Tyranny of the mer-'ciless Enemy, contrary to Contract and all due 'Justice. This is the Opinion of others far bet-'ter able to advise than he that so heartily prays 'for you, and is

Yours,

York, April 17. 1643.

GORING.

P. S. 'Cudgel them to a Treaty, and then let 'us alone for the rest.'

A Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* and other Officers.

On Saturday *Night, the* 20*th of* May, *the Lord-General gave Order for a Party of* 1000 *Foot, three Companies of Dragooners, and eight Troops of Horse, to march from the Garrisons of* Leeds, Bradford, Halifax, *and* Howley. *Sir* Thomas Fairfax *commanded in Chief; the Foot were commanded by Serjeant-Major-General* Gifford *and Sir* William Fairfax; *the Horse were divided into two Bodies, four Troops commanded by Sir* Thomas Fairfax, *and the other four Troops by Sir* Henry Foulis.

Foulis. Howley *was the Rendezvous, where they all met on* Saturday *last, about Twelve o'Clock at Night; about Two next Morning they marched away, and coming to* Stanley, *where two of the Enemy's Troops lay with some Dragooners, that Quarter was beaten up, and about twenty-one Prisoners taken. About Four o'Clock in the Morning we came before* Wakefield; *where, after some of their Horse were beaten into the Town, the Foot, with unspeakable Courage, beat the Enemies from the Hedges, which they had lined with Musqueteers, into the Town, and assaulted it in two Places,* Wrengate *and* Northgate. *After an Hour and a Half's Fight, we recovered one of their Pieces, and turned it upon them, and entered the Town at both Places, at one and the same Time: When the Barricadoes were opened, Sir* Thomas Fairfax, *with the Horse, fell into the Town, and cleared the Street; where Col.* Goring *was taken by Lieutenant* Alured, *Brother to Captain* Alured, *a Member of the House; yet in the Market Place there stood three Troops of Horse, and Col.* Lambton's *Regiment, to whom Major-General* Gifford *sent a Trumpet with Offer of Quarter, if they would lay down their Arms; they answered, They scorned the Motion; then he fired a Piece of their own Ordnance upon them, and the Horse fell in upon them, beat them out of Town, and took all these Officers hereafter mentioned, also, Twenty-seven Colours of Foot, three Cornets of Horse, and about* 1500 *common Soldiers. The Enemy had in* Wakefield 3000 *Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, besides Col.* Lambton's *Regiment, which came into the Town after we had entered it. The Enemy left behind them four Pieces of Ordnance, with Ammunition, which we brought away; and made the following Commanders Prisoners,* viz. *General* Goring; *Sir* Thomas Bland, *Lieutenant-Colonel to Sir* George Wentworth; *Lieutenant-Colonels* Saint George *and* Macmoyler; *Serjeant-Major* Carr; *Captains,* Carr, Knight, Wildbore, Rudston, Pemberton, Croft, Legard, Lashley, Kayley *and* Nutall; *Captain-Lieutenant* Benson;

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

Serjeant-Major Carnabie, *and Captain* Nuttall *left wounded in* Wakefield, *upon their Engagements to be true Prisoners*; *Lieutenants*, Monckton, Thomas, Wheatley, Kent, *and* Nicholson; *Ensigns*, Squire, Vavasor, Maskew, Lambton, Ducket, Stockeld, Baldwinson, Davis, Carr, Gibson, Smathweight, Ballinson, Watson, Smelt, *and* Haliburton; *Cornet* Wyvill.

THOMAS FAIRFAX,	JOHN HOLMAN,
HENRY FOULIS,	ROBERT FOWLIS,
JOHN GIFFORD,	TITUS LEIGHTON,
WILLIAM FAIRFAX,	FRANCIS TALBOT.

Annexed to the foregoing Letter we find Part of a Postscript wrote by another Hand.

I had forgotten, in the Letter to the Speaker, to mention the new Commissions granted by the King; wherein his Majesty, according to the known Laws of the Land (as all Things are said to be done) gives Liberty to the Parties to whom the Commissions are directed, to plunder and take Men's Estates, so as they account for the Moiety of the Profit to his Majesty: This is confessed by the Captains now Prisoners here.

Your Servant,

From Leeds, May 23, 1643.

THOMAS STOCKDELL.

It is now about three Weeks since we had any Letter from you, or any Advertisement from the South.

An Order relating to the Regalia in Westminster Abbey.

June 2. On a Motion in the House of Commons, That the Dean, Sub-Dean, and Prebendaries of *Westminster* Abbey, should be required to deliver up the Keys of the Treasury there, where the Regalia were kept, that the Place might be searched, and a Report of it made to the House, the Question was put, Whether, upon Refusal of the Keys, the Door of that Place should be broke open? It passed in the Negative, 58 against

gainſt 37: But the next Day, the ſame Queſtion being again put, with the Addition of an Inventory of the Things there to be taken, new Locks put on the Doors, and nothing removed till upon further Order of the Houſe, it was carried by ſo ſmall a Majority, as 42 againſt 41, for breaking open the Doors.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

The important Town of *Newcaſtle* upon *Tyne* had been, for ſome Time paſt, in the Hands of the King's Forces; by which the City of *London* was much ſtraitened for Coals, the Works and Mines for digging this uſeful Commodity being all engroſſed by the Royaliſts, as well as the ſeveral Ports from which it was ſhipp'd off and conveyed to *London*. To remedy this great Inconvenience to the City, after many Conſultations and Conferences, a Scheme was publiſhed, put on the Footing of the Adventurers for *Ireland*; by which Means thoſe *Northern* Parts of *England* were to be as much a conquer'd Country as the other; and the Lands and Eſtates of many great Families ſhar'd out amongſt thoſe who would venture to advance Money for this Expedition. An *Ordinance* to that Purpoſe was paſſed by both Houſes, about this Time, and ordered to be printed and publiſhed.

Another for reducing of Newcaſtle.

June 5. A *Petition*, from the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, was preſented to the Lords: That of *Oxford*, was, at this Time, protected from the Parliament's Reſentment, by the King's Reſidence there with his Army; but what her Siſter ſuffered is beſt expreſſed in her own Words:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS now aſſembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Univerſity of *Cambridge*

HUmbly preſenteth to your Honourable Conſideration the ſad dejected State of the Univerſity; how our Schools daily grow deſolate, mourning the Ab-

Petition from the Univerſity of Cambridge.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

Absence of their Professors, and their wonted Auditories; how, in our Colleges, our Numbers grow thin and our Revenues short; and what Subsistence we have abroad is, for the most Part, involved in the common Miseries; how, frighted by the neighbouring Noise of War, our Students either quit their Gowns or abandon their Studies; how our Degrees lie disesteemed, and all Hopes of our public Commencements are blasted in the Bud; besides sundry other Inconveniences which we forbear to mention.

We cannot but conceive your Honourable Piety (out of a noble Zeal for Learning) will duly pity our sad Condition; and, as the present general Calamities give Way, afford us some Succour and Encouragement.

Your Wisdoms best know what Privileges and Immunities have been, in all good Times, afforded to the Seats of Learning and Professors of it; and, even in the Fury and Heat of War, Places of Religion and Devotion have usually, not only on both Sides, been spared from Ruin, but supported and esteemed as Sanctuaries. Hence it is that the Members of our University (by Charter confirmed by Act of Parliament) are expressly freed from all Preparations and Contributions to any War; hence it is that, in neighbouring Territories, where the Excise is most in Use, the University, with all their Students, are exempt.

May it, therefore, not be displeasing to your pious Wisdoms, if in all Humility we crave at your Hands a tender Consideration of our Case; that you will be pleased to exempt our poor Estates from all such Rates and Impositions; to vouchsafe such Freedom to our Persons, not giving just Offence, as may enable us the better to keep together, and daily to offer up our joint Prayers to God for a blessed Union betwixt our gracious Sovereign and you, and the Blessing of Peace upon the Land.

After this *Petition* the *Ordinance* of the Lords and Commons, formerly made, was read, for the calling an Assembly of learned and godly Divines, to

to be consulted with by Parliament, for the settling the Government and Liturgy of the Church of *England*; and vindicating and clearing the Doctrine of the said Church from false Aspersions and Interpretations. This *Ordinance* was referred to the Consideration of thirteen Lords, appointed as a Committee, to report the same to the House. This Assembly of Divines soon after met, to the Number of sixty-nine, in *Henry* VIIth's Chapel, in the Abbey of *Westminster*, where a Sermon was preached, before them and the two Houses of Parliament, by Dr. *Twist*, their Prolocutor; and, a Day or two after, a public Fast was kept by them *. What they did, when met together, will appear in the Sequel.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

Meeting of the Assembly of Divines at Westminster.

June 8. The House of Commons had been very busy, some Days, in tracing out a Plot against the Parliament, and securing the Authors and Contrivers of it. The Names of these Conspirators were, Mr. *Waller*, a Member of the House of Commons, and one of their late Commissioners at *Oxford*, Mr. *Tomkins*, Mr. *Chaloner*, and others; whose Design, being amply related by Lord *Clarendon*, *Rushworth* and other Historians; we shall confine our Account of it to what the *Journals* and the *Pamphlets* of these Times afford us. It appears from the former that

A Plot against the Parliament;

This Day, at a Conference, the House of Commons produced the Examinations they had taken concerning this Plot, to prove the Particulars of it, and also made some Observations thereupon. They then presented to the Lords the Form of an *Oath*, or *Covenant*, which the Members of their House, for the most Part, had already taken, except a few who desired some Days to consider of it; and this they requested the House of Lords to take also. They further brought up an *Oath*, or *Covenant*, to be taken by the whole Kingdom, for Discovery of such Designs as these, and to express a Detestation of

Which gives Rise to a new Oath or Covenant.

* The *Ordinance* for calling this Assembly is at Length in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 337, and in *Husband*'s, p. 208 whereby it appears that a vast Number more were named than met at this Time.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

of all of the like Nature. Lastly, they said it was to distinguish the good and the well-affected Party from the bad, and unite the former faster together amongst themselves.

This Affair, *Whitlocke* tells us, was long debated in the House of Commons; but was, at last, carried, and those Members looked upon as disaffected who were any way backward in taking of it. And, after another long Debate, it was ordered to be taken by all Persons, in City and Country; and those who refused it had the Mark of *Malignancy* fixed upon them.

Next the Commons offered some *Votes*, which had passed their House, to the Lords, for their Concurrence; as,

1. 'That a particular short Day may be appointed, wherein both Lords and Commons, with the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, *&c.* may meet and give public Thanks to God, for this Discovery and great Deliverance.' Agreed; and the 13th Instant appointed for the Parliament and City, and that Day Month for the whole Kingdom.

2. 'That a free Pardon shall be granted for all such Persons that have been in this Plot, and are not yet taken, nor have fled, as shall come in voluntarily before the 15th of this Month, and discover their whole Knowledge of this Design, and shall heartily join with the Parliament in Defence of the Kingdom.'

3. 'That it be recommended to the City to have a stricter Guard kept till this Business be settled; and that some better Course may be taken for securing the Prisoners, and keeping them in close Custody.'

4. 'That Letters be sent to the Earl of *Warwick*, to inform him of this Plot; and that the said *Oath* may be taken by all the Officers and Mariners through the whole Fleet.'

The Lords agreed to every one of these *Votes*, without any Alteration.

The

The Commons, also, thought fit to send a Deputation of their House into the City, as this Day, to make the same Narrative to them as was made to the Lords. Mr. *Pym*, being chosen Orator for this Purpose, delivered himself, at a Common-Hall, in these Words: *

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

My Lord Mayor, and you worthy Citizens of this famous and magnificent City,

Mr. Pym's Narrative of the Plot as deliver'd at the Guildhall.

'WE are sent hither to you from the House of Commons, to make known to you the Discovery of a great and mischievous Design, tending not only to the Ruin and Destruction of the City and of the Kingdom; but, in those Ruins, likewise to have buried Religion and Liberty. I might call it a strange Design (though, in these late Times, Designs of this Kind have been very frequent) because it exceeds others in divers considerable Circumstances of it; in the Malice of the Intention, Subtilty of Contrivance, Extent of Mischief, and Nearness of Execution; all which arose from the Wickedness of the Authors. Two others may be added; that is, the Clearness of the Discovery and Proof, and the Greatness of the Deliverance, proceeding from the great Mercies of God.

'I shall, in the opening this Design, take this Course for my own Memory and yours; and observe,

'*First*, What was in their Aims.

'*Secondly*, The Variety of Preparations.

'*Thirdly*, The Degrees of Proceedings. And

'*Fourthly*, The Maturity and Readiness for Execution.

'The Parliament, the City, and the Army, seem to be the three vital Parts of this Kingdom; wherein not only the Well-being, but the very Life and Being of it doth consist; this Mischief would have seized upon all these at once.

'The

* From the Original Edition, printed for *Peter Cole*, in *Cornhill*, near the *Royal-Exchange*; and said, in the Title Page, to be corrected by Mr. *Pym*'s own Hand for the Press.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'The City ſhould have been put into ſuch a Combuſtion, as to have your Swords imbrued in one anothers Blood: The Parliament ſhould have been corrupted, and betrayed by their own Members: The Army deſtroyed, if not by Force, yet for Want of Supply and Maintenance, that ſo they might have had an open and clearer Way to the reſt which they had in Propoſition; eſpecially to that main and ſupreme End, The Extirpation of Religion.

'I ſhall tell you, firſt, out of what Principles this did riſe; it was from the Aſhes of another Deſign that failed; that *mutinous Petition* which was contrived in this City; the Actors of that *Petition* being therein diſappointed, they fell preſently into Conſultation how they might compaſs their former End in another Way; that is, under Pretence of ſecuring themſelves by Force againſt the *Ordinances* of Parliament, and, under Pretence of procuring Peace, they would have made themſelves Maſters of the City, yea of the whole Kingdom; and they would have ruined and deſtroyed all thoſe that ſhould have interrupted them in their miſchievous Intentions.

'The firſt Step in their Preparation was, To appoint a Committee that might often meet together, and conſult how they might compaſs this wicked End.

'Their next was, That they might enable that Committee with Intelligence from both Armies, as well thoſe on the King's Side, (as they call themſelves, though we be of the King's Side indeed) as thoſe that are raiſed by the Parliament; eſpecially they were careful to underſtand the Proceedings of Parliament, that ſo, by the Advantage of this Intelligence, they might the better effect that which they had in Project, and find the readieſt and the neareſt Ways to it.

'After they had thus provided for Intelligence, then how to procure Power and Countenance to this Action, by ſome appearing Authority from his

his Majesty: For which Purpose they projected to get a Commission from the King, whereby many of themselves, and of those that were of their own Consort, should be established a Council of War in *London* and Parts adjacent, with Power to raise Forces, make Provisions of Ammunition, and of other Kind of Arms, and to give Authority to the leading and conducting of those Forces, and to raise Money for the Maintenance of them; and, as it is expressed in the Commission, for the Destruction of the Army under the Command of *Robert* Earl of *Essex*, raised by Authority from the two Houses of Parliament.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Having laid these Grounds, I shall, in the next Place, discover to you those that should have been Actors and Agents in this Business, their several Qualifications and Relations.

'The first Sort was some Members of the City, whereof there were divers, you shall hear the Names out of the Proofs; the next was (in their Pretence, as they gave out) Members of the two Houses of Parliament; the third Sort was, two Gentlemen, Mr. *Waller* and a Brother-in-Law of his, Mr. *Tomkins*, that were to be Agents betwixt the Parliament and the City, as they pretended; a fourth Sort was, those that were to be Messengers to convey Intelligence from this Place to the Court at *Oxford*, and to other Places where there should be occasion; and the fifth and last consisted but in one Man, that we yet discover, and that was the Lord of *Falkland*, that kept Correspondency with them from the Court: These were to be the Actors in this mischievous Design.

'They began then to think upon some other Courses of very great Advantage to themselves.

'The first was of Combination; how they might be more closely conjoined one to another, and how they might be more secure from all others that were not of the same Party; and, for this Purpose there was devised a Protestation of Secrecy, whereby, as they were Christians, they did bind them-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

themſelves to keep one anothers Counſel, not to reveal that which they had Knowledge of, which they were truſted with: And the ſecond was, a Warineſs in diſcovering the Buſineſs to any of thoſe who were to be brought into the Plot, for tho' they came in amongſt them to be of them, they would not truſt all of their own Body; but they took this wary and ſubtile Courſe, that no one Man ſhould acquaint above two in this Buſineſs, that ſo, if it came to Examination, it ſhould never go farther than three, by the ſame Party that diſcovered it; and then thoſe two had the like Power, that any one of them might diſcover it to two others, that ſo ſtill it might be confined within the Number of three: Then there was a ſpecial Obligation, as was pretended by Mr. *Waller*, which he had made to thoſe that he ſaid were Members of both Houſes of Parliament, and conſenting to this Plot; but that is yet but a Pretence, no Names or Parties are known.

'After they had provided thus for their Combination, and for their Security, then, in the next Place, they thought of ſome Means of Augmentation, how they might increaſe their Numbers, and draw in others to come to be of their Party; and for this they did reſolve to uſe all the Art and Subtilty to irritate Men's Minds againſt the Parliament; they found out thoſe that thought themſelves moſt heavily burdened with theſe Taxes; they did cheriſh all that had any Diſcontents about the Aſſeſſment, adviſing them to repair to the Committee for Eaſe, which they knew would be difficult to obtain; and that they, being diſappointed, would be more enraged, and the apter to join with them in this Plot.

'From this Care of Augmentation, they went, in the next Place, to find out ſome Means of Diſcovery; that they might know how far their Party did extend, who were of their Side, and who were againſt them; and, for this Purpoſe, they did deviſe that there ſhould be a Survey of all the Wards,

Wards, nay of all the Parishes, within the City of *London*, the Suburbs and Places adjoining in every Parish, to observe those that were for them, whom they called Right Men; and others that were against them, whom they called Averse Men; and then a third Sort, whom they called Neutrals and Indifferent Men; and they appointed several Persons, that were trusted with this Survey and Enquiry, to find out these several Degrees and Sorts in every Parish.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Thus far this Design seems to be but a Work of the Brain, to consist only in Invention and Subtilty of Design; but the other Steps and Degrees, which I shall now observe to you, will make it to be a Work of the Hand, to bring it somewhat nearer to Execution.

'The first Step that came into Action and Execution was, That they procured this Commission, which they had before designed and endeavoured to obtain: Now they had obtained a Commission, as I told you before, to establish certain Men, seventeen in Number; their Names are there expressed; you shall hear them read to you; they were to be a Council of War here within the City; these seventeen Men had Power to name others to themselves, to the Number of twenty-one; and they should be enabled both to appoint, not only Colonels and Captains, and other inferior Officers of an Army, but to appoint and nominate a General; they had Power to raise Men, to raise Arms and Ammunition, and to do all those other Things that I told you before; and to lay Taxes and Impositions, to raise Money, and to execute Martial Law.

'When they had gone thus far, in the next Place, they did obtain a Warrant from the King; and this was to Mr. *Chaloner*, that he might receive Money and Plate of all those, that, either by voluntary Contribution or Loan, would furnish the King, in this Necessity of his, as they called it; and thereby the King was obliged to the Repayment of it: This was obtained.

'By

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'By this cometh in the List; and what was before Part of the Design, cometh now into Act; the Citizens that were trusted with framing of this List, brought it in, except in some few Parishes, under those Heads of Discovery that I formerly told you of; that is, in every Parish who were Right, who were Indifferent and Neutral, and who were Averse; and those were brought to Mr. *Waller*'s House. After they had delivered that List, the Citizens then declared themselves that now they had done their Part; as they had discovered to them a Foundation of Strength, they did expect from them again a Foundation of Countenance and Authority, that was from both Houses of Parliament; and they did declare, that they would proceed no farther till they knew the Names of those Members of both Houses that should join with them, and should undertake to countenance this Business. Mr. *Waller* made this Answer, that he did assure them that they should have Members of both Houses, both Lords and Commons, to join with them; that he himself was but their Mouth; that he spoke not his own Words, but their Words; that he was but their Agent, and did their Work; that they should have of the ablest, of the best, and of the greatest Lords, and the greatest Number; nay, that they should pick and chuse; that they could not wish for a Lord, whom he doubted not but to procure them: This was the Vanity of his Boasting to them to draw them on, and to encourage them in this Plot. This being now done, and propounded by the Citizens on their Part, Mr. *Waller* propounded from the Lords divers Quæries and Questions which had been framed, as he said, by the Lords and Commons; and, in their Name, he did present them that were for the Removal of Difficulties, of some Obstructions, that might hinder this Work; those Quæries were delivered upon *Friday* was Se'nnight to some of the Citizens, and, upon the *Saturday* Morning, (that was *Saturday* was Se'nnight) they were returned back again with Answers.

'I

'I shall now relate to you both the Quæries and the Answers that were returned by those of the City. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'The first Quære was, What Number of Men there were armed?

'The Answer to this was, That there was a third Part well armed, a third Part with Halberts, and another third Part with what they could get; with what came to hand.

'The second Quære was, In what Places the Magazines were laid?

'The Answer to that was, At Alderman *Fowk*'s House, at *Leadenhall*, and at *Guildhall*.

'The third Quære was, Where the Rendezvous should be?

'The Answer was, At all the Gates, the Places of the Magazines, in *Cheapside*, in the *Exchange*, and at what other Places the Lords should think fit.

'The fourth Quære was, Where was the Place of Retreat, if there should be Occasion?

'The Answer was, That they had *Banstead Downs*, they had *Blackheath*, in Proposition; but they did refer the Conclusion of the Place to the Lords.

'The fifth was, What Colours there should be?

'To this it was answered, That at every Rendezvous there should be Colours.

'A sixth Consideration was, By what Marks and Tokens they should be distinguished from others, and know their Friends from their Enemies?

'To this it was answered, That they should have white Ribbons or white Tape.

'Then, in the seventh Place, it was asked, What Strength there was within the Walls, and what Strength without the Walls?

'To this it was answered, That, within the Walls, there was for one with them, three against them; but, without the Walls, for one against them, there were five for them.

'The eighth was, What was to be done with the *Tower*?

'The

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'The Answer was, That they could conclude nothing in that Point.

'The ninth was, Where the chief Commanders dwelt?

'To that they made this Answer, That every Parish could tell what new Commanders and Captains they had, and who of the Militia dwelt in it.

'The tenth and the last was, What Time this should be put in Execution?

'To that the Answer was, That the Time was wholly left to the Lords.

'After all these Quæries, thus propounded and answered, Mr. *Waller* told them, That he would acquaint the Lords with those *Answers* that he had received from them to their Quæries; and wished them not to be troubled, though the Lords did not yet declare themselves, for they could do them as good Service in the House.

'Being proceeded thus far, they came then to some Propositions which should be put in Execution, and they were these:

First, 'That they would take into their Custody the King's Children that were here.

The *second* was, 'That they would lay hold of all those Persons that they thought should be able to stand in their Way, or to give them any Impediment, or at least of some considerable Number of them; it is unlike that all were named, but some were named; of the Lords House there was named my Lord *Say* and my Lord *Wharton*; and besides my Lord Mayor, whom they took into their Consideration as the Head of the City, there was named of the House of Commons, Sir *Philip Stapylton*, Mr. *Hampden*, Mr. *Strode*; and they did me the Honour and Favour to name me too.

'When they had taken into Consideration the Surprizal of these Members of both Houses, they did take into their further Resolution, that, with my Lord Mayor, should have been seized all your Committee of Militia; they would not spare one of them.

'They

'They intended further, that they would release all Prisoners that had been committed by the Parliament; that they would seize upon the Magazines; that they would make a *Declaration* to satisfy the People. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'There are no Designs, be they never so ill, but they do put on a Mask of some Good, for betwixt that that is absolutely and apparently ill, there is no Congruity with the Will of Man; and therefore the worst of Evils are undertaken under a Shadow and a Shew of Goodness: A *Declaration* must be set out, to make the People believe that they stood up for the Preservation of Religion, for the Preservation of the King's Prerogative, of the Liberties of the Subject, of the Privileges of Parliament; and of these 1000 Copies were to be printed; they were to be set upon Posts and Gates in the most considerable and open Places; and they were to be dispersed, as much as they could, thro' the City against the Time it should be put in Execution: This was done upon *Saturday* last was Se'nnight, in the Morning.

'Then, in the next Place, they thought fit to give Intelligence to the Court of what Proceedings they had made here; and thereupon Mr. *Hazel* was sent to *Oxford*, that very *Saturday* in the Afternoon, from Mr. *Waller*'s House. There were two Messages sent by him, for this main Design they would not trust in Writing: The first Message was from Mr. *Waller*, That he should tell my Lord of *Falkland*, that he would give him a more full Notice of the great Business very speedily: The other Message was from Mr. *Tomkins*, and that was, That the Design was now come to good Maturity; that they had so strong a Party in the City, that tho' it were discovered, yet they would be able to put it in Execution: They promised to give Notice to the King of the very Day, and, if it were possible, of the very Hour, wherein this should be put in Execution; and then they did desire, when they had seized upon the Outworks, that there might some Party of the King's Army come

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

up within fifteen Miles of the City, who, upon Knowledge of their Proceedings, must be admitted into the City. These were the four Points upon which the Message did consist, which was sent, from Mr. *Tomkins* to my Lord of *Falkland*, by Mr. *Hazel*. To both these Messages my Lord of *Falkland* returned an Answer by Word of Mouth; (they kept themselves so closely that they durst not venture to write) and he bid the Messenger tell Mr. *Waller*, Mr. *Tomkins*, and Mr. *Hambden*, (a Gentleman that was sent up with a Message from the King, and remained here in Town to agitate this Business, and made that Use of his being here in Town) That he could not well write, and did excuse himself; but prayed them that they would use all possible Haste in the main Business.

'Mr. *Waller* having plotted it, and brought it on thus far, now he began to think of pushing it further; and, the *Tuesday* following this *Saturday*, which was *Tuesday* was Se'nnight in the Evening, after he came home to his Lodging, Mr. *Tomkins* and he being together, he told him, That the very next Morning, that was *Wednesday*, the Fast-Day, he should go to my Lord of *Holland*, and acquaint him with this Plot, and discover so much to him as he thought fit; that he himself would go to some other Lords, and do the like. This was the *Tuesday* Night, in which Conference they put on that Confidence in Expectation of Success in this Plot, that Mr. *Waller* broke out with a great Oath to affirm, That if they did carry this throughout, then they would have any thing. This he spake to Mr. *Tomkins* with a very great deal of Earnestness and Assurance. So far they went on in Hope and Expectation, but here they were cut short: That very Night there were Warrants issued upon some Discoveries that were made of this Plot, to the Lord Mayor, and to the Sheriffs here; which they did execute with so much Diligence and Care of the Good of the City, that the next Morning, when Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Waller* should have gone about their Business, they were ap-

apprehended, and the reſt of the Citizens, divers of them, but ſome eſcaped. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Thus far I have diſcovered to you the Materials and the Lineaments of this miſchievous Deſign; you ſhall now be pleaſed to hear the Proofs and the Confeſſions out of which this Narration doth ariſe, and that will make all this good to you that I have ſaid. And, after thoſe are read, I ſhall then tell you what hath been done ſince in the Houſe of Commons, ſomewhat in the Houſe of Lords, and what elſe is in Propoſition to be offered to you from the Houſe of Commons; but I ſhall deſire you firſt, that you may be fully convinced of the great Goodneſs of God in Diſcovery of this Plot, and the Truth of theſe Things that I have ſpoken to you, that you will hear the Evidence of the Proofs; and then we ſhall go on to thoſe other Things which we have in Charge.

The Proofs being read, Mr. *Pym* proceeded thus:

'Gentlemen, we have held you long, you are now almoſt come to the End of your Trouble; I am to deliver to you ſome ſhort Obſervations upon the whole Matter, and then to acquaint you with the Reſolutions thereupon, taken in the Houſe of Commons; and to conclude with a few Deſires from them to you.

'The Obſervations are theſe:

Firſt, 'I am to obſerve to you the Contrariety betwixt the Pretences, with which this Deſign hath been maſked, and the Truth: One of the Pretences was Peace; the Truth was Blood and Violence: Another of the Pretences was, the Preſerving of Property; the Truth was, the Introducing of Tyranny and Slavery, which leaves no Man Maſter of any Thing he hath.

'A *ſecond* Obſervation is this: The unnatural Way by which they meant to compaſs this wicked Deſign, that was, To deſtroy the Parliament by the Members of Parliament; and then, by the Carcaſs and Shadow of a Parliament, to deſtroy the Kingdom: What is a Parliament but a Carcaſs

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

when the Freedom of it is suppressed? When those shall be taken away by Violence, that can, or will, oppose and stand in the Way of their Intentions? The High Court of Parliament is the most certain and constant Guardian of Liberty; but if it be deprived of its own Liberty, it is left without Life or Power to keep the Liberty of others. If they should bring a Parliament to be subject to the King's Pleasure, to be correspondent, as they call it, to his Will, in the midst of such evil Councils which now are predominant, there would little or no Cure be left; but then all Things that are most mischievous would seem to be done by Law and Authority.

'The *third* Observation is this: With what an evil Conscience these Men undertook this Work: They that pretended to take Arms to defend their own Property, obtained a Commission to violate the Property of others: They would take the Assertion of the Laws of the Land, but assumed to themselves such a Power as was most contrary to that Law; to seize upon their Persons without due Process; to impose upon their Estates without Consent; to take away some Lives by the Law Martial; and, besides all this, without any Commission, they intended to alter the Government of the City, which is now governed by your own Council, by a Magistrate chosen by yourselves, then to be governed by Violence.

The *fourth* Observation is this: That the mischievous Effect of this Design would not have ceased in the first Night's Work; all the godly Part in the Kingdom, all faithful Ministers especially, would have been left not only to the Scorn and Reproach, but to the Hatred, Malice, and Cruelty of the Papists and Malignants.

'The *fifth* and last Observation I shall make to you, is this, That this Matter was prosecuted in Part, and agitated and promoted by those that were sent from the King, and seemed to be Messengers of *Peace*; and while we should be amused with the Pretences of gracious *Messages* to propose *Peace*, this villainous Project, which should have set you all

all in Blood, was promoted by those Messengers, and should have been put in Execution very shortly after. This is all I shall trouble you with by way of Observation. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'The Matters resolved on in the House of Commons are these Things:

'*First*, That there may be public Thanksgiving to God, both in the City and throughout the Kingdom, for this great Deliverance; that a near Day be appointed for the City, the Parliament, and the Parts adjacent, and a convenient Day for other Parts of the Kingdom.

'The *next* Thing resolved on was, That the House of Peers should be made acquainted with these Proofs, and with all this Discovery; which hath been done accordingly.

'It was likewise *resolved*, That there should be a *Covenant* made, whereby we should both testify our Detestation of this mischievous Plot, and join ourselves more closely in the Maintenance of the common Interest of the Church and Common-Wealth, in Religion and Liberty, which are still in great Danger, and would have been utterly subverted, if this Project had taken Effect.

'It was resolved in the *fourth* Place, which is now partly executed; That this should be communicated to you of the City; that so as you have a great Part in the Blessing, you may do your Part in the Duty of Thankfulness, together with us.

'It is further *resolved*, That it shall be communicated to the Army, that they likewise take Notice of this great Mercy of God, and join with us, both in the Thanksgiving and in the Protestation and Covenant, as we shall likewise desire you of the City to do.

'Then we are commanded to give Thanks to my Lord Mayor, to the Sheriffs, and to the rest of the Officers of the City, for their great Care in the apprehending of these Persons, in guarding the Peace and Quiet of the City.

'We are likewise to give Thanks to those Gentlemen, that have had the Custody of these Prisoners.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

ners. We know it cannot but be a Trouble to them; but there was no Means to keep them ſafe from Meſſages one to another, and from Speeches, but by ſuch a Way of putting them in honeſt Mens Hands; therefore the Houſe of Commons have commanded us to give them ſpecial Thanks for their undertaking this Care, and to aſſure them that they will ſee them fully recompenſed for all the Trouble and Charge they ſhall undergo by it.

'And we are to give you Thanks, which are the Citizens of this City, for your good Affections to the Public Cauſe, and for your continual Bounty for the Support of it.

'Thus far we are enjoin'd by the *Reſolution* of the Houſe: Now we are further to entreat you to hear both the *Covenants*; you ſhall thereby know to what we have bound ourſelves, and to what we deſire you ſhould be bound. There are two *Covenants*; that is, one proper for the Houſes of Parliament, which hath been taken in the Houſe of Commons by all the Members, even by thoſe Gentlemen that are named in the Examinations to have been privy to this Plot, which they all have diſavowed; and the other *Covenant* is to be taken by all the other Part of the Kingdom; by the Citizens, by the Army, and the reſt of the People generally in all Places.

'The Draught of theſe two *Covenants* we ſhall communicate to you; the Houſe of Lords they have had them already, and have taken them into Conſideration; and we hear they do reſolve, That what is appointed for them ſhall be taken by the Members of that Houſe.

'We are further to deſire you, That you would co-operate with the Divine Providence, in God's great Mercy to this City, and the whole Kingdom: God doth not only do Good, but thereby gives Aſſurance that he will do Good; his Mercies they are Comforts for the preſent, they are Pledges for the future; but yet our Care muſt not ceaſe.

'We are to deſire that you would keep your Guards, and look well to your City; and that you would

would find out these evil Members that are among you, as near as may be; that so, for the Time to come, this Plot may be prevented, as hitherto it hath been stopped; for out of doubt all the Malignity is not drawn out of them, though the Opportunity is hindered for the present putting it in Execution.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'I am to tell you further, That, in Desire to win those that shall be taken with Remorse for this wicked Design and Conspiracy, it is *resolved*, That if any Man shall come in before the 15th Day of this present *June*, and freely confess his Fault, and what he knows of this Conspiracy, that he shall have a full, free, and plenary Pardon for the Time to come, except those that are already taken or fled; I say, those that come in voluntarily shall be pardoned.

'Your Care, and our Care, they will be all little enough; we hope God's Blessing will be so upon them both, that you shall be restored to a full Peace; and that, in the mean Time, you shall enjoy such a Degree of Safety and Prosperity, as may make Way to it.'

To return to the Proceedings at *Westminster*: —

June 9. The Lords having considered of the *Vow* and *Covenant*, brought up by the Commons, judged it a voluntary *Oath*, and proper to be given to every Member of their House, in a solemn and serious Manner. Accordingly, every Lord, beginning at the Youngest Baron, and going upwards according to their Degrees, held the Paper in their Hands and read it distinctly as follows:

The Covenant, taken by the Lords on that Occasion.

'WHereas there hath been, and now is, in 'this Kingdom, a Popish and traiterous 'Plot, for the Subversion of the true Protestant 'Reformed Religion, and the Liberty of the Sub-'ject: And, in pursuance thereof, a Popish Army 'hath been raised, and is now on Foot in divers 'Parts of this Kingdom. And whereas there 'hath been a treacherous and horrid Design lately discovered

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'discovered by the great Blessing and special Providence of God, of divers Persons, to join themselves with the Armies raised by the King, and to destroy the Forces raised by the Lords and Commons in Parliament; to surprize the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, with the Suburbs, and, by Arms, to force the Parliament; and finding, by constant Experience, that many Ways of Force and Treachery are continually attempted to bring to utter Ruin and Destruction the Parliament and Kingdom, and, that which is dearest, the true Protestant Religion; and that, for the preventing and withstanding the same, it is fit that all, who are true-hearted and Lovers of their Country, should bind themselves each to other in a sacred *Vow* and *Covenant:*

I A B, *in Humility and Reverence of the Divine Majesty, declare my hearty Sorrow for my own Sins, and the Sins of this Nation, which have deserved the Calamities and Judgments that now lie upon it: And my true Intention is, by God's Grace, to endeavour the Amendment of my own Ways. And I do further, in the Presence of Almighty God, declare, vow, and covenant, That, in order to the Security and Preservation of the true Reformed Protestant Religion, and Liberty of the Subject, I will not consent to the laying down of Arms, so long as the Papists, now in open War against the Parliament, shall, by Force of Arms, be protected from the Justice thereof: And that I do abhor and detest the said wicked and treacherous Design lately discovered; and that I never gave nor will give my Assent to the Execution thereof; but will, according to my Power and Vocation, oppose and resist the same, and all others of the like Nature: And in case any other like Design shall hereafter come to my Knowledge, I will make such timely Discovery as I shall conceive may best conduce to the preventing thereof. And whereas I do in my Conscience believe, That the Forces raised by the two Houses of Parliament, are raised and continued for their just Defence, and for the*

the Defence of the true Proteſtant Religion and Liberty of the Subject, againſt the Forces raiſed by the King; that I will, according to my Power and Vocation, aſſiſt the Forces raiſed and continued by both Houſes of Parliament, againſt the Forces raiſed by the King without their Conſent: And will likewiſe aſſiſt all other Perſons that ſhall take this Oath, *in what they ſhall do in purſuance thereof; and will not, directly or indirectly, adhere unto, nor willingly aſſiſt, the Forces raiſed by the King, without the Conſent of both Houſes of Parliament. And this* Vow *and* Covenant *I make in the Preſence of Almighty God, the Searcher of all Hearts, with a true Intention to perform the ſame, as I ſhall anſwer at the Great Day, when the Secrets of all Hearts ſhall be diſcloſed.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

At the ſame Time, however, it was moved and agreed to by the Lords, That a ſhort *Declaration* might be drawn up, and taken by them, the Houſe of Commons, and the whole Kingdom, declaring their Loyalty to the King's Perſon, his Crown and Dignity; and a Committee of eleven Lords were ordered to draw it up and report it to the Houſe.

June 11. The Earl of *Portland* and the Lord Viſcount *Conway* being accuſed, by the Houſe of Commons, of being concerned in Mr. *Waller*'s Plot, they were ſequeſtred from the Lords Houſe and committed; the one to the Cuſtody of the Lord Mayor of *London*, and the other to one of the Sheriffs; but their Lands and Goods not to be ſeized on, till, upon Trial, it appeared they were guilty of the Charge againſt them.

The Liberty of the Preſs having, of late, been very grievous to the Parliament, they paſſed an *Ordinance* to reſtrain it, and to ſtrengthen ſome former *Orders* made for that Purpoſe. This extraordinary Stretch into *Engliſh* Liberty, by thoſe who pretended to be the Preſervers of it, deſerves our Notice.

The

An. 19. Car. I. 1643.

June.

An Ordinance for restraining the Liberty of the Press.

The Preamble to this *Ordinance* sets forth

'THAT whereas divers good *Orders* have 'been lately made, by both Houses of Par- 'liament, for suppressing the great Abuses and fre- 'quent Disorders in printing many false, forged, 'scandalous, seditious, libellous, and unlicenced 'Papers, Pamphlets, and Books to the great De- 'famation of Religion and Government; which 'have taken little or no Effect, by reason the Bill 'in Preparation, for Redress of the said Disorders, 'hath hitherto been retarded: And that through 'the present Distractions, very many Persons, 'as well Stationers and Printers, as others of sun- 'dry other Professions, have taken upon them to 'set up private Printing Presses in Corners; and to 'print, vend, publish, and disperse Books, Pam- 'phlets and Papers, in such Multitudes, that no 'Industry could be sufficient to discover or bring to 'Punishment all the several abounding Delin- 'quents: Therefore, *&c.*

The most material Clauses are these;

'That no *Order* or *Declaration* of either House 'of Parliament shall be printed without Order 'of one or both the said Houses; nor any other 'Book, Pamphlet, Paper, nor Part of any such 'Book, Pamphlet, or Paper, shall from hence- 'forth be printed, bound, stitched, or put out to 'Sale, by any Person or Persons whatsoever, unless 'the same be first approved and licenced under the 'Hands of such Persons as both, or either, of the 'said Houses shall appoint for licencing of the 'same; and be entered in the Register Book of the 'Company of Stationers, according to antient 'Custom, and the Printer thereof to put his Name 'thereto.

'The Master and Wardens of the said Company, 'the Gentleman-Usher of the House of Peers, the 'Serjeant of the Commons House, and their Depu- 'ties, together with the Persons formerly appoint- 'ed by the Committee of the House of Commons 'for Examinations, are authorized and required

'to

'to make diligent Search in all Places, where they 'shall think meet, for all unlicenced Printing Presses, and all Presses any way employed in the 'Printing of scandalous or unlicenced Papers, 'Pamphlets or Books; and to seize and carry away such Printing Presses, Letters and other Materials, of every such irregular Printer, which 'they find so misemployed, unto the Common-Hall of the said Company, there to be defaced 'and made unserviceable, according to antient 'Custom; and likewise to make diligent Search 'in all suspected Printing Houses, Ware-Houses, 'Shops and other Places, for such scandalous and 'unlicenced Books, Papers, Pamphlets, and all 'other Books, not entered, nor signed with the 'Printer's Name as aforesaid, being printed, contrary to this *Order*; and the same to seize and 'carry away to the said Common-Hall, there to 'remain till both or either House of Parliament 'shall dispose thereof; and likewise to apprehend 'all Authors, Printers, and other Persons whatsoever employed in compiling, printing, stitching, 'binding, publishing and dispersing of the said 'scandalous, unlicenced, and unwarrantable Papers, 'Books, and Pamphlets as aforesaid; and all 'those who shall resist the said Parties in searching 'after them, and bringing them before either of 'the Houses or the Committee of Examinations, 'that so they may receive such further Punishments 'as their Offences shall demerit; and not to be released untill they have given Satisfaction to the 'Parties employed in their Apprehension for their 'Pains and Charges, and sufficient Caution not to 'offend in like Sort for the future.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'All Justices of the Peace, Captains, Constables 'and other Officers, are ordered and required to 'be aiding and assisting to the aforesaid Persons in 'the due Execution of all and singular the Premises, and in the Apprehension of all Offenders 'against the same; and, in case of Opposition, to 'break open Doors and Locks, *&c.*

June

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

June 14. The Affair of the Great Seal came on again in the House of Lords, when the Earl of *Holland*, from the Committee appointed to prepare Heads for a Conference on this Affair, reported, That the Sense of the Committee was, That the *Votes* of this House should be first read, and then to add, That the Parliament having, in all their Actions and Resolutions, gone upon the Power of their *Ordinances*, the Lords conceive it will be proper to continue upon that Ground. That the making of a new Great Seal will not hinder the Use and Power of the King's Great Seal; but, if they found the Sealing of Original *Writs of Error* be denied, they would join with the Commons in their Care to do what will be necessary and advantageous to the Parliament, the free Course of Justice, and the Laws of the Kingdom.

June 16. The Earl of *Northumberland* reported from the Committee a Draught of what they thought proper to be taken, to declare the Loyalty of the Lords to the King's Person, his Crown and Dignity; which was read:

A Declaration made by the Lords, of their Loyalty to the King's Person.

We the Lords and Commons do further declare, That our Intentions have been, and still are, to our Power, to maintain, preserve, and defend his Majesty's Person and just Rights of the Crown; together with the Persons of his Royal Issue; and that we shall use our utmost Endeavours in pursuance of the same.

Ordered, To communicate this to the House of Commons the next Morning, at a Conference: And, at the same Time, to offer somewhat to them for composing the present Distractions and settling Peace between the King and Parliament.

June 17. A Committee of Lords were appointed to consider of this last Article; and, after some Time, the Lord *Say* and *Sele* brought in a Draught of

of what they had to offer for that Purpose; which was as follows: An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

And a Draught of a Petition to the King for Peace.

May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,

'WE your loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, having a deep Sense of the present Miseries of this your Kingdom, and of the Christian Blood, the Blood of your Subjects, that hath been spilt in this unnatural War: To prevent the Desolation and Ruin of this Kingdom, the Destruction of your People, and the Danger of your own Royal Person and Children, do again, in all Humility, petition your Majesty, that you will be pleased, before the Armies be engaged in Battle, they being now drawn near together, to accept of our humble *Answer* to your Majesty's *first Proposition*, and agree unto the *first Proposition* presented unto you by the Hands of our Commissioners, for the Disbanding of all Armies; whereby your Kingdom will be restored to the former happy Condition of Peace, and the sad Accidents and Consequences of a Civil War be prevented; and that, as the most likely Means to compose and settle these unhappy Differences between you and your People, you will please to return to your Parliament, your great and most faithful Council, whose Advice your Majesty will find more conducing to your Greatness, Honour, and Safety, than the Counsel of some few about you; whose Counsels if they may prevail, we find all our Petitions and Endeavours for the Peace of this Kingdom, to be fruitless.

'If God shall make us so happy as to incline your Majesty's Heart to this our humble Petition, which your Parliament and Kingdom may expect from your Justice and Goodness; our Endeavours and Counsels shall all be directed to settle the true Protestant Religion, your Majesty's just Rights, the Preservation and Safety of your Royal Person and Children, and the Laws

'of

An. 19. Car. I. 1643.

June.

'of the Kingdom, the Liberties of the Subject, 'and the Privileges of Parliament.'

Ordered, That this *Petition* be communicated to the House of Commons at a Conference; and to be delivered to the King in the same Manner as one was at *Shrewsbury*.

June 21. Nothing else, memorable, intervening, the Committee for managing this Conference, reported what they thought fit to be offered at it, to the Commons, along with the *Petition*; which was as follows:

The Reasons offered to the Commons for their Concurrence therein.

'The Lords looking, with much Compassion, upon the divided and distracted Condition of this Kingdom; and that, in all Probability, the Continuance of the War in *Christendom* will only remain amongst ourselves, in these our sad and civil Divisions: They have been moved, from the Tenderness they owe to the Preservation of this Kingdom, to make a further Trial of his Majesty's Inclinations to the Peace of it, and consequently to the Peace of his other Kingdoms; which, in all human Reason, doth depend upon the Peace and Safety of this; and likewise to shew to his Majesty and all the World, that we are still, upon our first Grounds and Principles, to petition him for Peace; thereby to make it visible to his Majesty and the whole Kingdom, that we still pursue the Ways of Peace; which will either procure us that Happiness, or make the Miseries that we and the Kingdom must expect, by a Battle between these near approached Armies, the more supportable by the Unavoidableness of it; and this we desire may no way weaken, or contradict, the *Covenant* and *Vow* we have united ourselves in, but rather pursue the same; in that we do desire the Force, whereby Papists are protected against the Justice of Parliament, may be laid down before we lay down our Arms; neither is it intended to draw on any *Treaty*, but alone to receive the King's present and positive *Answer*.'

June

June 22. The Lords sent down to acquaint the other House, That they had added two more of their Body to the Committee of *Sequestration*, and had given them Power to compound and regulate that *Ordinance*, by making some Allowance to Widows and Children for their Maintenance; desiring the Commons to add a proportionable Number of their House, and, also, to give the like Power to them. But this merciful Disposition of the Lords was not complied with, at this Time, by the Lower House.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

A Committee of Commons had been busy some Time, in framing Articles of Impeachment against the Queen, in order to support the Charge they had exhibited to the Lords. And, this Day, they had proceeded so far as to appoint Mr. *Stroud* to go up, and desire a Conference with them concerning these Articles. Whether this *Message* was sent or not, we cannot learn, for there is no Entry, in the *Lords Journals*, relating to it.

June 24. The Assembly of Divines being now ready to sit to do Business, the Lords thought proper to order, That all Ministers employed in the next publick Monthly Fast, should, in their Prayers, particularly and earnestly desire the Assistance and Blessing of Almighty God upon that Assembly, for carrying on the great Work.: And that the said Assembly should meet in *Henry* the Seventh's Chapel, on the 30th Instant, at Nine in the Morning. Agreed to by the Commons.

June 26. This Day the Lord *Say* and *Sele* acquainted the Lords, That he had received a *Letter* from the King, in which was inclosed a *Proclamation* from his Majesty, which was read:

The King's Proclamation forbidding Obedience to the Parliament, and for calling the Members to him at Oxford.

'WHereas we have been long since driven by Force and Violence from our Palace at *Westminster*, (the Place of Sitting for us and our two Houses of this Parliament) so that we could not, with Safety of our Life, be present with our

'Great

An. 19. Car. I. 1643 June.

'Great Council; and much the greater Part of the 'Members of both Houſes of Parliament have been 'likewiſe driven by Tumults and Force, for their 'Safety, from their Attendance upon that Council, 'the ſaid Members having been threatned and aſ- 'faulted for delivering their Opinions freely in the 'Houſes; or have, out of Conſcience and Duty, 'withdrawn themſelves from being preſent at the 'Debates and Reſolutions, which they have well 'known to be ſo contrary to their Duty and Alle- 'giance; or for ſo withdrawing, or for freely ſpeak- 'ing in the Houſes, have been expelled or ſuſpend- 'ed from being Members of that Council, con- 'trary to the antient Practice and juſt Privileges 'of Parliament. Since which Time, and by which 'Means, a great and rebellious Army hath been 'raiſed againſt us, under the Command of *Robert* 'Earl of *Eſſex*; which Army hath not only en- 'deavoured to take away our Life from us in a ſet 'Battle, but the ſame, and other Forces raiſed by 'the like Means, have committed all the Acts of 'Outrage, Robbery, and Murder, upon our good 'Subjects throughout the Kingdom, and ſtill con- 'tinue to do the ſame.

'And though, in Truth, a very ſmall Part of 'that Great Council remain there together; yet, 'under Pretence of having the Countenance of 'our two Houſes of Parliament, ſome ſeditious 'Perſons aſſume to themſelves (with the Aſſiſtance 'of thoſe rebellious Armies, and of divers muti- 'nous and deſperate *Browniſts*, *Anabaptiſts*, and 'other ill-affected Perſons in our City of *London*, 'by whoſe Means they awe ſuch Members of both 'Houſes who yet continue amongſt them) a Power 'to do Things abſolutely contrary to the Laws of 'the Land, and deſtructive to our Rights, and to 'the Liberty and Property of the Subject, and to 'alter the whole Frame and Government of this 'Kingdom; diſpoſing of the Lives and Fortunes 'of us and our good Subjects, according to their 'Diſcretion; ſubjecting both to their own unli- 'mited Arbitrary Power and Government.

'We

'We have only accuſed ſome particular Perſons, 'whom we well know to be the Authors and Con- 'trivers of theſe deſperate Counſels and Actions; 'and have forborne to cenſure, or charge, the 'whole Number of the Members remaining, by 'whoſe Orders and Authority the Evils have been 'pretended to be done; hoping that the Senſe of 'the miſerable Diſtractions of the Kingdom would, 'at length, have brought them to diſcern where 'they had erred; and our often *Meſſages* and Com- 'plaints of the Violence offered to us, and to the 'Members of both Houſes, would have procured 'Juſtice and Redreſs: And that the Power and 'Reputation of ſuch amongſt them, who wiſhed 'well to the Peace of the Kingdom, and Honour 'and Dignity of Parliaments, would have at laſt 'ſo far prevailed, that a right Underſtanding might 'have been begotten betwixt us and our People; 'and all Shew of Force and Violence ſo taken a- 'way and ſuppreſſed, that we might, in a full and 'peaceable Convention of Parliament, with the 'Advice of that our Great Council, have ſo ſettled 'the preſent Diſtempers, that there might be no 'Fear left of the like for the future.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'But finding, to our great Grief, that the Power 'of thoſe ſeditious Perſons, who firſt contrived 'theſe deſperate and bloody Diſtractions, conti- 'nues ſo great; that as they have driven, and now 'keep us, and the much greater Part of both Hou- 'ſes, from being preſent at that Council; ſo they 'ſo far awe thoſe who remain there, that they 'cannot, with Freedom, give their Votes and Re- 'ſolutions according to their Conſciences, and the 'Laws and Conſtitutions of the Kingdom: That 'the Members of both Houſes have been compel- 'led to make *Proteſtations* to live and die with the 'Earl of *Eſſex*, the General of the rebellious Ar- 'my, and other unlawful and treaſonable *Proteſ- 'tations*; and that ſuch who have refuſed to take 'the ſaid *Proteſtations*, have been expelled and 'impriſoned for ſuch their Refuſal: That the great 'Affairs of the Kingdom are managed and con-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'cluded by a private Committee, without being 'ever reported to the Houſes, contrary to the 'Laws and Rules of Parliament: That the Com- 'mon Council of *London*, moſt of them being Per- 'ſons factiouſly choſen out of *Browniſts*, *Anabap- 'tiſts*, and ſuch who oppoſe the regular wholeſome 'Government of that City, and have promiſed 'themſelves the Deſtruction of the Church, are 'grown the Superintendents over both Houſes, and 'obtrude upon them what Concluſions and Reſo- 'lutions they pleaſe: That they take upon them 'to juſtify this Rebellion againſt us, and have pre- 'ſumed, under Pretence of the *Order* of both 'Houſes, to invite foreign Forces to invade this 'Kingdom: To ſend Agents to foreign Princes, 'to negotiate and treat with them in their own 'Names: To impriſon our good Subjects contrary 'to Law, prohibiting our Judges to grant *Habeas 'Corpus* according to Law: To introduce a new 'Clergy throughout the Kingdom, by diſplacing 'godly learned Divines, without the leaſt Colour 'of Law or judicial Proceedings, and putting ig- 'norant and ſeditious Preachers in their Places, 'to poiſon the Hearts of the People: To counte- 'nance the Vilifying of the Book of the Common- 'Prayer, eſtabliſhed by the Law of the Land: To 'ſeize, levy, and take away what they pleaſe of 'the Eſtates and Fortunes of our Subjects, by diſ- 'poſing of the twentieth Part of their Eſtates, by 'exhauſting them with unſupportable Weekly 'Taxes for the Maintenance of their rebellious 'Army, and by endeavouring to lay odious Ex- 'ciſes upon Victuals, Goods, and Merchandize of 'our People for the ſame Purpoſe; while they ſuf- 'fer our poor Proteſtant Subjects of our Kingdom 'of *Ireland*, whoſe Defence was undertaken by 'our two Houſes, and that Army raiſed for the 'Suppreſſing of that horrid Rebellion to be ſtar- 'ved and in Danger of diſbanding, or neceſſitated 'to deſert that Kingdom for Want of Money, Vic- 'tuals, and ſuch other Neceſſaries as were to be 'provided for them by Act of Parliament, out of

'thoſe

'those Monies which they have spent to destroy 'us and this Kingdom: By exacting from Mer- 'chants Tunnage and Poundage, and other Im- 'positions upon Merchandizes, as well Native as 'Foreign, contrary to an Act made this present 'Parliament, with a Penalty of *Premunire* on 'those who shall pay or receive it: And, lastly, 'That they have (after the breaking off the late '*Treaty*, by a peremptory recalling their Commit- 'tee, who, in Truth, during their Abode with us, 'had no Power to treat by reason of their strict 'Limitation) so far rejected all possible Means and 'Overtures of Treaty and Accommodation, that, 'instead of answering our gracious *Messages*, the 'House of Commons hath imprisoned our Mes- 'senger sent by us to them, to invite both Houses 'to an Accommodation; and especially to move 'them to take such a Course for the Freedom of 'Parliament, that we might safely advise with 'that our Great Council for the settling those mi- 'serable Distractions and Distempers: And hath 'maliciously, and in Contempt of us, (after an 'Attempt to murder our Royal Consort in *Brid-* '*lington* Road, the Place of her Landing) impeach- 'ed her of High Treason, for assisting us with 'Arms and Ammunition to defend us from this 'Rebellion: 'Tis Time now to let our good Sub- 'jects know, that they may no longer look upon 'the Votes and Actions of the Persons now re- 'maining, as upon our two Houses of Parliament; 'Freedom and Liberty to be present, and of O- 'pinion and Debate there, being essential to a Par- 'liament; which Freedom and Liberty all Men 'must confess to be taken away from this Assembly, 'when they remember the great Tumults brought 'down to awe and terrify both Houses; and that 'they were then brought down when any great De- 'bate was in either House, and not like to be so car- 'ried as some seditious Persons, who governed those 'Tumults, did desire; that, in the greatest Heat 'and Fury of those Tumults, the principal Go-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'vernors amongſt them directed the unruly People 'to go to *Whitehall*, where our own Perſon then 'was; and deſigned, by Force, to have ſurprized the 'Perſon of our Son the Prince; that, when it was 'deſired that a *Declaration* might be made againſt 'ſuch Tumults, inſtead of conſenting thereunto, 'the Tumults themſelves were juſtified; and 'when a legal Courſe was preſcribed by the Lords, 'and taken by the proper Miniſters of Juſtice, to 'ſuppreſs and prevent ſuch Tumults and Riots, 'that legal Courſe was ſuperſeded by thoſe who 'were then preſent of the Houſe of Commons, 'and the Miniſters of Juſtice puniſhed and im-'priſoned for executing the Law. When they 'remember that ſeveral Members of either Houſe 'have been threatened and aſſaulted in thoſe Tu-'mults, and their own Names proſcribed as Per-'ſons diſaffected, becauſe they freely uſed to ſpeak 'their Conſciences in both Houſes: That the 'Houſe of Peers have been ſo far threatened and 'menaced, that the Names of thoſe have been, 'with Threats, demanded by the Houſe of Com-'mons at the Bar of the Lords Houſe, who re-'fuſed to conſent to this or that Propoſition which 'had been in Debate before them; and tumul-'tuous Petitions countenanced, which have been 'preſented to that ſame Purpoſe: That the Mem-'bers of both Houſes have been impriſoned, and 'forbid to be preſent at thoſe Councils, for no 'Reaſons but becauſe their Opinion hath not been 'liked: That our Negative Voice (our greateſt 'and moſt Sovereign Privilege) is boldly denied: 'That a preſumptuous Attempt hath been made 'by the major Part of the remaining Part of the 'Houſe of Commons to make our Great Seal of '*England*; the making of which, by the expreſs 'Letter of the Law, is High Treaſon, and would 'ſubvert the antient and fundamental Admini-'ſtration of Juſtice: That, at this Time, we 'and the major Part of both Houſes are kept, by 'a ſtrong and rebellious Army, from being preſent

'at

'at that Council; and that those who are present 'are, by the same Army, awed and forced to 'take unlawful and treasonable *Protestations* to en- 'gage their Votes: And that such Resolutions 'and Directions, which concern the Property and 'Liberty of the Subjects, are transacted and con- 'cluded by a few Persons, (under the Name of 'a Close Committee, consisting of the Earl of '*Manchester*, the Lord *Say*, Mr. *Pym*, Mr. '*Hampden*, Mr. *Stroud*, Mr. *Martin* and others, 'the whole Number not exceeding the Number 'of seventeen Persons) without reporting the same 'to the Houses, or having the same confirmed by 'the Houses, contrary to the express Law and 'Customs of Parliament:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'All these, for the Matter of Fact, we are 'ready to make Proof of, and desire nothing but 'to bring the Contrivers of all the aforesaid Mis- 'chiefs to their Trial by Law; and, till that be 'submitted to, we must pursue them by Arms or 'any other Way, in which our good Subjects 'ought to give us Assistance to that Purpose: 'The imagining the Death of Us, our Royal 'Consort, or our eldest Son; the levying War 'against us in our Realm, giving to them Aid or 'Comfort; the Counterfeiting our Great Seal or 'Money, being by the express Words of the 'Statute of the 25th Year of *Edward* III. *Cap.* 2. 'High Treason: And how applicable this is to 'those who have borne Arms against us, and to 'those who have consented that such Arms be 'borne; to those who have promised to live and 'die with the Earl of *Essex*, and to those who 'every Day consent to some Act for the Support 'and Increase of that Army, we shall leave to all 'the World to judge; and hope that this gra- 'cious Warning and Information, now given by 'us, will make that Impression in the Hearts of 'our People, that they will no longer suffer 'themselves to be misled from their Duty and 'Allegiance upon any Pretences whatsoever; and 'we do declare, That we shall proceed with all

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Severity against all Persons whatsoever, who 'shall henceforward, assist, vote, or concur in 'any Kind toward the Maintenance and Coun- 'tenancing such Actions and Resolutions, which, 'by the known and express Laws of the Land, 'are High Treason; and against all those who 'shall adhere to them, who are in Rebellion a- 'gainst us, as against Rebels and Traitors, in such 'Manner as by the Laws and Statutes of the 'Realm is directed and appointed.

'And since by the Power of seditious Persons, 'we and both Houses are kept from being secured 'against tumultuous Assemblies, and both Houses 'from Adjournment to some Place of Safety; 'which, being done, might quickly make an 'End of these miserable Distractions, whereby 'we are debarred from the Benefit and Advice 'we expected from that our Great Council, the 'Members thereof being scattered into several 'Places: Therefore, that the whole Kingdom 'may see that we are willing to receive Advice 'from those who are trusted by them, though 'we cannot receive the same in the Place to 'which they were called, for the Reasons afore- 'said, nor intend to receive Advice from them 'elsewhere in the Capacity of Houses of Parlia- 'ment: We do hereby declare, That such of 'the Members of both Houses, as well those 'who have been by the Faction of the Malig- 'nant Party expelled for performing their Duties 'to us, and into whose Rooms no Persons have 'been since chosen by their Countries, as the rest 'who shall desire our Protection, shall be wel- 'come to us at our City of *Oxford*; untill, by 'the Adjournment of the Houses to some fit and 'free Place, or otherwise, due Course be taken 'for the full and free Convention in Parliament of 'us and all the Members of both Houses: And 'for their better Encouragement to resort to us, 'we hereby will and command all the Officers 'and Soldiers of our Army to suffer all such Per- 'sons who are Members of either House, with 'their

'their Attendants and Servants, to come to us to this our City of *Oxford*. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'And that none of our good Subjects may believe that, by this our necessary *Declaration* against the Freedom and Liberty of that present Assembly, we may have the least Intention to violate or to avoid any Act or Acts passed by us for the Good and Benefit of our People this Parliament; we do hereby declare to all the World, That we shall, as we have often promised, as inviolably observe all those Acts, as if no such unhappy Interruption had happened in the Freedom and Liberty of that Council: And desire nothing more than to have such a free Convention in Parliament, that we may add such further Acts of Grace as shall be thought necessary for the Advancement of the true Protestant Religion, for the Maintenance of the Liberty and Property of the Subjects, and the Preservation of the Liberty, Freedom, and Privileges of Parliament.

'And that all the World may see how willing and desirous we are to forget all the Injuries and Indignities offered to us by such who have been misled through Weakness or Fear, or who have not been the principal Contrivers of the present Miseries; we do offer a free and general Pardon to all the Members of either House (except *Robert* Earl of *Essex*, *Robert* Earl of *Warwick*, *Edward* Earl of *Manchester*, *Henry* Earl of *Stamford*, *William* Viscount *Say* and *Sele*, Sir *John Hotham*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Arthur Haslerig*, Bart. Sir *Henry Ludlow*, Sir *Edward Hungerford*, and Sir *Francis Popham*, Knights; *Nathaniel Fiennes*, *John Hampden*, *John Pym*, *William Stroud*, *Henry Martyn*, and *Alexander Popham*, Esquires; *Isaac Pennington* Alderman of *London*, and Capt. *Ven*; who, being the principal Authors of these present Calamities, have sacrificed the Peace and Prosperity of their Country to their own Pride, Malice, and Ambition; and against whom we shall proceed as against Persons guilty of High Treason

'by

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'by the known Laws of the Land; and shall, in 'the Proceeding, be most careful to preserve to 'them all Privileges in the fullest Manner that, by 'the Law or the Usage of former Times, is due 'to them) if they shall, within ten Days after the 'publishing of this our *Proclamation*, return to 'their Duty and Allegiance to us.

'And, lastly, we further command and enjoin 'all our Subjects, upon their Allegiance to us, as 'they will answer the contrary to Almighty God, 'and as they desire that they and their Posterity 'should be freed from the foul Taint of High 'Treason, and as they tender the Peace of this 'Kingdom, That they presume not to give any 'Assistance to the before-mentioned rebellious Ar-'mies, in their Persons or Estates in any Sort 'whatsoever; but join with us, according to their 'Duty and the Laws of the Land, to suppress this 'horrid Rebellion.

'And our Pleasure and Command is, That this 'our *Proclamation* be read in all Churches and 'Chapels within this our Kingdom.'

Given at our Court at Oxford *the* 20*th Day of* June, *in the nineteenth Year of our Reign.*

Resolutions of the Lords on the foregoing Proclamation.

After reading this *Proclamation* the Lords agreed, That it declared this Parliament to be no true Parliament; and that the King would not receive whatsoever came to him from them; thereupon they *resolved* to communicate this to the Commons, at a Conference, and appointed a Committee of four Lords to consider of the Sense of this House, to be delivered on this Occasion; as, also, to draw up a proper *Answer* to the *Proclamation*. Soon after the Lord *Say* and *Sele*, from this Committee, brought in the following:

'The Lords do apprehend that the foregoing *Proclamation*, whereby this Parliament is declared to be no free Parliament, and the People are required not to look upon the Votes or Actions of the

the Persons now remaining as upon the two Houses of Parliament, is destructive as to the present Parliament and all Acts therein, so also to the established Government of this Kingdom; which *Declaration* being maintained and pursued by Force, the Lords do conceive themselves bound to defend this present Parliament, and to maintain the Freedom thereof, with their Lives and Fortunes, and are resolved so to do. They think it fit, also, that a *Declaration* be made to that Purpose to all the Kingdom, and to invite therein all *Englishmen*, both of the Nobility, Gentry, and Commons, to join with them; assuring such as shall do so that they shall be embraced and received into the Protection of the Parliament, and acknowledged as those who have done a good Service to the State; except it be such Persons who shall appear to be the Contrivers of these destructive Counsels, those to be named and excepted in the *Declaration*; and to this End to desire, that a Committee of both Houses may be named to meet to draw up the *Declaration*, their Lordships being resolved to name four Lords for that Purpose.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

The Parliament had dispatched a Messenger into *Scotland*, some Time since, to bring over the *Scots* to their Interest; and, this Day, (*June* 27) they thought proper to send another on the same Business, who was to acquaint them with their present State and Condition; and that, after being long entertained with *Treaties* and *Propositions* for *Peace*, they were frustrated by the prevailing Party of Papists and other ill-affected Persons about the King: That they commended this great Cause to the Christian Wisdom and brotherly Affection of the *Scots* Nation and State, to consider how, by their concurrent Advice and Assistance, the Faction of Papists, Bishops, and other Malignants of this Kingdom, might be suppress'd; the Ruin of Religion and Liberty here prevented, and thereby their own better preserved and established. With these, and

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

and many more Instructions, Mr. *Corbet* set out, on this second Embassy into *Scotland*; the Consequence of which will soon appear.

This Day, also, the Effect of a Conference, on the King's last *Proclamation*, was reported to the Lords by their Speaker, which was,

Proposals from the Commons at a Conference thereupon.

'That the House of Commons had considered their Lordships Sense, delivered at the late Conference, touching the King's *Proclamation*, wherein they agree with their Lordships in every Particular; and as they apprehend their Lordships Intentions to be real in what they have resolved, so the House of Commons desire that their Lordships would make good their real Intentions, by real Demonstrations; that it may appear so to the Kingdom.

'And, to the end that their Lordships may better carry on their *Resolutions*, and have the fitter Means of Support for the same, the House of Commons have thought proper to offer some Particulars to their Lordships Consideration:

1. 'That their Lordships would please to join with the House of Commons in the Propositions for the making a new Great Seal, to prevent the Abuses of it; such as was the sealing the Commission for the horrid Design against the Parliament and the City of *London*; and also because, by the making a new Great Seal, Justice shall be the better administred to the Kingdom, and the People will be the more dependant upon the Parliament: Whereas now they are forced to go to *Oxford* for the Dispatch of their Affairs, which otherwise they would not; and also their Lordships will be the more enabled to do that, for the Maintenance of the Parliament, and the Freedom and Liberty thereof, which otherwise they cannot.

2. 'The House of Commons desire their Lordships to give Order, that *Proclamation* may issue out to summon the Queen to answer the Impeachment, according to the Articles; and the House of Commons make this Observation, That though the

the King's Councils have flown very high in the Contempt of this Parliament, yet they never presumed to declare it to be None, till the Queen was impeached; therefore, the House of Commons think it fit to proceed against her, to shew their Love to Justice, and to let them see that the Parliament shrinks not from their Duty, notwithstanding this *Proclamation*; and also because the World may see what Reason they have to charge the Queen; and those that have Dependance upon the Queen's Ways, Designs, and Counsels, may be weaken'd and deterr'd from their Dependance on her, and acting her Commands.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

3. 'To take off the Impression that this *Proclamation* may make in foreign Parts, the House of Commons desire their Lordships to send the Commissioners into *Scotland* speedily, and to resolve to send Agents abroad to other States, whereby the Imputations will be taken away which are laid upon the Parliament by the King's Ministers; also that the Aid expected by the King from foreign Parts may be prevented, and Trade secur'd, which they have endeavoured to molest.

4. 'To desire their Lordships will take into Consideration the two *Ordinances* sent up to them by the House of Commons.

'The first concerning Intelligence held with *Oxford* and the King's Army; the other concerning the listing of Horses.

1. 'That the Freedom of Intercourse hath been a Means to supply the King both with Money and Arms.

2. 'That it gives Opportunity to make great Factions in the City, to corrupt the Well-affected to the Parliament, and to effect many dangerous Practices and Conspiracies, to the Hazard of the whole Kingdom.

3. 'It acquaints the Enemy with all our Designs, Preparations, and Convoys.

4. 'It is contrary to all Rules and Grounds of War.

'Con-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Concerning Lifting of Horſes; it will be a Means to furniſh the Parliament with a Body of Horſe upon all Occaſions, to preſerve the City and reinforce the Army.

5. 'The Houſe of Commons conceive that the King, by his *Proclamation*, as far as in him lies, hath diſabled the Parliament to offer any *Petition* and preſent any humble Advice to him, in Quality of both Houſes of Parliament, and that he will not receive any ſuch in that Capacity; which Conſideration the Houſe of Commons preſents to their Lordſhips, as an *Anſwer* for not joining with their Lordſhips in that *Petition*, which their Lordſhips propoſed to them to be delivered to the King for *Peace*, which yet depends unpaſſed.

6. 'The Houſe of Commons deſire their Lordſhips to join with them in an *Oath* to be drawn, to be taken by all Commanders and Officers in the Army and Fleet, and by Keepers of Forts and Caſtles, and by other public Officers in the Army; whereby they ſhall be bound to maintain and defend the two Houſes of Lords and Commons, in this preſent Parliament, and faithfully to diſcharge the Truſt committed to them by both Houſes of Parliament, againſt all Authority whatſoever.'

The Lords taking the Report of this Conference into Conſideration, *ordered* That a Committee of their Houſe ſhould meet with the Committee of the Houſe of Commons on *Thurſday* next in the Afternoon, in the Prince's Lodgings, to draw up a *Declaration* upon the King's *Proclamation*, Touching the Lifting of Horſes; the Lords thought fit that the Thing ſhould be done, but not in the Way as the *Ordinance* was then drawn; therefore appointed another Committee to meet this Afternoon, to conſider of the drawing up another *Ordinance* for that Purpoſe. And touching the *Ordinance* to prevent Intelligence, and ſending of Letters to the King's Army; the Lords reſolved to abide by their former *Reſolution* of rejecting it; and

and appointed a Committee to draw up some Reasons to be offered to the House of Commons for the same.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

June 29. A Petition from the Earl of *Portland* to the Lords was read, shewing,

A Petition from the Earl of Portland, imprisoned on account of the late Plot.

THat he was committed Prisoner in the City, the Beginning of August *last, at the Desire of the House of Commons, upon some Suspicions and Jealousies they had of him; where he continued six Months, almost to the Ruin of his whole Estate.*

That he is now made a Prisoner upon the same Grounds, and at the same Request; but, as he conceives, without any Charge brought up against him: Whereby, and by what Mr. Waller *hath threatened him with since he was imprisoned, he doth apprehend a very sad, long, and ruinous Restraint, all his Goods being already taken out of his Power, which were the only Means he had for the present Subsistence of his Family.*

He therefore humbly prays the Lords, that he may not find the Effects of Mr. Waller's *Threats, by a long and close Imprisonment; but that he may be speedily brought to a legal Trial before them; and then he is confident the Vanity and Falshood of these Informations, which have been given to the House of Commons against the Petitioner, will appear both to their Lordships and to them; and he shall have the Testimony of having ever borne a very faithful Heart to his Country.*

And for this he shall ever pray, *&c.*

PORTLAND.

The Lords taking Notice of the Expressions in the Petition, about Mr. *Waller*'s Threats to the Earl, *ordered*, That they should be both examined, Face to Face, the next Day; to which the Commons also agreed.

The

An. 19. Car. I. 1643.

July.

The Commons desire the Earl of Northumberland may be examined touching that Affair.

The Earl of *Northumberland* was another Person the Commons accused as having some Knowledge of the late Plot; and, this Day, the Commons sent up to the Lords to have him examined forthwith. The Earl being in the House desired the same Thing, that so, as he said, his Innocency might sooner appear, and he not lie longer under a Jealousy; which was done accordingly.

July 1. The Earl of *Manchester*, from the Committee appointed to take Examinations in the above Affair, reported what Discourse the Earl of *Portland* had lately with Mr. *Waller*.

Mr. *Thinn*, the Usher of the House of Lords, deposed, 'That, on the 21st *ult.* whilst he staid to see whether Mr. Alderman *Atkins* would receive the Lord *Portland*, Mr. *Waller* came to speak to his Lordship, as he conceived. The Alderman carried them into an upper Room, and, when they came down again, Lord *Portland* came into the Parlour, and said these, or the like Words, *Pray do me the Favour to tell my Lord* Northumberland, *that Mr.* Waller *has extremely pressed me to save my own Life and his, by casting the Guilt or Blame upon the Lord* Conway *and the Earl of* Northumberland.'

The Lord *Lovelace* also testified, but not upon Oath, 'That he went to the Earl of *Portland* on *Monday* last; and, after he had been there a while, the Earl shewed Alderman *Atkins*'s Wife a Petition; and, when she had read it, the Earl shewed it to him; and he remembers that, in the same Petition, there was this Clause, *That Mr.* Waller *desired him to save himself and him, by laying the Blame on the two other Lords as before.*'

These Testimonies, with the Earl of *Portland*'s own Examination, which is not enter'd in the *Journals*, were ordered to be written out and delivered to Mr. *Pym*, or any of the Committee of the House of Commons, by Direction of the Lords.

The

The ſame Day the Speaker acquainted the Lords, that he had received a Letter from the Lord-General; which was read as follows: An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

My Lord,

SInce the Coming of the Army to this Place, the Unſeaſonableneſs of the Weather, and ſome other Accidents, hath prevented many Things which I purpoſed to have attempted, had God ſeen it fit; and therefore I much deſire that ſome of the Lords of your Houſe might be ſent down, together with ſome of the Commons, that we may debate Things of great Neceſſity to be conſidered of; which I muſt deſire may be done with all poſſible Speed; that, upon a Reſult of what may be offered, you may receive full Satisfaction of our Condition; which I leave to the Wiſdom of the Houſe, reſting

A Letter from the Earl of Eſſex, deſiring the Advice of Parliament.

Your Lordſhip's

Thame, June 30, 1643.

Faithful Servant,

ESSEX.

A Conference being deſired, and held, between the two Houſes on the Subject of this Letter, the Reſult of it was, That the Lords named the Earl of *Holland* and the Lord *Grey* of *Werk* to go, with a proportionable Number of the Commons, to the General: But the next Day of Meeting, *July* 3, the ſaid Lords being returned, reported to the Houſe, That they ſet out on their Journey, and got as far as *Aylesbury*, where they met with another Letter from the Lord-General, informing them that the King's Forces were abroad that Way; and therefore adviſing them not to proceed any further.

July 4. In the Houſe of Commons, this Day, Mr. *Waller* was brought to the Bar, in order to anſwer to his Charge for being concerned in the late Plot; when his Examinations and Confeſſions were ſhewn unto him, who acknowledged them all

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

all to be true. Then being told by the Speaker, if he had any thing more to say, either as to the Plot, or for himself, he had Leave to do so, he made the following Speech to the House*.

Mr. Speaker,

Mr. Waller's Speech in his own Defence, concerning the late Plot.

'I Acknowledge it a great Mercy of God, and a great Favour from you, that I am, once more, suffered to behold this Honourable Assembly.

'I mean not to make use of it to say any Thing in my own Defence, by Justification or Denial of what I have done. I have already confessed enough to make me appear worthy, not only to be put out of this House, but out of the World too. All my humble Request to you is that, if I seem to you as unworthy to live as I do to myself, I may have the Honour to receive my Death from your own Hands, and not to be exposed to a Trial by the Council of War: Whatever you shall think me worthy to suffer in a Parliamentary Way, is not like to find Stop any where else.

'This, Sir, I hope you will be pleased, for your own Sakes, to grant me; who am already so miserable, that nothing can be added to my Calamity—but to be made the Occasion of creating a Precedent to your own Disadvantage: Besides the Right I may have to this, consider, I beseech you, that the Eyes of the World are upon you. You govern in Chief, and if you should expose your own Members to the Punishment of others, it will be thought that you either want Power, or Leisure, to chastise them yourselves; nor let any Man despise the ill Consequence of such a Precedent, as this would be, because he seeth not presently the Inconveniences which may ensue: You have many Armies on Foot, and it is uncertain how

* From the Original Edition printed by *G. Dexter*, and licenced by *John White*.

Lord *Clarendon*, after giving a very long and particular Narrative of this Affair, remarks, 'That Mr. *Waller* did as much owe the Keeping his Head to this Oration, as *Catiline* did the Loss of his to those of *Tully*.

how long you may have Occasion to use them. Soldiers and Commanders (though I know well they of the Parliament's Army excell no less in Modesty, than they do in Courage) are generally of a Nature ready to pretend to the utmost Power of this Kind, which they conceive to be due to them; and may be too apt, upon any Occasion of Discontent, to make use of such a Precedent as this. In this very Parliament you have not been without some Taste of the Experience hereof; it is now somewhat more than two Years since you had an Army in the *North*, paid and directed by yourselves; and yet you may be pleased to remember there was a considerable Number of Officers in that Army, which joined in a *Petition*, or *Remonstrance*, to this House, taking Notice of what some of the Members had said here, as they supposed, to their Disadvantage, and did little less than require them of you. 'Tis true, there had been some Tampering with them; but what has happened, at one Time, may wisely be thought possible to fall out again at another.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'Sir, I presume but to point you out the Danger: If it be not just, I know you will not do me the Wrong to expose me to this Trial; if it be just, your Army may another Time require the same Justice of you in their own Behalf, against some other Member, whom, perhaps, you would be less willing to part with. Necessity has, of late, forced you into untrodden Paths; and in such a Case as this, where you have no Precedent of your own, you may not do amiss to look abroad upon other States and Senates, which exercise the Supreme Power, as you now do here.

'I dare confidently say you shall find none, either antient or modern, which ever exposed any of their own Order to be tried for his Life, by the Officers of their Armies abroad, for what he did while he resided among them in the Senate.

'Among the *Romans* the Practice was so contrary, that some inferior Officers in their Army, far from the City, having been sentenced by their

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

General or Commander in Chief, as deserving Death by their Discipline of War, have nevertheless (because they were Senators) appealed thither, and the Cause has received a new Hearing in the Senate.

'Not to use more Words to persuade you to take heed that you wound not yourselves, through my Sides, in violating the Privileges belonging to your own Persons, I shall humbly desire you to consider likewise the Nature of my Offence; (not but that I should be much ashamed to say any Thing in Diminution thereof: God knows 'tis horrid enough for the Evil it might have occasioned) but if you look near it, it may, perhaps, appear to be rather a civil than a martial Crime, and so to have Title to a Trial at the Common Law of the Land: There may, justly, be some Difference put between me and others in this Business.

'I have had nothing to do with the other Army, or any Intention to begin the Offer of Violence to any Body; it was only a civil Pretence to that which I then, foolishly, conceived to be the Right of the Subject. I humbly refer it to your Considerations, and to your Consciences. I know you will take Care not to shed that Blood by the Law of War, which hath a Right to be tried by the Law of Peace.

'For so much as concerns myself and my Part in this Business, (if I were worthy to have any Thing spoken, or patiently heard, in my Behalf) this might truly be said, That I made not this Business but found it; it was in other Men's Hands long before it was brought to me, and when it came I extended it not, but restrained it. For the Proposition of letting in Part of the King's Army, or offering Violence to the Members of this House, I ever disallowed, and utterly rejected them.

'What it was that moved me to entertain Discourse of this Business, so far as I did, I will tell you ingenuously; and that rather as a Warning for

for others, than it makes any Thing for myself; it was only an Impatience of the Inconveniences of the present War, looking on Things with a carnal Eye, and not minding that which chiefly, if not only, ought to have been considered, the inestimable Value of the Cause you have in Hand, the Cause of God and of Religion; and the Necessities you are forced upon for the Maintenance of the same. As a just Punishment for this Neglect, it pleased God to desert me and suffer me, with a fatal Blindness, to be led on and engaged in such Counsels as were wholly disproportioned to the rest of my Life. This, Sir, my own Conscience tells me was the Cause of my Falling, and not Malice, or any ill Habit of Mind or Disposition toward the Common-wealth, or to the Parliament: For from whence should I have it? If you look on my Birth you will not find it in my Blood: I am of a Stock which hath borne you better Fruit. If you look on my Education, it hath been almost from my Childhood in this House, and amongst the best Sort of Men; and for the whole Practice of my Life, till this Time, if another were to speak for me, he might reasonably say, That neither my Actions out of Parliament, nor my Expressions in it, have savoured of Disaffection or Malice to the Liberties of the People or Privileges of Parliament.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'Thus, Sir, I have set before your Eyes, both my Person and my Case; wherein I shall make no such Defence by denying or extenuating any Thing I have done, as ordinary Delinquents do. My Address to you, and all my Plea, shall only be such as Children use to their Parents, I have offended, I confess it. I never did any Thing like it before. It is a Passage unsuitable to the whole Course of my Life beside; and for the Time to come, as God, that can bring Light out of Darkness, hath made this Business in the Event useful to you, so also hath he to me: You have by it made an happy Discovery of your Enemies, and I of myself and the evil Principles I walked by; so that

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

if you look either on what I have been heretofore, or what I now am, and, by God's Grace assisting me, I shall always continue to be, you may perhaps think me fit to be an Example of your Compassion and Clemency.

'Sir, I shall no sooner leave you, but my Life will depend on your Breath; and not that alone, but the Subsistence of some that are more innocent. I might therefore shew you my Children, whom the Rigour of your Justice would make compleat Orphans, being already motherless. I might shew you a Family, wherein there are some unworthy to have their Share in that Mark of Infamy, which now threatens me: But something there is, which if I could shew you, would move you more than all this; it is my Heart, which abhors what I have done more, and is more severe to itself, than the severest Judge can be. A Heart, Mr. Speaker, so awakened by this Affliction, and so intirely devoted to the Cause you maintain, that I earnestly desire of God to incline you so to dispose of me, whether for Life or Death, as may most conduce to the Advancement thereof.

'Sir, not to trouble you any longer, if I die I shall die praying for you; if I live I shall live serving you; and render you back the Use and Employment of all those Days you shall add to my Life.'

The Commons expel him, and he is condemned by the Council of War.

After this Speech, Mr. *Waller* having withdrawn, he was called in again; and, being by the Speaker required thereto, gave the House an exact Account how he came first to the Knowledge of this Business; as also what Lords were acquainted therewith, or had engaged themselves therein. Notwithstanding which he was expelled the House; and so being left to the Council of War, as all the rest of the Conspirators had been, he was condemned to die. But Mr. *Whitlocke* tells us, 'That the Lord-General granted him a Reprieve; and, after a Year's Imprisonment, and paying a Fine of 10,000*l.* he was discharged, and tra-

travelled into *France*.' Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Chaloner* were hanged.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

The House of Commons had received Information of some Design of betraying *Hull* to the King, in which the famous Sir *John Hotham* and his Son were concerned: And, this Day, they sent Sir *William Strickland* up to the Lords with a Message and several intercepted Letters from the aforesaid Sir *John* and his Son; in Consideration of which, he said, the Commons had come to some *Resolutions* for the better securing and preserving that Fortress; which were these:

Information of Sir John Hotham's intending to deliver up Hull to the King.

'That Sir *William Strickland* and Mr. *Hatcher*, Members of their House, with the Mayor of the Town of *Hull* and Sir *Matthew Boynton*, should be appointed a Committee for the Government of *Hull*; and that the former two should go down forthwith to take it upon them: That Sir *Matthew Boynton* should be appointed Colonel of the Garrison in that Town, and recommended to the General for a Commission for that Purpose. Sir *Henry Vane, jun.* and *Peregrine Pelham*, Esq; Members for *Hull*, with Sir *William Allanson*, were also added;' to all which the Lords agreed, with the Addition of Sir *Philip Stapylton* and Sir *William Constable* to this Commission.

In this Message also the Commons again press'd the Lords to consent to the making of a new Great Seal, because, they said, the Kingdom was not able to subsist without it; but the Lords let them know, That they adhered, in this, to their former *Resolution*; which, when the Commons understood, they *resolved* to give Orders for making a new Great Seal themselves, and appointed a Committee to see it done with all Speed: But they made no Use of it till the Lords gave their Consent the 12th of *October* following. The Form of it was, a Representation of the House of Commons, the Members sitting, on one Side; and the Arms of *England* and *Ireland*, on the other.

The Commons order a new Great Seal to be made.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

July 5. The Commons having had Information of the ill Success of the Lord *Fairfax* in the *North*, and that the Marquis of *Newcastle* had entirely routed his Forces at *Atherton-Moor*, near *Bradford*, were in great Consternation: And, this Day, at a Conference, the Commons communicated this bad News to the Lords; earnestly pressing them to nominate a Committee of their House, to go forthwith into *Scotland*, and to desire the *Scots* Nation to send Aid and Assistance into *England* against the Papists and others, now in Arms to destroy the Protestant Religion and the Liberty of this Kingdom. The Lords agreed to this, and ordered the Lord *Grey* of *Werk* to attend the House the next Morning for that Purpose.

Lord Fairfax routed by the Marquis of Newcastle;

Whereupon the Lords agree to invite the Scots.

Little else, of moment, occurs in the *Journals*, till this Day, *July* 10, when we meet with an *Ordinance* of Indemnity for those Gentlemen that secured Sir *John Hotham*, his Son, *&c.* which was read, and agreed to, in these Words:

An Indemnification of the Persons concerned in securing Sir John Hotham and his Son.

'WHereas *Thomas Raikes*, Mayor of *Hull*, Sir *Matthew Boynton*, Knight and Baronet, Sir *William St. Quintin*, Bart. Sir *Richard Darley*, Sir *John Bourchier*, and Sir *William Allanson*, Knights, *Lancelot Roper*, *Nicholas Denman*, *John Barnard*, and *William Popple*, Aldermen, *John Penrose*, Gent. and *Robert Johnson*, Clerk, did receive Information that there was a Design for the betraying the Town of *Hull*; which, in their Opinion, could not be prevented but by a speedy seizing of the Block-Houses, and other Places of Strength in the Town, and also of the Persons of Sir *John Hotham*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, and Capt. *Hotham*: And whereas accordingly they, with others, seized on the said Places of Strength, for the Preservation of the said Town, and also the Persons of the said Sir *John Hotham*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, and Capt. *Hotham*, and the Treasury, Plate, Trunks,

'Trunks, Writings, and other Things of the said 'Sir *John Hotham* and Capt. *Hotham*, to be in 'safe Custody till farther Directions from the Par- 'liament:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'And whereas the said Mayor of *Hull*, Sir '*Matthew Boynton*, and the rest of the Persons 'first above named, did issue out their Warrants 'and Directions, commanding Captain *Scarth* 'to march from *Scarbrough* with his Soldiers, 'Arms, and Ammunition he had there, to *Bever-* '*ley*, for the Defence of that Place, and of the 'Goods there of Consequence, to be preserved in '*Beverley* till further Directions from the Par- 'liament:

'And whereas they did issue out their War- 'rants and Directions to divers other Captains for 'to march with their Soldiers from *Hull* to *Be-* '*verley*, for the Defence of that Place:

'The Lords and Commons do *declare* that it was 'an acceptable Service to the Kingdom and Par- 'liament, in the said Mayor of *Hull*, Sir *Matthew* '*Boynton*, and the rest of the Gentlemen above- 'named, and all that others have done herein; 'and that the Lords and Commons will keep them, 'and all others that have assisted them therein, in- 'demnified and sav'd harmless.'

July 11. A Letter to the Speaker, from the Lord-General, was read to the House of Lords, desiring to have 500 Horse sent him, presently, to recruit his Army, and 200 Horse a Month provided for the same Purpose; as likewise a Magazine of Saddles and Horse-Arms. Another Letter of a later Date, from the General, was also read; which is inserted, at Length, in the *Journals*, and is as follows:

My Lord,

I Would now have given you the true Relation of the Skirmish, on Sunday *last, between some of our Horse and the Enemy's, near* Buckingham; *but Sir* Philip Stapylton *and Col.* Goodwin *being then upon*

The Earl of Essex's Letter, setting forth the distressed Condition of his Army.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

upon the Place, I refer the Relation thereof unto them. Since when, being informed that the King had sent more Forces to Buckingham, *to maintain that Place, bring those Parts into Contribution, and give us Battle there: Hereupon I advanced with the Army towards that Town; where the Enemy stayed till the Army came within two Miles of them, and then made Haste away towards* Banbury; *notwithstanding they had persuaded the People, that they would not quit the Place till they had beat me out of the Country. I then, understanding that they were fled, held it not fit to go to the Town with my Army, but sent Col.* Middleton *with some Horse to clear the Town and Coast, which he did; and then advised where to quarter with most Conveniency to our Army, and most ready for the Enemy, the Queen's Forces being like to join with them very suddenly.*

That our Army might the better secure the Parliament and the City of London, *and the Counties adjacent, and be more safely supplied with Money from* London, *and lie most conveniently to join with the Forces with the Lord* Grey, *in* Northamptonshire, *I did march to* Great Brickhill, *as the most fit Place for all Purposes.*

The Enemy's chief Strength being in Horse, and this Army neither recruited with Horses, nor Arms, nor Saddles, it is impossible to keep the Country from being plundered; nor to fight with them, but when and where they list; we being forced, when we move, to march with the whole Army, which can be but by slow Marches; so that the Country suffers much Wrong, and the Cries of the poor People are infinite.

If it were thought fit to send to his Majesty to have Peace, *with the settling of Religion, the Laws and Liberties of the Subject, and bringing to just Trial those chief Delinquents that have brought all these Mischiefs to both Kingdoms; and, as my Lord of* Bristol * *spake in Parliament, how we may be secured to have these Things performed hereafter; or else,*

* The Earl of *Bristol*'s Speech for an Accommodation, here referred to, is at large in our Eleventh Volume, p. 52.

else, if his Majesty shall please to absent himself, there may be a Day set to give a Period to all these unhappy Distractions by a Battle, *(which, when and where, they shall chuse, who may be thought any way indifferent) I shall be ready to perform that Duty I owe to you; and the* Propositions *to be agreed upon, between his Majesty and the Parliament, may be sent to such an indifferent Place, that both Armies may be drawn near the one to the other; so that if* Peace *be not concluded, it might be ended with the* Sword. *No Officer of the Army to be of such Committee, nor no Intercourse to be between them.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

My Lord, I am

Brickhill Magna, July 9, 1643.

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

ESSEX.

Both the Houses agreed to supply the Lord-General, as he desired; all the Troops then raised in the City of *London*, except those for the immediate Defence of it, were ordered to march forthwith; and that there should be a Course to supply him with Horse, Arms, and Saddles. There was Necessity sufficient for a general Reinforcement at this Time, the King's Troops being every where victorious; for, besides the great Victory in the *North*, already mentioned, Sir *William Waller* was defeated in the *West* of *England*, by the Lord *Wilmot*, Sir *Ralph Hopton*, *&c.* and his Army totally ruined. Prince *Rupert* had also taken *Bristol*; so that the King's Affairs were now in the most flourishing Condition that they ever had been throughout the whole War. This some Lords were so sensible of, that a Motion was made for petitioning the King, before he had recalled his *Proclamation* wherein he expressed this Parliament to be no free Parliament; and the Question being put thereupon, it passed in the Affirmative. This Disposition of the Lords towards an Accommodation was, probably, much forwarded by the King's publishing the following *Declaration*, addressed

The great Success of the King's Army.

The Lords resolve to petition for Peace.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'the juſt Privileges of Parliament, that we call 'that God to witneſs, who hath covered our Head 'in the Day of Battle, that we deſire from our 'Soul, and ſhall always uſe our utmoſt Endea-'vour, to preſerve and advance the true Reformed 'Proteſtant Religion, eſtabliſhed in the Church of '*England*, in which we were born, have faithfully 'lived, and, by the Grace of God, ſhall reſolutely 'die: That the Preſervation of the Liberty and 'Property of the Subject, in the due Obſerva-'tion of the known Laws of the Land, ſhall be 'equally our Care, as the Maintenance of our 'own Rights; we deſiring to govern only by thoſe 'good Laws, which, till they were oppreſſed by 'this odious Rebellion, preſerved this Nation 'happy. And we do acknowledge the juſt Privi-'leges of Parliament to be an eſſential Part of thoſe 'Laws, and ſhall, therefore, moſt ſolemnly de-'fend and obſerve them; ſo that, in Truth, if ei-'ther Religion, Law, or Liberty, be precious to 'our People, they will, by their Submiſſion to us, 'join with us in the Defence of them, and there-'by eſtabliſh that Peace, by which only they can 'flouriſh and be enjoyed.

'Whether theſe Men that be profeſſed Enemies 'to the eſtabliſhed Eccleſiaſtical Government; who 'reproach and perſecute the learned Orthodox 'Miniſters of the Church, and into their Places 'put ignorant, ſeditious, and ſchiſmatical Preach-'ers; who vilify the Book of Common Prayer, 'and impiouſly profane God's Worſhip with their 'ſcurrilous and ſeditious Demeanor, are like to ad-'vance that Religion: Whether thoſe Men, who 'boldly, and without the leaſt Shadow or Colour 'of Law, impoſe inſupportable Taxes and odious 'Exciſes upon their Fellow-Subjects, impriſon, 'torment, and murder them, are like to preſerve 'the Liberty and Property of the Subject: And 'whether thoſe Men, who ſeize and poſſeſs them-'ſelves of our own unqueſtionable Revenue, and 'our juſt Rights; have denied us our Negative 'Voice; have, by Force and Violence, awed and ter-

'terrified the Members of both Houſes; and, laſt-'ly, have, as far as in them lies, diſſolved the 'preſent Parliament, by driving away and impri-'ſoning the Members, and reſolving the whole 'Power thereof, and more, into a Committee of 'a few Men, contrary to all Law, Cuſtom, or 'Precedent, are like to vindicate and uphold the Pri-'vileges of Parliament, all the World may judge.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'We do therefore, once more, conjure our good 'Subjects, by their Memory of that excellent Peace 'and firm Happineſs with which it pleaſed God to 'reward their Duty and Loyalty in Time paſt; by 'their *Oaths* of *Allegiance* and *Supremacy*, which 'no *Vow* or *Covenant*, contrived and adminiſtred 'to and by themſelves, can cancel or evade; by 'whatſoever is dear and precious to them in this 'Life, or hoped or prayed for in the Life to come, 'that they will remember their Duty and conſider 'their Intereſt; and no longer ſuffer themſelves to 'be miſled, their Prince diſhonoured, and their 'Country waſted and undone, by the Malice and 'Cunning of thoſe State Impoſtors; who, under 'Pretence of Reformation, would introduce what-'ſoever is monſtrous and unnatural both to Reli-'gion and Policy: But that they rather chuſe 'quietly to enjoy their Religion, Property, and 'Liberty, founded and provided for by the Wiſ-'dom and Induſtry of former Times, and ſecured 'and enlarged by the Bleſſings upon the preſent 'Age, than to ſpend their Lives and Fortunes to 'purchaſe Confuſion, and to make themſelves li-'able to the moſt intolerable kind of Slavery, that 'is, to be Slaves to their Fellow-Subjects; who, 'by their prodigious unheard-of Acts of Oppreſ-'ſion and Tyranny, have given them ſufficient 'Evidence what they are to expect at their Hands.

'And let not our good People, who have been 'miſled, or, through Want of Underſtanding or 'Want of Courage, ſubmitted themſelves to un-'warrantable and diſloyal Actions, be taught, by 'theſe Seducers, that their Safety now conſiſts in 'Deſpair; and that they can only ſecure them-

ſelves

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'ſelves, for the Ills they have done, by a reſolute and 'peremptory Diſobedience. Revenge and Blood-'thirſtineſs have never been imputed to us, even 'by thoſe who have not left either our Govern-'ment or Nature unexamined with the greateſt 'Boldneſs and Malice. And all thoſe who, ſince 'theſe bloody Diſtractions, out of Conſcience have 'returned from their evil Ways to us, have found 'that it was not ſo eaſy for them to repent as for 'us to forgive. And whoſoever have been miſled 'by thoſe whoſe Hearts, from the Beginning, have 'deſigned all this Miſchief, and ſhall redeem their 'paſt Crimes by their preſent Service and Loyalty, 'in the apprehending or oppoſing ſuch who ſhall 'continue to bear Arms againſt us, and ſhall uſe 'their utmoſt Endeavours to reduce thoſe Men to 'their due Obedience, and to reſtore this King-'dom to its wonted Peace, ſhall have Cauſe to 'magnify our Mercy, and to repent the Treſpaſſes 'committed againſt ſo juſt and ſo gracious a So-'vereign.

'Laſtly, we deſire all our good Subjects who 'have really aſſiſted, or really wiſhed us well, 'now God hath done ſuch wonderful Things for 'us, vigorouſly to endeavour to put an End to all 'theſe Miſeries, by bringing in Men, Money, 'Plate, Horſes, or Arms, to our Aid; that ſo we, 'being not wanting to ourſelves, may, with Con-'fidence, expect the Continuance of God's Fa-'vour, to reſtore us all to that bleſſed Harmony of 'Affections, which may eſtabliſh a firm Peace; 'without the ſpeedy obtaining of which, this poor 'Kingdom will be utterly undone, though not 'abſolutely loſt.'

Lord Fairfax appointed Governor of Hull.

July 12. At the Deſire of the Houſe of Commons, the Lord *Fairfax* was made Governor of *Hull*, inſtead of the Commiſſioners before-named*.

Sir

* The Preamble to this *Ordinance* runs thus: 'The Lords and 'Commons aſſembled in Parliament, upon the aſſured Confidence 'and Truſt, which they have and do repoſe in the Wiſdom, Valour, 'and Fidelity of the Rt. Hon. *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*, do ordain, 'declare, and appoint, &c.'

Sir *John Hotham* and his Son, with other Prisoners concerned in the Design upon that Town, were now brought up to *London*; and, this Day, a Committee extraordinary was appointed by the Commons, to take their Examinations, and to do all other Acts that might tend to the Discovery of the whole Business, and all the Circumstances of it. *Ordered*, also, That no Member of that House, or any other Person, should visit Sir *John* or his Son, nor send any Messages to them, without Leave of the House.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

The Lord *Grey* of *Werk* having a Post in the Parliament's Army, as Lieutenant-General under the Earl of *Essex*, his Lordship shewed very great Reluctancy to go into *Scotland*, notwithstanding the Lords had joined the Earl of *Rutland* in the Commission with him. He made many Excuses to avoid this Embassy, as leaving his Charge, which, at this Time, the Armies being so near one another, would reflect upon his Honour: He desired, also, that he might be excused, on account of an ill Disposition of Body, which would not endure a Sea Voyage, the only Way the Parliament had now to send to the *Scots* with any Safety. But, probably, it might proceed from his Dislike to go on such an Errand as inviting a foreign Army to come and invade this Kingdom, which, should the King prevail, might put him past Hopes of Pardon. Whatever it was, his Lordship, this Day, (*July* 17.) making the same Excuses to the Lords, he was ordered to withdraw; when that House, taking into Consideration the whole Progress of this Business, and that, upon his Submission to their Pleasure, they had appointed a peremptory Day for his going, and had also acquainted the House of Commons therewith, the Lords therefore insisted on their *Order*, that he should go; and the Earls of *Pembroke*, *Denbigh*, and *Bolingbroke*, were sent out to acquaint him with it.

Soon after the said Earls returned with this *Answer*, That the Lord *Grey* submitted to go, if the House

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

House did command him; but desired them to present to their Lordships two Petitions:

1. That he might enjoy his Place of Command in the Army.

2. That when he had been in *Scotland* a-while, and settled Affairs in some Forwardness, if he found his Health so ill that he could not stay there without Prejudice to himself and the Service, that, upon his humble Suit and Information thereof to the House, he might be permitted to return home.

Lord Grey of Werk committed to the Tower, &c. for refusing to go to invite the Scots Army.

But the Lords not thinking it fit to have any Conditions put upon them, ordered the Lord *Grey* to be called in again, and the Speaker to demand his positive *Answer:* He then said, He was not able to go on account of his Health. Hereupon, that House taking this for an absolute Denial of their Commands, and considering his former *Answer*, in order to vindicate the Honour of their House, by some exemplary Punishment, *resolved*, That the Lord *Grey*, for his Disobedience, should forthwith, be sent Prisoner to the *Tower*. And, the next Day, his Commission in the Army was also taken from him; tho', very soon after, he was released from his Imprisonment, without any Petition, but not restored to his Command in the Army.

July 19. The following *Petition* was presented to the Lords, from the Assembly of Divines sitting at *Westminster:*

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS assembled in Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of divers MINISTERS of CHRIST, in the Name of themselves and of sundry others,

Humbly sheweth,

Petition from the Assembly of Divines.

THAT your Petitioners, upon serious Consideration, and deep Sense of God's heavy Wrath lying on us, and hanging over our Heads and the whole Nation, and manifested particularly by the two late sad and unexpected Defeats of our Forces in

in the North *and in the* West, *do apprehend it to be our Duty, as Watchmen for the Good of the Church and Kingdom, to present to your religious and prudent Consideration these ensuing Requests, in the Name of Jesus Christ, your Lord and ours:* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

First, *That you would be pleased to command a public and extraordinary Day of Humiliation, this Week, throughout the Cities of* London, Westminster, *the Suburbs of both, and Places adjacent within the weekly Bills of Mortality, that every one may bitterly bewail his own Sins, and cry mightily unto God, for Christ's Sake, to remove his Wrath, and to heal the Land; with professed and renewed Resolutions of more full Performance of the late* Covenant, *for the Amendment of our Ways.*

Secondly, *That you would vouchsafe instantly to take it into your most serious Consideration, how you may most speedily set up Christ more gloriously in all his Ordinances within this Kingdom, and reform all Things amiss throughout the Land, wherein God is more specially and more immediately dishonoured: Among which we humbly lay before you these Particulars;*

1. *That the brutish Ignorance and palpable Darkness possessing the greatest Part of the People in all Places of the Kingdom, whereby they are utterly unfit to wait upon God in any holy Duty, (to the great Dishonour of the Gospel, and the everlasting Endangering of their poor Souls) may be remedied by a speedy and strict Charge to all Ministers, constantly to catechize all the Youth and ignorant People, they being commanded to be subject to it, and all Sorts to be present at it; and Information to be given of all Persons who shall withstand or neglect it.*

2. *That the grievous and heinous Pollution of the Lord's Supper, by those that are grosly ignorant and notoriously profane, may be henceforth, with all Christian Care and due Circumspection, prevented.*

3. *That the bold Venting of corrupt Doctrines, directly contrary to the sacred Law of God, and religious Humiliation for Sin, which open a wide Door to all Libertinism and Disobedience to God*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

and Man, may be speedily suppressed every where, and that in such Manner as may give Hope that the Church may be no more infected with them.

4. *That the Profanation of any Part of the Lord's Day, and the Days of solemn Fasting, by buying, selling, working, sporting, travelling, or neglecting of God's Ordinances, may be remedied by appointing special Officers in every Place, for the due Execution of all good Laws and Ordinances against the same.*

5. *That there may be a thorough and speedy Proceeding against blind Guides and scandalous Ministers, by whose Wickedness People either lack or loath the Ordinances of the Lord, and Thousands of Souls perish; and the Removal of the Ark from among us, is, to the Trembling of our Hearts, evidently threatned: And that your Wisdoms would find out some Way to admit into the Ministry such godly and hopeful Men as have prepared themselves and are willing thereunto; without which there will suddenly be such a Scarcity of able and faithful Ministers, that it will be to little Purpose to cast out such as are unable, idle, or scandalous.*

6. *That the Laws may be quicken'd against Swearing and Drunkenness, with which the Land is filled and defiled, and under which it mourneth.*

7. *That some severe Course may be taken against Fornication, Adultery, and Incest, which do greatly abound, especially of late, by reason of Impunity.*

8. *That all Monuments of Idolatry and Superstition, but more especially the whole Body and Practice of Popery, may be totally abolished.*

9. *That Justice may be executed on all Delinquents, according to your solemn and religious* Vow *and* Protestation *to that Purpose.*

10. *That all possible Means may be used for the speedy Relief and Release of our miserable and extremely distressed Brethren, who are Prisoners in* Oxford, York, *and elsewhere, whose heavy Sufferings cry loud in the Ears of our God; and it would lie very heavy upon the Kingdom, should they miscarry, suffering as they do for the Cause of God.*

That

That so God, who is now, by the Sword, avenging the Quarrel of his Covenant, *beholding your Integrity and Zeal, may turn from the Fierceness of his Wrath, hear our Prayers, go forth with our Armies, perfect the Work of Reformation, forgive our Sins, and settle Truth and Peace throughout the Kingdom.* And the Petitioners shall ever pray, *&c.* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

This *Petition* was signed by forty-seven of the Assembly; and in *Answer* to it, the Lords appointed the next *Friday* for a solemn Day of Humiliation; and for the rest, they would take the same into Consideration. The *Order* for the Fast was in these Words:

A Fast ordered on account of the Defeat of the Parliament's Army in the North and West.

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, 'out of the deep Sense of God's heavy 'Wrath, now upon the Kingdom, and more par-'ticularly manifested by the late Discomfiture of 'the Forces, both in the *North* and in the *West*; 'have, for themselves, resolved to set a-part and 'keep, and do ordain and command, That *Fri-'day* the 21st of this present *July*, 1643, be set 'a-part and kept, as a Day of public and extra-'ordinary Humiliation, by Prayer and Fasting, 'throughout the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, 'and Suburbs, *&c.* that every Soul may bitterly 'bewail his own Sins and the Sins of the whole 'Nation; and cry mightily to God, for Christ's 'Sake, That he would be pleased to turn from 'us the Fierceness of his Wrath, and heal the 'Land.'

This *Order* was sent to the Lord-Mayor, *&c.* with a strict Command to see the due Execution of it.

The same Day a *Message* from the Lords was sent down to the Commons, importing, That, since by the Earl of *Rutland*'s Indisposition of Health, he cannot go as their Commissioner into *Scotland* so speedily as the Business requires, and that the Lord *Grey* is imprisoned for Contempt,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

they would think of another Lord to be sent in his Stead: But, least the Affair should suffer by further Delay, the Lords desired, That the Commons would send their Commissioners away presently; and the other should follow with all convenient Speed.

Commissioners appointed to go into Scotland.

About the same Time, the Commons sent up Copies of Credential Letters for their Commissioners, directed to the Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, and the Council of State there, and another to the Earl of *Leven*, inviting him to take the Command of the Army which the *Scots* should send into *England*, as having been the *Scots* General against the Rebels in *Ireland*: Assuring him, That it would lay upon this State and them such an Obligation, as they should study to answer in a Manner proportionable, *&c.* Along with the former was sent, by the Commissioners, a *Declaration* of the Lords and Commons in *England* to the General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*, recommending their Commissioners to them; as, also, Mr. *Stephen Marshall* and Mr. *Philip Nye*, both Ministers of God's Word, and Men of approved Faithfulness and Abilities in their Functions. Also a *Declaration* of the Lords and Commons in *England*, to the Kingdom and States of *Scotland*: Both which last, being printed at Length in *Rushworth*, are unnecessary here. We shall only subjoin the Parliament's particular *Instructions* to their Commissioners, as they stand in the *Lords Journals*; these not being printed in the *Collections*.

INSTRUCTIONS, *agreed upon by the* LORDS *and* COMMONS *in* PARLIAMENT, *for* John *Earl of* Rutland, *Sir* William Armyn, *Bart. Sir* Henry Vane, *junior*, *Knight*, Thomas Hatcher, *and* Henry Darley, *Esquires*, *appointed Commissioners to the Kingdom of* Scotland.

The Parliament's Instructions to them.

I. 'YOU shall forthwith repair to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, either to *Edinburgh* or 'other Parts as you see Cause; and you shall 'make

'make your Addresses to the Parliament or any 'deputed by them, to the Assembly of the States 'or any Commissioners appointed by them, the 'General Assembly of the Church or the Com- 'missioners of the General Assembly, the Lords 'of the Secret Council, Commissioners for Con- 'servation of the Peace of the Kingdom, the 'Commissioners of Common Burdens, and such 'others as shall have power and Authority to treat 'with you, upon such Matters as you have recei- 'ved or shall receive in Charge, and to negociate 'in that Kingdom as Commissioners of and from 'the Parliament of *England*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

II. 'You shall take all fit Ways and Oppor- 'tunities to make known to the State and Nation 'of *Scotland* the great Miseries, Calamities, and 'Dangers, brought upon this Church and King- 'dom by the Faction of Papists and Prelates, and 'their Adherents; whereby we are disabled, for 'the present, to make Payment of those great 'Debts which are owing to them for the Remain- 'der of the Brotherly-Assistance Money, and the 'Arrear of their Army in *Ireland*.

III. 'You shall take Care of stating and settling 'all Accounts, Debts and Demands, betwixt the 'two Nations of *England* and *Scotland*; and, the 'same being reduced to a Certainty, you shall 'treat and compound for the Time and Manner 'of Satisfaction for the said Debts, in such Man- 'ner as shall stand with Justice and the Conveni- 'ency of both Kingdoms.

IV. 'As touching the Remainder of the Bro- 'therly-Assistance Money, it is conceived most 'just and reasonable (because the War upon the 'Subjects and People of *Scotland*, begun and prose- 'cuted in the Years 1640 and 1641, was procured 'by the Faction of Papists, Prelates, and their Ad- 'herents, which was the Cause of the coming of 'the *Scots* into this Kingdom, and of the Engage- 'ment thereupon made for their Satisfaction) that 'sufficient Lands of Papists, Prelates, and other Ma- 'lignants as have adhered to them, shall, by the

An. 10. Car. I. 1643. July.

'Direction and Appointment of both Houses of Parliament, be set forth, out of which Recompence 'shall be made for the Forbearance of that Money, untill such Time as Satisfaction shall be 'given for the Discharge of all the said Debts, 'with the Interest and Consideration for the Forbearance thereof.

V. 'As for the Arrears due to the *Scots* Army 'in *Ireland*, it being impossible for this State, by 'reason of the manifold Troubles and Burdens 'which lie upon it, to make present Payment, it 'is desired, That our Brethren of *Scotland* think 'upon some other Way how we may give Satisfaction, either in the confiscated Lands in *Ireland* 'by way of Adventure, according to the Rates 'and Proportions at which they are to be delivered to the *English* Adventurers; or else by Instalment, at four equal Payments, within two Years 'after the Peace of this Kingdom shall be settled; 'or else in Provision in Victuals and Apparel, to 'be delivered at reasonable Rates in *Scotland*, or 'any other Place; or any other Way within the 'Power of the two Houses: It being our earnest 'Desire to give our Brethren full Contentment 'herein, so far as God shall enable us thereunto.

VI. 'You shall, according to the precedent 'Articles, treat and conclude for the Discharge 'of both the Debts aforementioned; that is, the 'Remainder of the Brotherly-Assistance Money 'and the Arrear of the Army in *Ireland*, and such 'further Payments as shall grow due, untill they 'shall be dismissed, in any of these Ways as shall 'be agreeable to our Brethren: And you shall 'receive any further or other Propositions from 'them concerning the same; and such Propositions certify to the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that so you may receive further Directions therein.

VII. 'You shall, with the like Plainness 'and Truth, make known to our Brethren of '*Scotland*, that we are, by these Troubles, made 'al-

'altogether unable to continue the Charge of the 'Army in *Ireland*; therefore, lest it should be-'come too great a Burden to them in our Disa-'bility of Payment, we desire the said Army 'may be dismissed in some short Time; only such 'Garrisons to be kept on Foot, as our Brethren 'shall think fit to retain for the Guard of *Carrick-'fergus* and *Coleraine*, according to the Treaty in 'that Behalf.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

VIII. 'You shall mediate and conclude an 'Establishment of the same Garrisons, both for 'the Number of Men (not exceeding 2000) and 'their Allowances, which the two Houses will 'undertake to discharge accordingly in Money 'or Provisions, at reasonable Rates to be agreed 'upon.

IX. 'You shall put our Brethren in Mind, 'That the Popish and Prelatical Faction, which 'begun with them in the Year 1640 and 1641, 'and intended to make Way for our Ruin by theirs, 'and so to have corrupted and altered Religion in 'the whole Island, have not diminished in any 'Part of their Malice towards them; or at all 'departed from their Design, but only varied in 'the Manner of their Proceeding; conceiving 'that they have an easy Way to destroy them, 'if they may first prevail over us: And thereupon 'you shall use your utmost Endeavour to persuade 'and excite our Brethren to join with us in the 'Common Cause, not only of the two Kingdoms, 'but of all the Professors of the Protestant Reli-'gion; for the total and universal Suppression 'whereof they may discern that the Pope and his 'Faction, in several Factions, are strongly com-'bined.

X. 'You shall desire therefore, That both 'Nations may be straitly united and tied for our 'mutual Defence against the Papists and Prelatical 'Faction, and their Adherents, in both King-'doms; and not lay down Arms till they shall be 'disarmed, and subjected to the Authority and

'Justice

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'Justice of Parliament in both Kingdoms respectively: For the effecting whereof, we desire our 'Brethren of *Scotland* to raise an Army of 10,000 'Foot and 1000 Horse or more, to be forthwith sent against the Papists, Prelatical Faction, 'and Malignants; the same to be commanded by 'the Earl of *Leven*, or such other General as shall 'be appointed by the States of *Scotland*, according to the Orders and Directions of both Houses 'of Parliament; and to be paid, according to 'such an Establishment as shall be agreed on, 'out of such Revenues of Papists, Malignants, 'and other Delinquents, as shall be assigned for 'that Purpose by the two Houses of Parliament.

XI. 'You shall take Care that the City of '*Carlisle* and the Town of *Berwick*, whensoever 'they shall be secured from the Papists and Malignants, be delivered over unto the Hands of such 'Persons and Garrisons as shall be appointed by 'the two Houses of Parliament to receive and defend the same.

XII. 'For the Charge in raising and arming 'those Men, we shall give our Brethren Satisfaction as speedily as may be; and if the Reason 'of the War require that those Forces, or any 'Part thereof, be employed on this Side *Tees*, or 'that it shall be so desired and directed by the 'Lords and Commons in Parliament, they are, in 'such Case, to be subject to the Order and Command of his Excellency the Earl of *Essex*, or 'such other as shall be appointed Lord-General by 'the two Houses of Parliament.

XIII. 'You shall assure our Brethren of *Scotland*, That, if they shall be annoyed or endangered 'by any Force or Army, either from *England* or 'any other Place, the Lords and Commons of '*England* will assist them with a proportionable 'Army of 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horse, or 'more, to be sent into *Scotland* for their Defence, 'under such Order and Directions as shall be 'thought fit by the Parliament or State of *Scot-*

'*land*;

'*land*; and if any Invasion of the *Irish* Rebels, 'or other Enemies, shall happen during such 'Time as their Army shall be employed for the 'Defence of this Kingdom, you shall agree with 'them for a Guard of Ships to be maintained by 'us upon that Coast.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

XIV. 'And, that the mutual Interest and 'Dangers of both Kingdoms may be defended 'and preserved by both, you shall, on the Be'half of the Lords and Commons of *England*, 'contract and agree with the Kingdom and States 'of *Scotland*, that no Pacification, or Agreement 'for Peace, shall be concluded, by the two Houses 'of Parliament, without sufficient Caution and 'Provision for the Security, Peace, and Safety, of 'that Kingdom; the Indemnity of all Persons 'and States for and concerning the Aid and Assist'ance, which shall be given to this Parliament 'and Kingdom, for the Suppression of the Po'pish and ill-affected Party among them; the 'safe and peaceable Return of their Forces sent 'hither, and the real Performance of all Articles 'agreed upon with them.

XV. 'You shall receive the Public Faith of 'that Kingdom, that neither their Entrance into, 'nor Continuance in, this Kingdom, in Arms, shall 'be made use of to the Prejudice of the Rights and 'Prerogatives of the Crown of *England*, nor of 'the Liberties and Privileges of the Subjects; 'but that all Matters concerning the same be 'determined by the two Houses of Parliament; 'and that as our Brethren shall be pleased to come 'in to help us, at our Request, so their Forces 'shall be always ready to depart this Kingdom 'whensoever they shall, by both Houses of Par'liament, be thereunto desired.

XVI. 'You shall further consider, with our 'Brethren of *Scotland*, what other Articles or 'Propositions may be fit to be added and con'cluded; whereby the Assistance and Union be'twixt the two Nations may be made more be-

neficial,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643 July.

'neficial, and effectual for the Security and Defence of Religion and Liberty in both Kingdoms: And you shall certify all such Propositions to the two Houses of Parliament, and thereupon proceed to a Conclusion, as you shall receive further Direction from them.

'You are, together with 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horse, or more, desired of our Brethren of *Scotland* for our Assistance, to consider, agree and conclude, with them concerning a fitting Train of Artillery to accompany the same.

'You are to represent to our Brethren of *Scotland* the Desire of both Houses, that the Earl of *Antrim* may be examined with Reference to the Affairs of this Kingdom, upon such Interrogatories as shall be, by you, framed and propounded in that Behalf, or such as shall be hereafter appointed by both Houses; which Examinations you are to return unto the Houses with all convenient Speed.

'You are to prosecute the *Instructions* formerly given, by the two Houses, unto *Michael Welden* and *John Corbet*, Esquires, concerning the six Earls of *Scotland* voted Incendiaries by both Houses*.

'And whereas by Act of Parliament in both Kingdoms, concerning the Treaty of Peace between the two Nations, two Commissions, the one for conserving of Peace, and the other for Trade, are directed and appointed; which Commissions are passed and consented to by the two Houses of Parliament; you are therefore, according to the said Commissions, and in the Capacity of Commissioners in that Behalf, to treat and advise of all such Matters as, by the said Act of Parliament is appointed; and to carry with you authentic Copies of the same, and them to deliver to the Commissioners for conserving of Peace, as you shall see Cause.

'You

* The Earls of *Roxburgh*, *Morton*, *Annandale*, *Kinnoul*, *Carnwath*, and *Lanerk*.

'You are to represent to the General Assembly 'of *Scotland*, or to the Commissioners appointed 'by them, the Care and Endeavours of both 'Houses for a perfect Reformation in this Church, 'and the happy Progress made by them therein; 'for the better accomplishing whereof they have 'called an Assembly of Godly and Learned Di- 'vines, who are now sitting; and that, by reason 'of the Prevalency of the Papists, Prelatical Fac- 'tion, and other Malignant Enemies to this so 'much desired Reformation, now in Arms against 'the Parliament, these good Beginnings are like 'to receive Interruption, if they be not utterly 'disappointed: And therefore you are not only to 'desire Assistance of that Reverend and Godly As- 'sembly, for the carrying on this Work with their 'Prayers, but also by such seasonable and effec- 'tual Means, as to them shall seem meet; and 'you are to co-operate with the States of the 'Kingdom of *Scotland*, for the effecting of the 'Desires of both Houses in the necessary Supplies 'and Aid now desired of our Brethren.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'You are also, according to the Desires of both 'Houses, formerly express'd in their *Instructions* 'to *John Corbet*, Esq; and now in their *Declara-* 'tion to the General Assembly, to solicit the 'speeding away of such and so many Reverend 'and Godly Divines as they shall make Choice 'of, to be Assistants in the Assembly called by 'the two Houses.'

July 22. A Letter to the Speaker of the House of Lords, from the Council of War, was read; the Occasion of it will be best known from its own Words:

My Lord, Brickhill, July 25, 1643.

WE have, after divers Addresses to the Houses, with Patience expected Recruits and Supplies of Men, Horses, Saddles, and Arms, to enable us to do the State that Service which we most heartily wish we could perform: And we have, in Modesty, for-

A Letter from the Council of War, in the Earl of Essex's Army.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

forborne to press the Necessity of the Armies upon your Lordships, so often as the Condition thereof required, till now we are driven to that Exigent that we can be no longer silent; we must therefore, to discharge that Trust reposed in us, make known unto your Lordships, That the Army is much decayed very suddenly, partly by the Mortality and Sickness which hath befallen us, and which lieth still upon us; and partly for Want of Pay and Clothing, our Soldiers being grown bare, and many of them almost naked; and the Running away of our Soldiers is not the least Occasion of our Weakness, who are encouraged to leave us, out of a Report of raising new Armies, wherein they hope they shall be entertained.

We hold it, now, fit to make public the particular Condition of the Army; not knowing whether it will be more pleasing to their Lordships to refer the Information thereof to such as shall be appointed, by your Lordships, to receive the particular Relation thereof from those who are herewith sent to give a full Satisfaction therein: But thus much we shall be bold to say, That if a constant Course be not held that the Soldiers may be duely paid and better cloathed, and the Recruits of Men, Horse, Saddles, and Arms, may likewise be provided, it will be impossible for us to answer your Expectations, or discharge the Duties of our Place; whereof we have thought fit to give your Lordships timely Notice, that we may not, hereafter, have it laid to our Charge that we have dealt unfaithfully in concealing that which, in the End, and that too soon, will be the Destruction and Overthrow of this Army, if speedy Course be not taken to supply the Wants, and prevent our further Weakness, occasioned chiefly by those Particulars mentioned; some whereof will rest in your Lordship's Power to provide against.

My Lord, it concerning our Honour and the Safety of the Kingdom, we must deal plainly and clearly with you, That if a speedy Care be not had, there will not, in a few Days, be left the Face of

of an Army here amongst us: All which we refer to your Lordship's most serious and speedy Consideration, and rest An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

Your Lordship's

Humble Servants,

THOMAS GREY,	JA. HOLBORNE,
WILLIAM BROOKE,	LIONEL COPLEY,
JOHN MIDDLETON,	JOHN MERRICK,
HARRY BARCLAY,	PHIL. SKIPPON.
JOHN BURGOYN,	PHIL. STAPYLTON,
FRANCIS RUSSEL,	EDWARD ALDRICH,
THOMAS TYRRELL,	SAMUEL LUKE.

This Letter was ordered to be communicated to the Commons, at a Conference; after which both Houses fell upon various Ways and Means to raise Money, of which they were then in great Want. They, also, agreed that a large Body of Horse should be raised; and this Day, *July* 25, a long *Ordinance* was read and agreed to for that Purpose. This Army was to be commanded by the Earl of *Manchester*, and was, as it is declared in the *Ordinance*, to prevent the great Mischiefs done by the King's Horse, his Army being said to be vastly superior in that Kind of Force.

The Parliament resolve to raise another under the Earl of Manchester.

The rest of the Transactions of this Month, any way relative to our Design, will be comprised in a very little Room.——Sir *John Conyers*, Lieutenant of the *Tower*, having asked Leave of both Houses to go into *Holland*, with his Lady, for two Months, it was agreed to; and the Lord Mayor and the two Sheriffs of *London* were appointed to execute that Office till the other's Return. Sir *William Waller*, also, having lost his own Army in the *West*, was authorized to command all the Militia in and about *London*.

The Earl of *Portland* and the Lord *Conway*, having now lain as Prisoners seven Weeks, on the single Testimony of Mr. *Waller* against them, were, by the Lords, admitted to Bail. The Earl of

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

of *Denbigh* and the Lord *Hunsdon* for the former, and the Earl of *Bedford* and Lord *Howard* of *Eskrick* for the latter, in 1000*l.* each; to be forfeited to the King, if, after Notice, they did not appear before the Parliament in three Days Time.

July 31. To close this Month, we shall give an authentic Proof of the Weakness the Parliament was reduced to at this Time, from their Lord-General *Essex's Propositions*; which were delivered to the Earl of *Northumberland*, by some Officers of the Army, sent on purpose to the Committee of Safety; and by the said Earl again presented to the House of Lords, as a Matter deserving the most serious Regard of both Houses of Parliament. They bore this Title:

CONSIDERATIONS *to be offered to the Parliament, concerning the Weakness of the Army, and the* EXPEDIENTS *for Remedy thereof.*

The Earl of Essex's Proposals for reinforcing his Army.

'THE Number of Foot are 3000 marching Men, and at least 3000 sick, occasioned by the Want of Pay, ill Cloathing, and all other Miseries which attend an unpaid sickly Army.

'The Number of the Horse 2500, (3000 last Muster) occasioned by the Loss of Horses upon hard Duty and Service, and other Casualties incident to Horse in Service; Recruits of Horse, though often desired, not performed. Besides, by reason of a new Army being raised, the Officers find themselves neglected, the present Regiments much lessened, listing themselves elsewhere for the new Army, expecting better Pay and Cloathing; and, upon their going hence, are entertained and protected: And great Discouragements and Scandals put upon his Excellency, the Officers, and Army, either through false Suggestions of some amongst us, or the Misunderstanding of others; poisoning the Affections of the People, which hinders Recruits and Contributions.

'As

'As Remedies for which Mischiefs we offer 'these Things:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

1. 'A speedy Pay of Arrears, and a constant 'Pay settled for the future; which will draw on 'Recruits, and give Way to more strict Discipline: And that Cloaths may be provided according to 1000 for every Regiment: To which 'Purpose an *Ordinance* for a Press may be immediately passed.

2. 'That 500 Horse be sent, and 200 provided, 'monthly, for Recruits.

3. 'That the Forces to be raised may not be 'put into a new Army untill the old Regiments 'be recruited: No Officer or Soldier to be entertained into any other Employment: And that 'severe Punishment be executed upon such, and 'those that entertain them.

4. 'That such as shall be found guilty of any 'Scandals laid upon his Excellency, any of his 'Officers, or Army, may be severely punished; 'whereby the like Offences may be no more committed: And a *Declaration* of both Houses passed, for the Vindication of his Excellency and 'them.

5. 'That full Power having been given to his 'Excellency, by an *Ordinance* of both Houses, 'for the granting of all Commissions for the raising or commanding of any Forces, Towns, or 'Garrisons: It is conceived most requisite, for 'the better ordering of the Army, that no Commission be granted whatsoever, but from his Excellency; the Want of which breeds Disobedience to his Excellency's Commands, to the 'Prejudice of the Kingdom.

6. 'That the Loss of the *West* is rumoured to 'be occasioned by his Excellency. Desired, it 'may be thoroughly examined what the Loss was, 'and the Occasion of it.'

July 28, 1643. *ESSEX.*

The

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

The Lords taking these *Considerations* into serious Debate, came to the following *Resolutions:*

1. 'That the Lord-General's Army shall be recruited in the first Place, by all possible Means; and, for the speedier expediting thereof, their Lordships think it fit that an *Ordinance* of both Houses be passed for pressing of Soldiers.

2. 'That a *Declaration* be published, to vindicate the Lord-General, his Commanders and Officers, from Scandals and Aspersions.

3. 'That a *Declaration* may be published, that no Commander, or Soldier, of the Lord-General's Army, shall be entertained in the City, or any other Place; if they be seen there they shall be punished.

4. 'That such Persons, that shall be employed in the Army under the Lord-General, shall be under his Command, and receive their Commissions from him.

5. 'That it be recommended to the House of Commons, to provide for the paying the Arrears of the Army, and to recruit him with 200 Horses monthly.

6. 'That their Lordships hold it fit that the Rumour of losing the *West* be examined.'

Ordered, That these *Considerations* and *Remedies*, with the Sense of this House, shall be communicated to the House of Commons at a Conference, and their Concurrence herein desired.

August 3. Many Alterations had been made, from Time to Time, in the Parliament's *Ordinance* for the general Weekly Assessment, as well as in that for sequestring Delinquents Estates, *&c.* occasioned chiefly by a wrong Interpretation of these new Acts of Power, or the Partiality of the Collectors. To remedy which, the former *Ordinance* was now regulated, and put on a Footing to stand throughout *England* and *Wales*; and, this Day, being agreed to by both Houses, was ordered to be printed and published. This *Ordinance* which is neither in *Rushworth*'s *Collections*, nor *Hus-*

Husband's, nor in any other that we have seen, we give from the *Lords Journals*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

The Preamble runs thus:

An Ordinance for laying a Weekly Assessment, throughout England and Wales, for carrying on the War.

'THE Lords and Commons now assembled in 'Parliament, being fully satisfied, and re-'solved in their Consciences, that they have law-'fully taken up Arms, and may and ought to 'continue the same for the necessary Defence of 'the true Reformed Religion, of themselves and 'the Parliament, from Violence and Destruction, 'and of this Kingdom from foreign Invasion, and 'for the bringing of notorious Offenders to con-'dign Punishment; which are the only Causes for 'which they have raised, and do continue, an 'Army and Force, which cannot possibly be main-'tained, nor the Kingdom subsist, without the 'speedy raising of large and considerable Sums of 'Money, proportionable to the great Expences 'which now this Kingdom is at, for the support-'ing of the said Army, and for the saving of the 'whole Kingdom, our Religion, Laws, and Liber-'ties, from utter Ruin and Destruction: Which 'that it may be done with as much Ease and In-'differency to the good Subjects, as the Exigence 'of the Time will permit, the said Lords and 'Commons do *ordain*, &c.

The enacting Clauses, in which, for Brevity's Sake, we have left out the Words of Form, run thus:

'That for the several Purposes aforesaid, the 'weekly Sums of Money hereafter mentioned, shall 'be levied upon all the Counties, Cities, Towns, 'Liberties, Places, and Persons hereafter mention-'ed, according to the Proportions herein express'd, 'to be paid in weekly to the Collectors appointed 'for receiving thereof.

	L.	s.
Bedfordshire,	220	00
Berkshire,	550	00
Buckinghamshire,	420	00
Cambridgeshire,	375	00
Isle of *Ely*,	147	10

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

	L.	s.
Cheſhire,	175	00
City of *Cheſter* and County thereof	62	00
Cornwal,	625	00
Cumberland,	37	10
Derbyſhire,	175	00
Devonſhire,	1800	00
City of *Exeter* and County thereof,	50	10
Dorſetſhire,	705	00
Durham,	62	10
Eſſex	1125	00
Glouceſterſhire,	750	00
City of *Glouceſter*, and County thereof,	62	10
Hampſhire, with the City of *Wincheſter*, *Southampton*, and the Iſle of *Wight*,	750	00
Herefordſhire, and City of *Hereford*,	437	10
Hertfordſhire	450	00
Huntingdonſhire,	220	00
Kent, with the Cities there	1250	00
Lancaſhire,	500	00
Leiceſterſhire,	187	10
Lincolnſhire, with the City of *Lincoln*	812	10
Middleſex, and the City and Liberty of *Weſtminſter*,	750	00
Monmouthſhire,	62	10
Norfolk, with the City of *Norwich*,	1250	00
Northumberland,	50	00
Newcaſtle upon *Tyne*,	25	00
Northamptonſhire,	425	00
Nottinghamſhire,	187	10
Oxfordſhire,	400	00
Rutlandſhire,	62	10
Salop,	375	00
Somerſetſhire,	1050	00
City of *Briſtol*,	55	15
Staffordſhire,	212	10
City of *Litchfield*,	45	00
Suffolk,	1250	00
Surrey, with the Borough of *Southwark*,	500	00
Suſſex,	625	00

War-

	L.	s.	An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.
Warwickshire,	562	10	
Coventry, County and City thereof	37	10	
Westmoreland,	27	05	
Wiltshire,	725	00	
Worcestershire	150	00	
Worcester, City and County thereof,	16	13	
Yorkshire,	1062	10	
York City, and County thereof,	62	00	
Kingston upon *Hull*,	25	00	
W A L E S.			
Anglesey,	25	00	
Brecknock,	50	10	
Cardigan,	62	10	
Carmarthen,	50	00	
Carnarvan,	30	00	
Denbigh,	25	00	
Flint,	16	10	
Glamorgan,	67	10	
Merioneth,	12	10	
Montgomery,	62	10	
Pembroke,	50	00	
Haverford-West,	5	00	
Radnor,	37	10	

'Every Person of the Estate of a Baron or Baroness, and every Estate above, and every other 'Person born within *England*, *Wales*, or other the 'King's Dominions, as well Ecclesiastical as 'Temporal; and every Corporation, Fraternity, 'Guild, Mystery, Brotherhood and Commonalty, 'Corporate or not Corporate, shall pay towards 'the Weekly Sum so assessed upon each County, 'according as the same shall be tax'd upon the re-'spective Town, Hamlet, Parish, or Place where 'such Person is chargeable, his respective Propor-'tion for whatsoever he hath to his own proper 'Use, as well in Coin as in Plate, Stock of Mer-'chandize, or any Manner of Corn, Grain, 'Houshold Stuff, and of all other Goods and 'Moveables, as well within this Realm as with-'out, and of all such Sums of Money as to him is

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'owing, whereof he trusts in his Conscience to be 'paid, except Money that he doth owe, and, in 'his Conscience intends truly to pay; and ex-'cept also the Apparel of every such Person, their 'Wives and Children, belonging to their own Bo-'dies, saving Jewels, Gold, Silver, Stones, Pearl: 'And every Alien and Stranger, born out of the 'King's Obeysance, as well Denizens as others, 'inhabiting within this Realm; and also every 'Popish Recusant, convict or not convict, shall 'pay a Proportion double to those of the like E-'states, being no Aliens or Recusants.

'Every Person born within the King's Obey-'sance, as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal; and 'every Corporation, Fraternity, *&c.* shall also, 'for every Estate which such Person, Corporation, 'Fraternity, *&c.* or any other to their Use, in 'Trust or otherwise, hath, in Fee-Simple, Fee-'Tail, or Term of Life, Term of Years, by Ex-'ecutorship, Wardship, or by Copy of Court-'Roll, in any Honours, Castles, Manors, Lands, 'Tenements, Rents, Services, Tythes, Obliga-'tions, Obventions, Annuities, Offices of Profit, 'Fees, Corrodies, or other yearly Profits or He-'reditaments, as well within antient Demesne and 'other Places privileged, as elsewhere, shall pay 'towards the said Weekly Sums his Proportion 'thereof as charged upon each County as aforesaid, 'according to the true Intent and Meaning of 'this *Ordinance*. Excepted always from this As-'sessment, all the Goods, Chattels, and Orna-'ments belonging to any Church or Chapel for the 'Service of Almighty God; and except yearly 'Wages due to Servants.

'And the said several Sums so charged upon the 'several Counties, Cities, *&c.* shall be rated be-'fore the tenth Day of *August*, 1643; and the said 'Weekly Payments are to continue for two 'Months (accounting 28 Days to the Month) 'next ensuing, from the said tenth Day of *Au-'gust*, unless the King's Army shall be disbanded 'in the mean Time.'

Next

Next follow the Names *of the* Commiſſioners *for executing this* Ordinance *in each County*, &c. *but theſe, being moſtly the ſame with thoſe appointed for the* Sequeſtration *of* Delinquents Eſtates, *before given at large, we paſs over, and proceed with our Abſtract of the* Ordinance.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'The Commiſſioners of the ſeveral Counties 'and Places, or the greateſt Part of them, ſhall, 'with all convenient Speed, after Notice of this '*Ordinance*, meet together in ſome convenient 'Place within their ſeveral Counties and Places; 'and may there agree to divide themſelves, for 'the Execution of the ſaid Service, into ſuch 'Hundreds, Places, and Diviſions within their re'ſpective Counties, *&c.* as to them ſhall ſeem 'expedient; and afterwards they, or any two of 'them, reſpectively, ſhall direct their Warrants 'to ſuch Number of Perſons as they ſhall think 'fit, within their ſeveral Diviſions, to appear be'fore them; and, upon their Appearance, the ſaid 'Commiſſioners, or any two of them, ſhall ap'point ſuch Perſons as they think fit within their 'reſpective Diviſions, who ſhall have Power to 'aſſeſs every Perſon, Corporation, Fraternity, *&c.* 'according to the Weekly Rates and Proportions 'in this *Ordinance* mentioned.

'And the reſpective Commiſſioners, or any 'two of them, ſhall have Power within their re'ſpective Limits, to nominate Collectors for the 'Money ſo aſſeſs'd, who ſhall pay the ſame to 'the Treaſurers of the Army, raiſed by the Par'liament, for the Time being, at *Guildhall*, *Lon'don*; or at ſuch Place, or to ſuch Perſons, as the 'ſaid Commiſſioners ſhall appoint: And if any 'Perſon, Corporation, Fraternity, *&c.* ſhall refuſe 'to pay the Sums upon them aſſeſs'd, or ſhall not 'pay the ſame upon Demand at the Place of his 'Abode, or where ſuch Aſſeſſment ſhall be made, 'it ſhall be lawful for the Collectors, or any two 'of them, to levy all Sums ſo aſſeſs'd by way of

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'Diſtreſs and Sale of their Goods, wherever the 'ſame ſhall be found; and to break open any 'Houſe, Cheſt, Trunk, Box, or any other Thing 'wherein ſuch Goods are; and if any Perſon ſo 'diſtrained ſhall make Reſiſtance, it ſhall be law-'ful for the ſaid Collectors, as they ſhall ſee Cauſe, 'to call to their Aſſiſtance any of the Train'd 'Bands, or Companies of Volunteers, or other 'Forces, within the County or Place where ſuch 'Reſiſtance ſhall be made, or any other Perſon 'dwelling in or near the Place; and the ſaid 'Train'd Bands, *&c.* are required to be aſſiſting 'to the ſaid Collectors at their Peril.

'Every Perſon ſhall be rated, in every County, 'for the Eſtate he hath, either in Lands, Tene-'ments, Hereditaments, Rents, Annuities, Fees, 'Offices, Goods, Cattle, or Chattels in that Coun-'ty only; and if he has an Eſtate, either in 'Lands, Tenements. *&c.* in more Counties than 'one, then to be rated in each County according 'to ſuch his Eſtate.

'All Lands, Tenements, *&c.* of every Perſon, 'of what Degree ſoever, ſhall be rated towards 'raiſing of the ſaid Weekly Sum charged by this '*Ordinance*; with this Proviſo, That if the Lands 'be ſet at, or lett near, the yearly Value thereof, 'in the Poſſeſſion of any Tenant for Life, Lives, 'Years, or at Will, ſuch Perſon, to whom the 'Rent thereof belongeth, to be ſolely chargeable 'therewith; but if the ſame be lett at any Under-'Value, then the Sum taxed to be apportioned 'between the Party to whom the Rent belongeth 'and the Tenant thereof, as the Taxers ſhall think 'meet; and if any of them ſhall do any Injury, 'the ſame to be rectified by the Commiſſioners, 'or any two of them, within their ſeveral Limits, 'according to their Diſcretion: And if any ſuch 'Tenant of Lands, *&c.* ſhall be charged with 'any Sum, contrary to the true Meaning of this '*Ordinance*, it ſhall be lawful for ſuch Tenant 'to ſtop the ſame out of his Rent due for the ſame 'Lands, or to take his lawful Remedy againſt ſuch

'Per-

'Person to whom the said Rent is due, (who ought 'by the true Meaning of this *Ordinance*, to be 'charged therewith) by Action of Debt, wherein 'no Wager of Law, Protection, or Essoign shall 'be allowed.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'All Persons having any Debts or Sums of Money owing to them within this Realm, or any 'Debts, Goods, or Sums of Money beyond the 'Seas, out of his Majesty's Dominions, shall be 'charged for the same in the Place of his Residence at the Time of the Taxation.

'No Person having two Mansions to resort to, 'and calling himself Houshold Servant or Waiting 'Servant to the King's Majesty or other Persons, 'shall be excused from Payment to this Assessment: And if any Person, by Craft, happen to 'escape from the said Payment, according to the 'true Meaning of this *Ordinance*, and that proved 'before the said Commissioners, or any two of 'them, then every such Person shall be charged 'the treble Value of so much as he should have 'been taxed at; and the same to be levied by Distress and Sale of his Goods: And if no Distress 'be found, then the said Collectors shall respectively 'have Power to enquire for any Money, due or to 'be due to the Persons so assess'd, for any Rents 'or Goods whatsoever, and to compound for any 'of the said Rents, Goods, *&c.* with any Person 'by whom they are due; also to give a full Discharge for the Money by them so received upon 'Composition, or otherwise; which Discharge 'shall be valid to all Intents and Purposes.

'If any Person shall find himself over-rated, 'such Person, before Distress taken, may complain 'to the Commissioners within that Division, which 'Commissioners, or any two of them, shall have 'Power to give Relief as they shall see Cause; and 'if any Person so aggrieved, be such as have not 'formerly contributed to the *Propositions*, or not 'paid upon the *Ordinance* for assessing of such as 'have not contributed at all, or not contributed

'ac-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'according to the Proportion of their Estates, then 'the said Parties, if they be not assess'd above a 'proportionable Part as other Men of their Ability have paid upon the *Propositions*, or have paid 'upon the said *Ordinance*, not exceeding the twentieth Part, the Rates so assess'd to stand without 'Appeal: Provided that no Person be assess'd above the Sum of 10 *l.* the Week.

'And for the Encouragement of the Collectors, 'Three-pence in the Pound shall be allowed for 'every Sum paid to the Receivers appointed by 'this *Ordinance*, Two-pence whereof shall be allowed to the Collectors, and the Residue to such 'other Persons as shall be employed in the said 'Service, according to the Discretion of the Commissioners.

'And that all the Monies assess'd may be collected, the respective Assessors shall, within one 'Week after their respective Assessments made, return their several Assessments to the Commissioners for their respective Divisions; who are hereby 'required, within ten Days after, to deliver a Copy 'thereof, subscribed with their Hands, to the Collectors within their Divisions; and also to send 'up another Copy to the Treasurer of the Army, 'raised by the Parliament, for the Time being, 'that the said Treasurer may know thereby what 'he is to receive of every Parish, *&c.* within the 'Realm; which Sums shall be paid to the said 'Treasurer at *Guildhall*, *London*.

'And if any Assessors or Collectors shall refuse 'the said Service, or be faulty therein, the Commissioners for the Divisions where such are, shall 'have Power to commit them to Prison, or to set 'such a Fine upon them as they shall think fit, not 'exceeding the Sum of 20 *l.* upon the Assessor, 'or the Sum of 5 *l.* upon the Collector, the same 'to be levied by Distress and Sale: And if any 'Person so assess'd as aforesaid, shall conceal his 'Goods, so that no Distress can be taken, or the 'Sum so assess'd levied by any the Ways in this

'*Or-*

'*Ordinance* mentioned, then the Collectors shall 'certify the same; in case he be a Peer, unto the 'Lords in Parliament; and, if he be under that 'Degree, to the Committee of Lords and Com-'mons appointed for the Advance of Monies; 'which Committee shall have Power to send for 'such Persons as Delinquents, and commit them 'Prisoners to such Place within this Kingdom, 'and for so long a Time, as the Committee for 'Examinations shall think fit.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'All the Assessors and Collectors, and all that 'shall assist them in the Premises, shall be protect-'ed, by both Houses of Parliament, from all Da-'mage that may come to them by this Service; 'and shall further receive such Allowances for their 'Charge, and Obedience in the Execution of this '*Ordinance*, as, upon Certificate from the Com-'missioners, or any two of them, shall be thought 'fit by the Committee of the House of Commons 'for Examinations.

'Lastly, Where no Commissioners are named 'in this *Ordinance* for any County, *&c.* such other 'Commissioners as are appointed by Parliament 'shall put this present *Ordinance* in Execution 'within any such County, *&c.*

'Provided that no Peer of this Realm shall, 'by virtue of this *Ordinance*, be rated for any of 'his Mansion-houses, with the Appurtenances, in 'any Place whatsoever; but that the Assessors shall 'certify the same unto the House of Peers, that 'such Peers may be there rated for the same ac-'cording to this *Ordinance*.

'And whereas, by this *Ordinance*, the Inhabi-'tants of the City of *London* are not to be rated, 'in respect of the great Proportion laid upon them 'by the late Weekly Assessment for three Months, 'it is now *ordered*, That those Persons within the 'said City of *London*, which have not paid the said 'Assessment, formerly rated on them, shall, in 'case they pay not the same within twenty Days 'after the Date of this *Ordinance*, be rated for the

'Space

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'Space of two Months as other Counties, by this 'Ordinance, are to be.'

Aug. 4. The Lords received Letters from the Lord *Willoughby* of *Parham*, dated *August* 1, but not entered in their *Journals*, giving an Account of the ill State and Condition the Parliament's Forces were in, in those Parts of *Lincolnshire* where he commanded: Desiring present Relief, both of Men and Money, else he could not defend them against the Earl of *Newcastle*'s Army. It was ordered to be communicated to the House of Commons.

The same Day the Earl of *Northumberland*, from the Committee appointed to consider of Means for settling the present Distractions of the Kingdom, reported, That they had considered of a *Petition* to be presented to his Majesty, from both Houses, to that Purpose; which being read, and after Debate agreed to, a Message was sent to the Lower House, to desire a Conference with them the next Morning.

Aug. 5. The Lords took into further Consideration their *Propositions* for *Peace*, and *ordered* that their Speaker should introduce them to the Commons, at the Conference, with this Preface:

Gentlemen,

Preamble to the Lords Propositions for Peace.

THE Lords believe it too visible to the Understanding of all Persons, that this Kingdom, with all those Blessings of Plenty and Abundance, the Fruits of our long and happy Peace, must be forthwith turned into that Desolation and Famine which accompany a Civil War: And that those Hands and Hearts, that should support this Land, do now endanger it by unnatural Divisions: Which Considerations have moved the Lords to send Propositions *again to his Majesty, in which they do desire your Concurrence; the Reasonableness and Justice of them being such, that, if they be rejected, our Cause will there-*

thereby be strengthened, and the Kingdom encouraged to preserve themselves in their just Rights. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

But tho' we are told the Conference was held this Day, yet the Report of it is not entered in the *Journals*, nor does it appear from those Authorities what the *Propositions* of *Peace* were. Mr. *Whitlocke* passes over this whole Affair in Silence. Mr. *Rushworth*, indeed, gives us a *Petition* from the City of *London* against them, but nothing more. This Deficiency is very luckily supplied by Lord *Clarendon*, who has not only given us the *Propositions* themselves, but also the Arguments urged in the House of Commons for and against them. The Neglect of the other Cotemporaries, in a Point of so great Importance, is a sufficient Apology for our giving his Lordship's Account of this Matter, though he was not, nor could not be, present at the Debate*.

The Particulars proposed by the Lords were:

1. 'That both Armies might be presently dis- 'banded, and his Majesty be entreated to return 'to his Parliament, upon such Security as should 'give him Satisfaction. The Articles thereof.

2. 'That Religion might be settled with the 'Advice of a Synod of Divines, in such a Manner 'as his Majesty, with the Consent of both Houses 'of Parliament, should appoint.

3. 'That the Militia, both by Sea and Land, 'might be settled by a Bill; and the Militia, 'Forts, and Ships of the Kingdom, put into such 'Hands as the King should appoint, with the 'Approbation of both Houses of Parliament; and 'his Majesty's Revenue to be absolutely and 'wholely restored unto him, only deducting such 'Part as had been of Necessity expended for the 'Maintenance of his Children, and not other- 'wise.

4. 'That all the Members of both Houses, 'who had been expelled only for absenting them- 'selves

* History, Vol. III. 8vo. Edit. p. 318.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'ſelves, or meer Compliance with his Majeſty, 'and no other Matter of Fact againſt them, 'might be reſtored to their Places.

5. 'That all Delinquents, from before the '10th Day of *January*, 1641, ſhould be deli-'vered up to the Juſtice of Parliament, and a Ge-'neral Pardon for all others on both Sides.

6. 'And laſtly, That there might be an Act 'of Oblivion for all by-gone Deeds and Acts of 'Hoſtility.'

Debate thereon in the Houſe of Commons;

'When this Conference was reported in the Houſe of Commons, it begot a wonderful long and a hot Debate, which laſted till Ten o'Clock that Night, and continued a Day or two more; the violent Party (for there were yet many among them of more moderate Conſtitutions, who did, and ever had, heartily abhorred their Proceedings, though, out of Fear, or Indiſpoſition of Health, or not knowing elſe well what to do, they continued there) inveighed furiouſly againſt the Deſign itſelf of ſending to the King at all, and therefore would not have the particular *Propoſitions* ſo much as conſidered: 'They had received much Preju-'dice by the laſt *Treaty* at *Oxford*, and therefore 'muſt undergo more now their Condition was much 'lower; the King had ſince that, upon the Mat-'ter, declared them to be no Parliament; for if they 'were not free, they could not be a Parliament; 'ſo that till that Point were vindicated, they could 'not treat in any ſafe Capacity, but would be look'd 'upon under the Notion of Rebels, as his Majeſty 'had declar'd them. They had ſent Members 'into *Scotland* to require Aſſiſtance, which that 'Kingdom was preparing with all Brotherly Af-'fection and Forwardneſs; and, after ſuch a Diſ-'covery, to treat for *Peace*, without the Privity of 'the *Scots*, was to betray them, and to forfeit 'all Hopes hereafter of Relief from thence, what 'Neceſſities ſoever they might be reduced to. That 'the City of *London* had expreſſed all imaginable 'Readineſs to raiſe Forces for Sir *William Waller*;

'and

'and the Counties near *London* were ready to rise 'as one Man; whereby the Earl of *Essex* would 'be speedily enabled to march, with a better Ar- 'my than ever he had, to give the King Battle, 'except this Discourse of *Peace* did extinguish the 'Zeal that was then flaming in the Hearts of the 'People.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'But notwithstanding these Reasons, and the Passion in the Delivery, the Terror of the King's Successes suggested Answers enough: 'They had 'been punished for breaking off the *Treaty* of '*Oxford*, when they might have had better Terms 'than now they could expect; and if they omit- 'ted this Opportunity, they should fare much 'worse; that they were not sure of Aid from *Scot-* '*land*, neither was it almost possible it should come 'Time enough to preserve them from the Ruin 'at Hand: And for the City of *London*, tho' the 'common and meaner Sort of People, who might 'promise themselves Advantage by it, desired the 'Continuance of the Distractions, yet it was evi- 'dent the most substantial and rich Men desired '*Peace*, by their Refusal to supply Money for the 'carrying on the War; and if they should judge 'of the Common People by their Forwardness 'to engage their own Persons, they had Reason 'to believe they had no mind to the War neither; 'for their General was forced to retire even under 'their own Walls, for Want of Men to recruit his 'Army. However, the sending reasonable *Pro-* '*positions* to the King, would either procure a '*Peace*, and so they should have no more need 'of an Army; or, being refused, would raise more 'Men and Money than all their *Ordinances* with- 'out it.' These Reasons and Arguments prevail- ed; and after the Debate had lasted till Ten of the Clock at Night, it was resolved upon the Question, and carried by Twenty-nine Voices*, 'That

* This Circumstance is confirm'd by the *Commons Journals*; wherein we find the Numbers for taking the Lords *Propositions* into Consideration were 94. Against it, 65. The Tellers for the Question, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Evelyn*; against it, Mr. *Martin* and Mr. *Strode*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'ſelves, or meer Compliance with his Majeſty, 'and no other Matter of Fact againſt them, 'might be reſtored to their Places.

5. 'That all Delinquents, from before the '10th Day of *January*, 1641, ſhould be deli-'vered up to the Juſtice of Parliament, and a Ge-'neral Pardon for all others on both Sides.

6. 'And laſtly, That there might be an Act 'of Oblivion for all by-gone Deeds and Acts of 'Hoſtility.'

Debate thereon in the Houſe of Commons;

'When this Conference was reported in the Houſe of Commons, it begot a wonderful long and a hot Debate, which laſted till Ten o'Clock that Night, and continued a Day or two more; the violent Party (for there were yet many among them of more moderate Conſtitutions, who did, and ever had, heartily abhorred their Proceedings, though, out of Fear, or Indiſpoſition of Health, or not knowing elſe well what to do, they continued there) inveighed furiouſly againſt the Deſign itſelf of ſending to the King at all, and therefore would not have the particular *Propoſitions* ſo much as conſidered: 'They had received much Preju-'dice by the laſt *Treaty* at *Oxford*, and therefore 'muſt undergo more now their Condition was much 'lower; the King had ſince that, upon the Mat-'ter, declared them to be no Parliament; for if they 'were not free, they could not be a Parliament; 'ſo that till that Point were vindicated, they could 'not treat in any ſafe Capacity, but would be look'd 'upon under the Notion of Rebels, as his Majeſty 'had declar'd them. They had ſent Members 'into *Scotland* to require Aſſiſtance, which that 'Kingdom was preparing with all Brotherly Af-'fection and Forwardneſs; and, after ſuch a Diſ-'covery, to treat for *Peace*, without the Privity of 'the *Scots*, was to betray them, and to forfeit 'all Hopes hereafter of Relief from thence, what 'Neceſſities ſoever they might be reduced to. That 'the City of *London* had expreſſed all imaginable 'Readineſs to raiſe Forces for Sir *William Waller*; 'and

'and the Counties near *London* were ready to rise 'as one Man; whereby the Earl of *Essex* would 'be speedily enabled to march, with a better Ar- 'my than ever he had, to give the King Battle, 'except this Discourse of *Peace* did extinguish the 'Zeal that was then flaming in the Hearts of the 'People.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'But notwithstanding these Reasons, and the Passion in the Delivery, the Terror of the King's Successes suggested Answers enough: 'They had 'been punished for breaking off the *Treaty* of '*Oxford*, when they might have had better Terms 'than now they could expect; and if they omit- 'ted this Opportunity, they should fare much 'worse; that they were not sure of Aid from *Scot-* '*land*, neither was it almost possible it should come 'Time enough to preserve them from the Ruin 'at Hand: And for the City of *London*, tho' the 'common and meaner Sort of People, who might 'promise themselves Advantage by it, desired the 'Continuance of the Distractions, yet it was evi- 'dent the most substantial and rich Men desired '*Peace*, by their Refusal to supply Money for the 'carrying on the War; and if they should judge 'of the Common People by their Forwardness 'to engage their own Persons, they had Reason 'to believe they had no mind to the War neither; 'for their General was forced to retire even under 'their own Walls, for Want of Men to recruit his 'Army. However, the sending reasonable *Pro-* '*positions* to the King, would either procure a '*Peace*, and so they should have no more need 'of an Army; or, being refused, would raise more 'Men and Money than all their *Ordinances* with- 'out it.' These Reasons and Arguments prevailed; and after the Debate had lasted till Ten of the Clock at Night, it was resolved upon the Question, and carried by Twenty-nine Voices*, 'That

* This Circumstance is confirm'd by the *Commons Journals*; wherein we find the Numbers for taking the Lords *Propositions* into Consideration were 94. Against it, 65. The Tellers for the Question, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Evelyn*; against it, Mr. *Martin* and Mr. *Strode*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'That they ſhould inſiſt upon the *Propoſitions*, 'and ſend them to his Majeſty.'

Which being by them, in ſome Meaſure, approved of,

Lord *Clarendon* proceeds to remark, 'That, without doubt, if they had then ſent, (as, if the Power had been in the two Houſes of Parliament, they had done) a firm *Peace* had immediately enſued: For beſides that, if a *Treaty* and *Ceſſation* had been in that Conjuncture enter'd upon, no extravagant Demand would have been preſſed, only a Security for thoſe who had been faulty, which the King would gladly have granted, and moſt religiouſly obſerved; the *Fourth Propoſition*, and Conſent to reſtore all Members to their Places in Parliament, would have prevented the kindling any more Fire in thoſe Houſes. But this was too well known to be ſuffered to paſs; and, therefore, the next Day, being *Sunday*, the ſeditious Preachers fill'd all the Pulpits with Alarms of Ruin and Deſtruction to the City, if a *Peace* were now offered to the King; and printed Papers were ſcattered through the Streets, and fix'd upon Gates, Poſts, and the moſt public Places in the City and Suburbs, requiring all Perſons well affected to riſe as one Man, and to come to the Houſe of Commons next Morning, for that 20,000 *Iriſh* Rebels were landed; which Information was likewiſe given that Day in many Pulpits by their Preachers; and, in other Papers likewiſe ſet up, it was declared, That the Malignant Party had over-voted the Good, and, if not prevented, there would be a *Peace*.'—Thus far the Noble Hiſtorian.

This Apprehenſion of a *Peace* ſo alarmed the leading Men in the City of *London*, that the Lord Mayor, (*Pennington*) who had been excepted by Name in the King's Offer of a General Pardon, call'd a Common Council at the *Guildhall* the ſame Evening, though on a *Sunday*; where a *Petition* againſt any *Accommodation*, and a Draught of an *Ordinance* for vigorouſly proſecuting the *War*, was agreed on to be preſented to the Houſe of Commons next Morning (*Auguſt* 7.): For tho' theſe

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

these *Propositions* for *Peace* took their Rise in the House of Lords, the Citizens did not offer any *Petition* to that House against them. Instead thereof we find that the Lords being met, they were informed that a great Concourse of People were gathered about their House, occasioned by several Papers printed and dispersed all over the City the Day before, inviting the People to come down in an unlawful Manner to *Westminster*: On which they agreed to have a Conference with the other House, to let them know, That their Lordships did account this Manner of coming down a great Breach of Privilege, and that they did adjourn their House till the next Morning; and that, if the Concourse of People still continued, they would adjourn themselves to a further Time. Likewise to desire the Commons to join with them, to find out who printed and dispersed those Papers, and who were the Authors of them, that they might be brought to condign Punishment.

A great Tumult is raised about both Houses,

In the Midst of this Tumult came down also a select Body of Aldermen and Common Council to *Westminster*, with the *Petition* before-mentioned; and the Commons being informed they were at the Door, they were called in, when Alderman *Atkins*, one of the Sheriffs, in the Name of all the rest, presented the following *Petition*:

And the City of London petition the Commons against any Accommodation;

To the Honourable the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses, of the Commons House, in Parliament assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of *London*, in Common Council assembled,

Sheweth,

THAT your Petitioners having heard that such Propositions *and* Offers *have been lately sent, from the House of Peers, to this Honourable House; which (as we greatly fear) if yielded unto, would be destructive to our Religion, Laws, and Liberties; and finding already, by Experience, that the Spirits of*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

of all the well-affected Party, in the City and Counties adjacent, that are willing to assist the Parliament both in Person and Purse, are much dejected thereat; and the Brotherly Assistance from Scotland, *as well as the Raising and Maintaining of Forces ourselves, thereby likely to be retarded; all which the Petitioners refer to your serious Consideration; and, considering our present sad Condition lies upon us in a special Manner, through the incensed Patience of the Almighty, by Delay and Want of Execution of Justice upon Traitors and Delinquents; and, having an Opportunity yet afforded us to speak, our Desires are,*

That you would be pleased to persist in your former *Resolutions*, whereupon the People have so much depended, and wherein you have so deeply engaged yourselves, (though you should perish in the Work) that Justice may be done upon Offenders and Delinquents. And that, since we are as willing as ever to expose what we are, and have, for the crowning of so good a Cause, you will be pleased, by a speedy passing the *Ordinance* hereunto annexed, or one to this Effect, to put us in a probable Way for our and your Defence, wherein your Petitioners will, by the Blessing of God, never be wanting; but shall ever pray, *&c.*

Who thereupon reject the Lords Propositions for Peace.

The Commons, after having read the *Petition* and *Ordinance*, first returned the Citizens hearty Thanks for their great Expressions of Care for the Safety of the Common-wealth, *&c.* Next ordered their Committee, formerly appointed to meet with the City's concerning the Militia, to receive such Propositions as shall be offered them, for the Safety of the City and Peace of the Kingdom: To prepare a Draught of an *Ordinance* upon them, and present it to the House. They then proceeded to take into Consideration the *Propositions* for *Peace* sent from the Lords; and, after a very long Debate, the House divided on this Question

ſtion, Whether they ſhould take thoſe *Propoſitions* into a more particular Conſideration? The Yeas went out, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Holland*, Tellers for the Yeas, and Sir *Robert Harley* with Sir *Thomas Barrington*, for and with the Noes; who brought in the Number of 81 of the former, and 79 of the latter. This near Diviſion occaſioned a ſtricter Scrutiny; for the Houſe, not being ſatisfied with the Report of the Tellers, divided again, when the Number of the Yeas that went forth were 81, as before, but the Number of the Noes that ſat amounted now to 88. A very odd Circumſtance, unleſs we may ſuppoſe that nine Members came into the Houſe at that Interval.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

Thus all Hope of an *Accommodation*, between King and Parliament, was ſtopped by the Commons; for another Queſtion ariſing at the ſame Time, Whether that Houſe would concur with the Lords in their *Propoſitions*, or not? it paſſed in the Negative without any Diviſion*. But the Commons, to ſoften the Harſhneſs of this *Vote* to the Lords, appointed a Committee to prepare Reaſons to be offered to them, why they diſſented from them; and particularly to deſire their Lordſhips, at the next Conference, *not to deſert the Defence of the Kingdom at this Time; for the Commons would do their utmoſt in the Defence of the Lords, as much as for themſelves.* They alſo *reſolved* to recommend it to the Lord Mayor of *London*, to take ſome Courſe to prevent all Tumults; who accordingly iſſued an *Order*, prohibiting, on the utmoſt Penalties the Law could inflict, the making of any unlawful Aſſemblies, or printing any Papers, *&c.* for that Purpoſe.

Two Days after this, (*Auguſt* 9) as a Counterpoiſe to the foregoing *Petition* for continuing the *War*, another was preſented to the Commons for

* Lord *Clarendon* ſays, The People about the Doors behaved ſo imperiouſly, as to tell the Members of both Houſes, as they paſs'd by them, 'That if they had not a good Anſwer, they would be 'there the next Day with double the Number.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

Peace. This was from the Women; the Men, as Lord *Clarendon* remarks, being deterred from any Attempt of this Sort by the late Execution of Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Chaloner*, and the Severities which followed the Discovery of Mr. *Waller*'s Plot. This remarkable *Petition* runs thus:

To the Honourable the HOUSE of COMMONS in Parliament assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of many CIVILLY-DISPOSED WOMEN, inhabiting in the Cities of *London*, *Westminster*, the Suburbs and Parts adjacent,

Sheweth,

A Petition from the Women of London, &c. for Peace.

THAT your poor Petitioners, though of the weaker Sex, do too sensibly perceive the ensuing Desolation of this Kingdom, unless, by some timely Means, your Honours provide for the speedy Recovery thereof. Your Honours are the Physicians that can, by God's special and miraculous Blessing, (which we humbly implore) restore this languishing Nation, and our bleeding Sister the Kingdom of Ireland, *which hath now almost breathed her last Gasp.*

We need not dictate to your Eagle-eyed Judgments the Way; our only Desire is, That God's Glory in the true Reformed Protestant Religion may be preserved; the just Prerogatives and Privileges of King and Parliament maintained; the true Liberties and Properties of the Subject, according to the known Laws of the Land, restored; and all honourable Ways and Means for a speedy Peace endeavoured.

May it therefore please your Honours, that some speedy Course may be taken for the Settlement of the true Reformed Protestant Religion for the Glory of God, and the Renovation of Trade for the Benefit of the Subject, they being the Soul and Body of the Kingdom.

And your Petitioners, with many Millions of afflicted Souls, groaning under the Burden of these Times of Distress, shall (as bound) pray, *&c.*

We

We have before taken Notice of a *Petition* from the Female Sex at the Beginning of the Troubles, and Mr. *Pym*'s Speech to them at that Time *: But this Gentleman seems now to have been greatly out of the Ladies Favour, by what follows in Mr. *Rushworth*'s Account of this Matter: He tells us, 'That this *Petition* was brought up by 2 or 3000 Women, generally of the Meanest Sort, (whom Lord *Clarendon* calls a great Multitude of the Wives of Substantial Citizens) with white Silk Ribbons in their Hats; and was, by some of their Number, presented to the House of Commons, who received and read the same; and sent out Sir *John Hippesley* and two or three Members more, to return them an *Answer*, 'That the 'House were no way Enemies to *Peace*, and that 'they did not doubt, in a short Time, to answer 'the Ends of their *Petition*; and desired them to 'return to their Habitations.'† But the Women, not satisfied, remained thereabouts, and, by Noon, were encreased to 5000 at the least; and some Men of the Rabble, in Women's Cloaths, mixed themselves amongst them, and instigated them to go up to the Commons Door, and cry *Peace*, *Peace*; which they did accordingly, thrusting to the Door of the House at the Upper Stairs-head. The Trained Band advised them to come down, and first pulled them; and afterwards, to fright them, shot Powder: But they cried out, *Nothing but Powder*; and some of them in the Yard having Brick Bats, threw them a-pace at the Trained Band, who then shot Bullets. Yet the Women, not daunted, cried out the louder at the Door of the House of Commons, *Give us those Traitors that are against* Peace, *that we may tear them to Pieces: Give us that Dog* Pym, *&c.*'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

 Upon

* In our Tenth Volume, p. 271, *et seq.*

† The *Petition* itself is not entered in the *Journals*: But those Authorities mention the Presentment and Reading of it; and that Sir *Robert Harley*, Sir *John Corbet*, Sir *John Hippisley*, Mr. *Buller*, Mr. *Noble*, and Sir *Edward Baynton*, were appointed to give the Petitioners an *Answer*; which was to the above Effect.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

Upon the whole, it appears to have been with ſome Difficulty, and not without ſome Bloodſhed alſo, that this Mob of Female Petitioners was ſilenced and diſperſed.

Ordinance for preſſing of Soldiers.

Aug. 10. The Commons ſent up an *Ordinance* for preſſing Soldiers, throughout the Kingdom; to which the Lords agreed; it had this remarkable Preamble:

'Foraſmuch as the true Proteſtant Religion, the 'Laws and Liberties of the Subject and the Parliament, are in Danger to be ſubverted; Idolatry 'and Tyranny like to be introduced by Force and 'Power of ſeveral Armies, raiſed by Pretence of 'the King's Authority, conſiſting of Papiſts and 'other dangerous and ill-affected Perſons of this 'Kingdom, *Iriſh* Rebels, Popiſh Soldiers, and others 'of foreign Dominions and Nations, not being under 'the King's Obeyſance, for the Ruin and Deſtruction of this Kingdom, unleſs the ſame be prevented by a conſiderable Power of Forces, to be ſuddenly raiſed by both Houſes of Parliament, being, 'with God's Bleſſing and Aſſiſtance, the moſt probable Way to preſerve the Kingdom, our Religion, and Liberty.

'Be it therefore *ordained*, *&c.*'

Aug. 16. A Paſſage which happened, as this Day, in the Houſe of Commons, is expunged in their *Journals*, as appears in the Margin, by an *Order* made *January* 6, 1645; by which Means this Affair is rendered ſo dark and obſcure, that nothing can be made of it in that Authority. We are obliged to Mr. *Whitlocke* for an Explanation, who tells us, 'That one Mr. *Saltmarſh*, a Miniſter, had publiſhed a Book, in which were theſe bold Poſitions:

1. 'That all Means ſhould be uſed to keep the King and his People from a ſudden Union.

2. 'To cheriſh the War, under the Notion of Popery, as the ſureſt Means to engage the People.

3. 'If

3. 'If the King would not grant their Demands, then to root him out and the Royal Line, and to collate the Crown upon somebody else.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'This strange Doctrine gave Offence, says our Author, to sober Men; and *Saltmarsh* was sent for and examined, before the Commons, about it; when some Exceptions being taken against it, Mr. *Henry Martin* said, *That he saw no Reason to condemn Mr.* Saltmarsh; *and that it was better one Family should be destroyed than many.* Sir *Neville Poole* moved, That Mr. *Martin* should explain, *What one Family he meant*; who boldly answered, *The King and his Children.* Upon this some Members urged the Height and Danger of these Words, and taxed him with his lewd Life; and, many speaking very sharply against him, he was committed to the *Tower:* But, shortly after, released, and re-admitted to his Seat in Parliament.' *

Mr. Martin committed to the Tower for reviling the King and Royal Family.

The rest of the Affairs in both Houses, for several Days, turned chiefly on Ways and Means to raise more Money and Men, in order to recruit and pay their Armies; the Lord-General *Essex* complaining again very heavily for Want of both. He likewise added, That his Army was much visited with Sickness; and that tho' he was ready to march, yet he did not care to adventure the Common-Wealth of *England* by a Battle, in so weak a Condition, *&c.* Upon which Advice the Parliament thought fit to dispatch a Committee of both Houses to him, on the 19th of this Month, to learn, particularly, his Wants, that they might be speedily redressed. This Committee returning, reported, That they had been with the General, and they had brought him to agree to the following *Propositions:*

The Earl of Essex requires further Supplies.

First, 'That his Excellency intends to begin 'his March in three Days Time; and that about

* Upon his Petition to the House, presented the second of *September* following, he was ordered to be forthwith discharged, without paying any Fees for his Imprisonment.

Commons Journals.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'Twelve o'Clock, on that Day, he promises to 'draw his Army up to their Rendezvous on *Hounslow-Heath*; whither he desires the Parliament 'to send Commissioners to be present and view the 'Troops.

Next, 'He desired the City would send to him 'what Strength they could possibly spare, as had 'been proposed to him by the Parliament. He 'approved of the Motion that a Committee of 'both Houses might constantly attend the Army.

And, *lastly*, 'The General expected such Sup'plies of Money as might enable him to proceed 'upon his March.'

Aug. 21. The Queen of *Bohemia* had hitherto lived under an unhappy Planet; and, though the Daughter of one King, Wife to another, and Sister to a third, was now reduced almost to beg her Bread of the Parliament; for, this Day, a supplicating Letter from her, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read in these Words:

The Queen of Bohemia's second Letter, desiring some Allowance from Parliament.

My Lord,

SINCE my last to you, whereby I craved the Assistance of the most Honourable House of Peers (whereof you are Speaker) towards the Relief of my present Necessities, I daily find my Burden growing heavier the longer their Help is deferred; which maketh me trouble you, once again, by this Bearer, Cromwell *my Servant, whom I send expressly over about this Business; desiring you to give him such Credit and Access as my Occasions may therein require. Hereby I entreat you to represent my earnest Request to the most Honourable House, if they would be pleased to grant me their favourable Concurrence, in this Time of my Need; whereby I may be freed both from my pressing Wants, and from the Mischiefs which thereupon ensue. I have no Cause to doubt but that the Lords, understanding the Extremity of my Case, will take an honourable Sense thereof; and hasten, on their Parts, the Means*

Means of my Supply; whereof I beſeech you to aſſure them all that I ſhall be ever ſenſible, and remain, An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

Your moſt Affectionate Friend,

Hughe, June 29, 1643.

ELIZABETH.

The Lords *ordered*, That this Letter be communicated to the Commons, and to deſire them to conſider how the Queen might be ſupplied with the Allowance formerly given her from this Kingdom, as ſoon as they could find Means to do it. But very little was done in this Buſineſs.

Many *Ordinances* now croud the *Journals* of the Lords, all concerning Men and Money to ſupport this unnatural War; but none of them of Conſequence enough for this Hiſtory. The King, at this Time, as has been ſaid, was every where victorious, and his own Army ſo ſtrong, that the Earl of *Eſſex* durſt not cope with him. In this Situation, the King and his Counſellors are greatly blamed, by Hiſtorians, for not marching directly for *London*, where he muſt have either taken the Place, or forced the Earl to a Battle; either of which would, in all Probability, have ended the War. For, at this Time, ſays *Whitlocke*, 'The Parliament had no conſiderable Body of an Army together, and their Party in ſome Diviſions; but, by the Time of the King's March and Stay at *Glouceſter*, they had recruited their Army, provided Money, and pieced up their Diſcontents amongſt themſelves *.' But ſuch was the Unhappineſs of this Prince's Fate, that, after the Surrender of *Briſtol* to his Forces, he turned aſide; and, in Perſon, with his whole Army, laid Siege to *Glouceſter*. This was on the 10th of *Auguſt*, and the Place holding out reſolutely, it took the King much more Time than he thought of, and proved fruitleſs in the Event. The Siege of Glouceſter.

Mr.

* *Memorials*, p. 69. Col. 2.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

Mr. *Rushworth* hath left us a *Journal* of this famous Siege; and other Historians, of these Times, are very particular in their Accounts of it. To them, therefore, we refer, and shall only take Notice, that the Parliament thought it a Place of such Importance, as occasioned both Houses to make an *Ordinance*, on the 23d of this Month, to authorize the Committee for the Militia of the City of *London*, to order six Regiments of Foot, consisting of 8000 Men, and 1500 Horse, to march immediately for its Relief.

Aug. 27. An *Ordinance* for removing superstitious Images, Crucifixes, Altars of Stone, *&c.* passed the Lords, which had been formerly sent up by the other House: It ran in these Words, and with which we shall conclude the Affairs of this Month.

Ordinance for removing Images, Altars, &c. out of Churches.

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, 'taking into their serious Consideration 'how well pleasing it is to God, and conducea'ble to the blessed Reformation in his Worship, 'so much desired by both Houses of Parliament, 'that all the Monuments of Superstition or Idola'try should be removed and demolished, do *ordain*, 'That in all and every the Churches and Cha'pels, as well Cathedral and Collegiate as other 'Churches and Chapels, and other usual Places 'of public Prayer, authorized by Law within this 'Realm of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, all 'Altars and Tables of Stone shall, before the first 'Day of *November* 1643, be utterly taken away 'and demolished: And also all Communion-Ta'bles removed from the *East* End of every such 'Church, Chapel, or Place of public Prayer, and 'Chancel of the same; and shall be placed in some 'other fit and convenient Place or Places of the 'Body of the said Church, Chapel, or other such 'Place of publick Prayer, or of the Body of the 'Chancel of every such Church, Chapel, or other 'such Place of public Prayer: And that all Rails 'what-

'whatsoever, which have been erected near to, 'before, or about any Altar or Communion-Ta- 'ble in any of the said Churches or Chapels, or 'other such Place of public Prayer as aforesaid, 'shall, before the said Day, be likewise taken 'away; and the Chancel Ground of every such 'Church or Chapel, or other Place of public 'Prayer, which hath been, within twenty Years 'last past, raised for any Altar or Communion- 'Table to stand upon, shall, before the said Day, 'be laid down, and levelled as the same was be- 'fore the said twenty Years last past: And that 'all Tapers, Candlesticks, and Basons, shall, be- 'fore the said Day, be removed and taken away 'from the Communion-Table in every such 'Church, Chapel, or other Place of public Prayer; 'and neither the same, nor any such like, shall 'be used about the same at any Time after the 'said Day: And that all Crucifixes, Crosses, and 'all Images and Pictures of any one or more Per- 'sons of the Trinity, or of the Virgin *Mary*; and 'all other Images and Pictures of Saints, or super- 'stitious Inscriptions in, or upon, all and every 'the said Churches or Chapels, or other Places of 'public Prayer, Church-Yards, or other Places 'to any the said Churches and Chapels, or other 'Places of public Prayer, belonging, or in any 'other open Place, shall, before the said first Day of '*November*, be taken away and defaced; and none 'of the like hereafter permitted in any such 'Church or Chapel, or other Places as aforesaid.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'And be it further *ordained*, That all and every 'such Removal of the said Altars, Tables of Stone, 'Communion-Tables, Tapers, Candlesticks and 'Basons, Crucifixes and Crosses, Images and Pic- 'tures as aforesaid, taking away of the said Rails, 'levelling the said Grounds, shall be done and 'performed; and the Walls, Windows, Grounds, 'and other Places which shall be broken, impair- 'ed, or altered by any the Means aforesaid, shall 'be made up and repaired in good and sufficient 'Manner, in all and every of the said Parish

'Churches

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'Churches or Chapels, or usual Places of public 'Prayer belonging to any Parish, by the Church-'Warden or Church-Wardens of every such Pa-'rish for the Time being respectively; and in any 'Cathedral or Collegiate Church or Chapel, by 'the Dean or Sub-Dean, or other chief Officer 'of every such Church or Chapel for the Time 'being; and in the Universities, by the several 'Heads and Governors of every College or Hall 'respectively; and in the several Inns of Court, 'by the Benchers and Readers of every of the 'same respectively, at the Cost and Charges of 'all and every such Person or Persons, Body Po-'litic or Corporate, or Parishioners of every Pa-'rish respectively, to whom the Charge of the 'Repair of any such Church, Chapel, Chancel, 'or Place of public Prayer, doth or shall belong.

'And in case Default be made in any of the Pre-'mises, by any of the Person or Persons thereunto 'appointed by this *Ordinance*, from and after the 'said first Day of *November* 1643, that then every 'such Person or Persons, so making Default, shall, 'for every such Neglect or Default by the Space 'of twenty Days, forfeit and lose forty Shillings 'to the Use of the Poor of the said Parish wherein 'such Default shall be made; or if it be out of 'any Parish, then to the Use of the Poor of such 'Parish whose Church is, or shall be, nearest to 'the Church or Chapel, or other Place of public 'Prayer, where such Default shall be made; and 'if Default shall be made after the first Day of '*December* 1643, then any one Justice of the 'Peace of the County, City, or Town, where 'such Default shall be made, upon Information 'thereof to him to be given, shall cause or procure 'the Premises to be performed, according to the 'Tenor of this *Ordinance*, at the Cost and Charges 'of such Person or Persons, Bodies Politic or Cor-'porate, or Inhabitants in every Parish, who are 'appointed by this *Ordinance* to bear the same.

'Provided that this *Ordinance*, or any thing 'therein contained, shall not extend to any Image,

'Pic-

'Picture, or Coat of Arms in Glass, Stone, or 'otherwise, in any Church, Chapel, Church Yard, 'or Place of public Prayer as aforesaid, set up or 'graven only for a Monument of any King, 'Prince, or Nobleman, or other dead Person, 'which hath not been commonly reputed or taken 'for a Saint: But that all such Images, Pictures, 'and Coats of Arms, may stand and continue in 'like Manner and Form, as if this *Ordinance* had 'never been made.' *

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Military *Orders* of various Kinds continue to be made by both Houses, at the Beginning of the Month of *September*; nor is there any thing else, material enough for our Purpose, till the seventh of this Month: When Sir *John Hotham* was brought to the Bar of the House of Commons by Order, before he took his Trial; and being acquainted by the Speaker, That he had Liberty to speak to the House if he desired it, he said, He had some Petitions to present to them; which was, That his Lady might come up with her Coach and Horses, Children, Servants, and Evidences; and some Goods and Plate he had left, for their Maintenance. He desired also, that he might continue where he was till his Trial: He protested his own Innocency, and did not doubt, when he knew his Charge, but to make it appear as clear as the Sun. Being demanded, Whether he knew of any Members of that House, or of the Lords, that had conveyed any Treasure beyond Seas? He answered, He knew of none, if he were to die that Instant. And being again asked, Whether he knew that Mr. *Pym* had conveyed any Treasure in like Manner? With some Astonishment he asked, If that Question was asked him in Earnest? Protested he knew nothing of it, and that he had never reported any such Thing.

Sir John Hotham and his Son examined by the Commons;

Then the Examination taken by the Committee, concerning the Correspondence he held with Lord

* This Proviso seems to have been founded upon the Statute of 3. and 4. *Edward* VI. *Cap.* 12. *for defacing of Images*; which see in our Third Volume, p. 252.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Lord *Digby*, was read to him. And, being demanded by the Speaker, Whether it was true or not which he had there expreſs'd? He anſwered, It was true; only in that concerning Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, and *Keyes*, his Son's Servant, were ſome Miſtakes: For when *Keyes* came to him at *Hull*, he, wondering to ſee him, ſaid, *How the Devil cameſt thou hither?— How couldſt thou come thro' the Queen's Army?* and that was all he ſaid to him. Further, he ſaid, the Lord *Digby* did ſend a *Declaration* to him, to publiſh to the World his Reaſons for his turning to his Allegiance to the King; but he tore it in Pieces, and told him, That he could not ſerve the King, till he had ſent juſt Propoſitions to the Parliament. And being preſſed by the Committee to anſwer to ſome farther Queſtions about Lord *Digby*, he ſaid, He was not bound to accuſe himſelf*; made no farther Anſwer, and confeſs'd that he did refuſe to ſign this Examination. After this the Commons proceeded to expell Sir *John* their Houſe, and to commit him cloſe Priſoner to the *Tower*.

Sept. 8. The Son of this unfortunate Father, was likewiſe brought to the ſame Bar, the Serjeant ſtanding with his Mace within it, when the Speaker told him, If he had any thing to ſay the Houſe would hear him. Upon which he made a long Narration of the whole Carriage of Affairs, from the firſt Time he took Poſſeſſion of *Hull*, to that of his Commitment; acknowledging he had committed many Errors and Offences, but nothing to betray the Truſt repoſed in him by the Parliament. Being aſked, as his Father had been before, If he could tell what Monies, Treaſure, or other Goods, the Lord *Say*, Mr. *Pym*, or any other Member of either Houſe, had tranſported beyond Sea

* Lord *Clarendon* gives a very particular Narrative of what paſſed between Lord *Digby* and Sir *John Hotham*, in relation to a Propoſal made by the former for the Surrender of *Hull* to the King, when he was taken Priſoner in Diſguiſe, on board the Ship *Providence*.

Clarendon, Vol. II. p. 705.

We took ſome Notice of this Matter in our Eleventh Volume, p. 356. But the Whole is too long for our Purpoſe.

Sea? He anſwered, He knew of none, nor ever heard of any that knew any ſuch Thing.—Notwithſtanding this the Commons expelled Captain *Hotham*, and remanded him to the ſame Cuſtody he was before; but *ordered* that a Warrant ſhould be made to bring up both their Ladies, Children, Servants, *&c.* as his Father had deſired.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

They are expelled the Houſe, and recommitted to Priſon.

In the Courſe of theſe Examinations, the Reader may obſerve that Mr. *Pym* is mentioned, along with others, as charged with ſome indirect Practices. To do Juſtice to the Memory of that great Man, on the ſame Day Sir *Edward Bainton*, a Member of the Houſe of Commons, was ſent for, charged with ſaying, That the Lord *Say* and Mr. *Pym* had betrayed the *Weſt* and *North*. And being demanded, Whether he had ſpoke thoſe Words charged upon him? Anſwered, He did not ſpeak them as they were there laid down. Being then demanded, What he had ſpoken to that Purpoſe? Anſwered, That he had learned, ſince he had ſat here, that he ought not to ſpeak any Thing here that reflected to the Prejudice of another Member; and therefore deſired to be excuſed, unleſs he were enjoined and commanded. Whereupon he was enjoined to ſpeak the whole Truth: And then he ſaid, That he did not ſay that Mr. *Pym* had betrayed the *Weſt*, but that he had betrayed his Country; which he did, by being a Means of detaining him in Priſon, who only was able to maintain and preſerve that County, till the ſaid County was quite loſt, notwithſtanding many *Orders* made for his bringing up:* As for betraying the *North*, he knew nothing more of that than he had heard in the Houſe, which ſounded bad enough, *viz.* That the Offer of the Lord *Savile* and Sir *William*

A Charge againſt Mr. Pym for indirect Practices;

* This Paſſage runs thus in the *Commons Journals*:——Probably *Wiltſhire* is intended, where Sir *Edward Bainton* was a Deputy-Lieutenant of the Militia; and had been ſo active in the Parliament's Service as to be particularly mentioned in the King's *Declaration* on Occaſion of the Parliament's *Ordinances* for laying in Aſſeſſment; which we have already given in this Volume, p. 63.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

liam Savile, to deliver up, to the Parliament's Forces, *York* and that whole County, if they might not be prejudiced in their Persons and Estates, was prevented. Adding, That he had heard it said and affirmed, with solemn and deep Oaths and Protestations, That the Lord *Cottington* had treated with his Majesty for the Pardon of the Lord *Say* and Mr. *Pym*; and that if they had had the Preferments they expected, we had not been brought to the Condition we now are in. Being demanded from whom he heard this, answered, It was from the Lord *Grandison*'s Brother, Lieutenant-Colonel *Brett*, and Serjeant-Major *Juques*, all Officers in the King's Army, and Prisoners with him at *Gloucester*.

Which the Commons vote to be false and scandalous.

Mr. *Pym*, in Answer to this Charge, protested solemnly, That he never had Intercourse with the Lord *Cottington*, by one Means or other, since the Difference between the King and Parliament: That he never received but two Messages from him since this Parliament began; the one was by Sir *Arthur Ingram*, long before he died; the other by Sir *Benjamin Rudyard*.——Upon the whole, the Commons *voted* the Charge laid upon Mr. *Pym* by Sir *Edward Bainton*, to be false and scandalous; and that the said Sir *Edward* should be forthwith sent to the *Tower*, there to remain a Prisoner during the Pleasure of the House. But, soon after, the Question being put, Whether Sir *Edward Bainton* should be now called to the Bar, and from thence sent to the *Tower*, the House divided into 20 Yeas and 40 Noes; so it passed in the Negative.——Howsoever this last Charge against Mr. *Pym* may be true or false, Mr. *Whitlocke* has insinuated in his Account of the Beginning of these Troubles, 'That the Earl of *Strafford*'s Prosecution might have been stopped, and the King's Enemies have become his Friends, if some particular Persons had been gratified in their Expectations and Desires; amongst whom he names Mr. *Pym* to have been designed for Chancellor of the *Exchequer*.

*chequer**. But it is very ſtrange that neither this *Memorialiſt*, nor Mr. *Ruſhworth*, nor even Lord *Clarendon* himſelf, make any Mention of this Accuſation.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Sept. 9. The Reader muſt remember, that, on the famous Affair of *Ship-Money*, moſt of the Judges who had given the King their Opinions for the Legality of it, were committed, ſome to the *Tower*, others elſewhere. Amongſt theſe, Sir *Robert Berkeley*, one of the Juſtices of the *King's Bench*, had been long a Priſoner in the *Tower*, and his Trial put off in *Die ad Diem*, for many Months together. 'Till, this Day, it came on peremptorily before the Houſe of Lords; a Committee of the Commons being at the Bar to manage the Evidence againſt him, concerning ſo much of the Charge as reſpected *Ship-Money* only, and the Opinions of the Judges thereupon.

The Proceedings againſt Judge Berkeley, for his Opinion in relation to Ship-Money, revived.

Then by the Direction of the Houſe of Lords the Gentleman-Uſher of the Black Rod brought Mr. Juſtice *Berkeley* to the Bar; where, after he had kneeled as a Delinquent, and being commanded by the Speaker to ſtand up, the Committee proceeded in the Charge: But firſt acquainted the Lords, That whereas the Commons had impeached Mr Juſtice *Berkeley*, and brought up divers Articles againſt him, they intended to proceed only upon the Fourth, Fifth, and Sixth, which concerned *Ship-Money*. †

Then the Lords commanded the ſaid Articles to be read, *viz.*

IV. 'That the ſaid Sir *Robert Berkeley*, then 'being one of the Juſtices of the Court of *King's* '*Bench*, and having taken an Oath for the due 'Adminiſtration of Juſtice, according to the Laws 'of

* *Memorials*, p. 39.

† In the Proceedings of *July* 6, 1641, we took Notice of Articles of Impeachment being exhibited againſt Sir *Robert Berkeley* and other Judges. Theſe we paſſed over with a Reference to *Ruſhworth*, *Naſſeu*, and the *State Trials*: But the Proceedings, and Sentence in Conſequence of this Impeachment, are omitted in all thoſe *Collections*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'of this Realm, to his Majesty's leige People, 'did, on the last Day of *November* 1635, subscribe 'an Opinion, *in hæc Verba:*

I am of Opinion that, where the Benefit doth more particularly redound to the Good of the Ports, or marine Parts, as in the Case of Piracy or Depredations upon the Seas, there the Charge hath been, and may be, lawfully imposed upon them according to Precedents of former Times: So where the Safety and Good of the Kingdom in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdom in Danger, of which his Majesty is the only Judge, there the Charge of the Defence ought to be borne by all the Realm in general. This I hold agreeable both to Law and Reason.

V. 'That the said Sir *Robert Berkeley*, being 'one of the Justices of the Court of *King's-Bench*, 'and duely sworn as aforesaid, did, in *February* '1636, subscribe an extrajudicial Opinion in an '*Answer* to *Questions* in a Letter from his Maje-'sty; which was to this Effect:

CHARLES *R.*

'WHEN the Good and Safety of the 'Kingdom in general is concerned, and 'the whole Kingdom in Danger, whether may 'not the King, by Writ under the Great Seal 'of *England*, command all the Subjects of this 'Kingdom, at their Charge, to provide and fur-'nish such Number of Ships with Men, Victuals, 'and Ammunition, and for such Time as he shall 'think fit, for the Defence and Safeguard of the 'Kingdom from such Danger and Peril; and, by 'Law, compel the doing thereof in case of Re-'fusal or Refractoriness; and whether, in such 'Case, is not the King the sole Judge both of the 'Danger, and how, and when, the same is to be 'prevented and avoided?

May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,

WE have, according to your Majesty's Command, severally, every Man by himself, and all of us together, taken into serious Consideration the

the Case and Question signed by your Majesty, and inclosed in your Royal Letter; and are of Opinion, That when the Good and Safety of the Kingdom in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdom in Danger, your Majesty may, by Writ, under the Great Seal of England, *command all the Subjects of this your Kingdom, at their Charge, to provide and furnish such Number of Ships, with Men, Victuals, and Munition, and for such Time as your Majesty shall think fit, for the Defence and Safeguard of the Kingdom from such Danger and Peril; and that, by Law, your Majesty may compel the doing thereof in case of Refusal or Refractorinesss: And we are also of Opinion, That, in such Case, your Majesty is the sole Judge both of the Danger, and when and how the same is to be prevented and avoided.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

JOHN BRAMSTON,	FRANCIS CRAWLEY,
JOHN FINCH,	JOHN DENHAM,
HUM. DAVENPORT,	WILLIAN JONES
RICHARD HUTTON,	THOMAS TREVOR,
GEORGE CROOKE,	ROBERT BERKELEY,
GEORGE VERNON,	RICHARD WESTON.

VI. 'That the said *Robert Berkeley*, then being 'one of the Justices of the Court of *King's-Bench*, 'and duely sworn as aforesaid, did, [on the 10th 'of *February*, 13°. *Car.* 1637,] deliver his Opinion 'in the *Exchequer-Chamber* against *John Hampden*, 'Esq; in the Case of *Ship-Money*, That he the said '*John Hampden*, upon the Matter and Substance 'of the Case, was chargeable with the Money then 'in Question: A Copy of which Proceedings and 'Judgment the Commons, in this present Par-'liament, have delivered to your Lordships.'

Then Mr. *Maynard*, one of the Committee, desired that Mr. Justice *Berkeley* might have this Question put to him, Whether he did give his Opinion, and subscribe the said Opinion?

Mr. Justice *Berkeley* desired Leave of the House, that he might have Liberty first to make a Pro-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

teſtation before he ſpeaks any Thing of the Matter. The Lords gave him Leave to do it; and then he ſaid, He cannot but take Notice of the ſupreme and unqueſtionable *Votes* of both Houſes of Parliament concerning the Judgment againſt *Ship-Money*, to which *Votes* he humbly ſubmits; and againſt which he will not ſpeak one Syllable.

Then he confeſſed that about *Hilary* Term, 11° *Caroli*, the Lord Chief Juſtice *Finch* came to his Chamber at *Serjeants-Inn*, and told him he had a Caſe to deliver to him from the King, and he was to deliver his Opinion in it. He confeſſed he read and conſidered of it, and he did ſubſcribe to the Opinion now read, and he ſubſcribed to it as his Opinion, according as he then thought the Law to be.

Next he was aſked, Whether the reſt of the Judges did not ſubſcribe the ſame Opinion as it is charged?

He anſwered, That on the ſixth of *February* the Lord Chief Juſtice *Bramſton* ſent to all the Judges to meet at *Serjeants-Inn*; and there acquainted them, that he had received a Letter from the King and a Caſe incloſed, which he was to communicate as from him, and that his Majeſty required them to ſubſcribe their Opinions; that the ſaid Caſe and Letter was read, being the very ſame as in the Charge; and that, upon Conſideration, it was carried by the Major Part; and all the Judges ſubſcribed the ſame as their Opinion.

Then being aſked, Whether he delivered his Opinion, in the Judgment, in Mr. *Hampden*'s Caſe, as 'tis charged in the Impeachment, which was for Levying of Money? He confeſſed, That, by Mr. *Hampden*'s Plea of Demurrer, he conceived that Mr. *Hampden* had confeſſed the Neceſſity that *Salus Reipublicæ periclitabatur*: And he gave Judgment therein as he conceived, then, the Law to be; but that he is now enlightened by the *Votes* of both Houſes of Parliament ſince made; and that he did not do any Thing out of Malice, but out of Error of Opinion.

Mr.

Mr. *Maynard* and the reſt of the Committee concluded with a ſhort Reply, by way of Agravation, That the Judgment was for Money, tho' the Opinion was not: That the Judgment in Mr. *Hampden*'s Caſe was extrajudicial, and the Judges had no Cognizance of it; but they ought to have refuſed any Judgment in it: That being ſo great a Concernment to the Common-wealth, it was a Crime done to the whole Common-wealth, contrary to the Liberty of the Subject, deſtructive to the Privileges of Parliament, and to the Petition of Right, and the Laws of this Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

The Committee added, That this Judgment was contrary to his Oath as a Judge, being ſworn to do equal Right, and to give Counſel between the King and the Subject, according to Law, as 18. *Edward* III. *Parliament-Roll*: That this Crime was more than an Error of Judgment, tho' Judges have been queſtioned and judged in Parliament not only for falſe Judgment, but alſo for Error of Opinion.

And concluded with a Deſire, That the Matter of Fact being confeſſed, their Lordſhips would pleaſe to take the whole into Conſideration, and inflict ſuch exemplary Puniſhment as their Lordſhips, in their great Wiſdom, ſhould think fit.

Sept. 12. The Lords proceeded to Sentence againſt Sir *Robert Berkeley*; and having previouſly found him guilty of the Charge in the three foregoing Articles againſt him, that High Court did award and adjudge,

The Lords pronounce Sentence againſt him.

I. *That the ſaid Sir* Robert Berkeley, *Knt. ſhall be fined in the Sum of* 20,000l. *to be paid in at* Guildhall, London, *to be diſpoſed of by the Authority of both Houſes of Parliament, for the Safety of the Kingdom. And if it ſhall not be paid and ſatisfied within ſix Weeks next after the Date of this Judgment, other Courſe ſhall be taken for levying the ſame.*

II. *That he be hereby diſcharged from being a Judge in the Court of* King's-Bench; *made incapable*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

pable of any Honour, or to hold any Place or Office in the State or Common-Wealth, for the future.

III. *That he shall be imprisoned in the* Tower *of* London, *during the Pleasure of this House*.*

At this Time it was, that the *Scots* sent over Commissioners from the General Assembly of the Kirk of *Scotland*, with some *Propositions* to be presented to the *English* Parliament. These Commissioners were some Noblemen and others, called Ruling Elders, with Ministers, *&c.* who delivered their Credentials to a Commitee of both Houses, appointed for that Purpose. There had been a *Declaration* of Parliament, sent some Time before into *Scotland*, concerning Religious Matters, to which these Commissioners brought the following *Answer.*

The ANSWER *of the General Assembly of the Church of* Scotland, *to the* DECLARATION *of the Honourable Houses of Parliament in* England.

The Commissioners from the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, propose their Solemn League and Covenant to the Parliament of England.

'THE General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*, having received a *Declaration* 'from the Honourable Houses of the Parliament 'of *England*, by their Commissioners now residing 'here, hath thought good to make known unto 'the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That 'all the Members of this Assembly, and others 'well affected here, do, with most Thankfulness, 'take special Notice of the Expressions which they 'have been pleased to make in the forementioned '*Declaration*; not only concerning their Approbation of the Desires and Endeavours of the General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland* for the 'Reformation of the Church of *England*, and the 'Union of both Churches in Religion and Church-'Government; but also concerning the Resolution 'of both Houses fully to concur with them in those pious

* Lord *Clarendon* observes, That there were only ten Peers present at the passing of this Sentence: And that Sir *Robert Berkeley* was abated one Half of the Fine, and had his Liberty, upon present Payment of the other to the Persons appointed by the Parliament to receive it.——This last Circumstance is confirmed by Mr. *Whitlocke*, as before observed in our Tenth Volume, p. 22.

'pious Intentions. With the same Thankfulness 'and due Reverence, they acknowledge the high 'Respects expressed towards them by both Houses, 'in directing unto them their Commissioners af- 'sisted by two Reverend Divines; and in desiring 'some of the Godly and Learned of this Church 'to be sent unto the Assembly sitting there.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'The Assembly doth bless the Lord, who hath 'not only inspired the Houses of Parliament with 'Desires and Resolutions of the Reformation of 'Religion, but hath advanced, by several Steps 'and Degrees, that blessed Work; by which, as 'they shall most approve themselves to the Re- 'formed Churches and to their Brethren abroad, 'so shall they most powerfully draw down from 'Heaven the Blessing of Prosperity and Peace up- 'on *England*. And as it is the earnest Wish of their 'Brethren here, that the true State and Ground 'of the present Differences and Controversies in '*England* may be more and more cleared concern- 'ing Religion; and that both Houses may incess- 'santly prosecute that good Work first and above 'all other Matters, *giving no Sleep nor Slumber to 'their Eye-lids, untill they find out a Place for the 'Lord, an Habitation for the mighty God of* Jacob, 'whose Favour alone can make their Mountain 'strong, and whose Presence, in his own Ordinan- 'ces, shall be their Glory in the Midst of them: 'So it is our Confidence that the begun Reforma- 'tion is of God, and not of Man; that it shall in- 'crease and not decrease through his Help, to 'whom nothing is too hard; who can make 'Mountains Valleys, crooked Things streight, 'and rough Ways smooth; and shall lead along, 'and make perfect, this most wonderful Work, 'which shall be remembred to his Glory, in the 'Church, throughout all Generations.

'And least, thro' any Defect upon the General 'Assembly's Part, the Work of Reformation, 'which hitherto, to the great Grief of all the 'Godly, hath moved so slowly, should be any 'more retarded or interrupted, they have, accord-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'ing to the renewed Desires of both Houses of 'Parliament, and their own former Promises, 'nominated and elected Mr. *Alexander Hender-* 'son, Mr. *Robert Douglas*, Mr. *Samuel Ruther-* 'ford, Mr. *Robert Bailey*, and Mr. *George Gil-* 'lespie, Ministers of God's Word; *John* Earl of 'Cassels, *John* Lord *Maitland*, Sir *Archibald John-* 'ston of *Warriston*, Ruling-Elders, (all of them 'Men much approved here) with Commission and 'Power to them, or any three of them, whereof 'two shall be Ministers, to repair unto the Assem- 'bly of Divines, and others of the Church of *Eng-* 'land, now sitting at *Westminster*, to propound, 'consult, treat, and conclude with them, and with 'any Commissioners deputed by the Houses of Par- 'liament, if it shall seem good to the Honourable 'Houses, in their Wisdom, to depute any for 'that End, in all such Things as may conduce 'to the utter Extirpation of Popery, Prelacy, 'Heresy, Schism, Superstition, and Idolatry; and 'for the settling of the so much desired Union of 'this whole Island in one Form of Church-Govern- 'ment, one Confession of Faith, one Common 'Catechism, and one Directory for the Worship 'of God, according to the Instructions which 'they have received, or shall receive, from the 'Commissioners of the General Assembly appoint- 'ed to meet at *Edinburgh*, from time to time, 'with the Assembly's Power to that End. And 'as the General Assembly doth most gladly and 'affectionately receive, and fully trust, the Com- 'missioners and Divines sent hither; so do they 'hereby commend the aforenamed Commissioners 'not only to the like Affection and Trust of the 'Assembly there, but also to the Favour and Pro- 'tection of both Houses of Parliament.

'And for the further Satisfaction and Encou- 'ragement of their Brethren of *England*, the whole 'Assembly, in their own Name, and in the Name 'of all the particular Churches in this King- 'dom whom they represent, do hereby declare, 'That, from their Zeal to the Glory of God and Pro-

'Propagation of the Gospel, from their Affection to the Happiness of their Native King and of the Kingdom of *England*, and from the Sense of their own Interest in the common Dangers of Religion, Peace, and Liberty, they are most willing and ready to be united and associated with their Brethren in a nearer *League* and *Solemn Covenant*, for the Maintenance of the truly Reformed Protestant Religion, against Popery and Prelacy, and against all Popish and Prelatical Corruptions in Doctrine, Discipline, Worship or Church-Government; and for the settling and holding fast of Unity and Uniformity of Religion, betwixt the Churches of this Island and with the best Reformed Churches beyond the Sea, which Union and Covenant shall, by God's Assistance, be seconded by your co-operating with their Brethren in the Use of the best and most effectual Means that may serve for so good Ends: For the more speedy effecting whereof, to the Comfort and Enlargement of their distressed Brethren, whose Hope deferred might make their Hearts to faint, the whole Assembly, with great Unanimity of Judgment and Expressions of much Affection, have approved, for their Part, such a Draught and Form of a mutual *League* and *Covenant* betwixt the Kingdoms as was the Result of the joint Debates and Consultations of the Commissioners from both Houses of Parliament, assisted by the two Reverend Divines and the Commissioners deputed from the Convention of the Estates of this Kingdom, and from the General Assembly; expecting and wishing the like Approbation thereof by the Right Honourable the Lords and Commons in Parliament, and by the Reverend Assembly there, that thereafter it may be solemnly sworn and subscribed by both Kingdoms; as the surest and strictest Obligation to make both stand and fall together, in the Cause of Religion and Liberty.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'And as the States of this Kingdom have often professed, in their former *Declarations*, the In-

'tegrity

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'tegrity of their Intentions against the common 'Enemies of Religion and Liberty in both Kingdoms, and their great Affections to their Brethren of *England*, by reason of so many and so 'near Relations; so doubtless, in this Time of 'Need, they will not fail to give real Proof of 'what before they professed: *A Friend loveth at 'all Times, and a Brother is born for Adversity.* 'Neither shall the Assembly, nor their Commissioners, be wanting in exhorting all others to 'their Duty, or in concurring, so far as belongeth 'to their Place and Vocation, with the States 'now convened, in any lawful and possible Course 'which may most conduce to the Good of Religion and Reformation, the Honour and Happiness of the King's Majesty, the Deliverance of 'their Brethren of *England* from their present 'calamitous Condition, and to the perpetuating 'a firm and happy Peace betwixt the Kingdoms.'

Both Houses ordered this *Answer* to be sent to the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*.

An Order against Plundering the King's Palaces.

Sept. 13. Information being given to the Lords, That some Rooms in *Somerset-House* were broke open and some Goods taken away; an *Order* was made to protect that and the rest of the King's Palaces, as *Whitehall*, *St. James's*, *Greenwich-House*, *Richmond-House*, *Hampton-Court*, *Oatlands*, *Theobalds*, *Wimbleton-House*, with all other Houses whatsoever, of the King's, Queen's, or the Prince's. These were not to be searched or meddled with, but in the Presence of one Lord and two Members of the House of Commons; nor any Thing removed or carried out of them, without special *Order* from both Houses of Parliament.—— How widely different is this from an *Ordinance* of the Commons, after the King's Death, for the Sale and Disposal of the rich Furniture of these Palaces, and the Pictures and Statues in them? * These last would have been, Now, inestimable.

Sept.

* A Catalogue of these, with the Prices they sold for, (communicated by the late *John Anstis*, Esq; Garter King at Arms) will appear in their proper Order of Time.

Sept. 15. Sir *William Waller* having represented to Parliament that he wanted a strong Reinforcement to guard the City, the Commons made an *Order* for impressing 5000 Men, out of several Counties, for that Purpose. In which the very Watermen on the *Thames* were included; alledging, 'That, in Time of Common Danger 'and Necessity, the Interest of private Persons 'ought to give Way to the Public.' To which the Lords agreed.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Another for impressing Men to augment the City-Guard.

The same Day a Letter from the Earl of *Essex* and another from Col. *Massey*, relating the Condition of the Army, and of the City of *Gloucester*, directed to the Speaker of the House of Commons, were read: Neither of these Letters are entered in their *Journals*, or in *Rushworth*; and only that from the Earl is in those of the *Lords*, as follows:

SIR,

I Will not trouble you with the Particulars of our March, you shall, God willing, hear that more at large hereafter. You may be certified, only, hereby, that the first Time the Enemy appeared before us, was at Aynhoe on the Hill, *with a very great Body of Horse, which Col.* Middleton *faced more than the whole Day, with but two Regiments, and skirmished very often with them. The Enemy faced us afterwards at* Stow on the Wold, *without engaging themselves more than by small Skirmishes.*

The Earl of Essex's Account of his raising the Siege of Gloucester.

Upon Tuesday, *in the Evening, the King's Forces, seeing us approach, raised their Siege from before* Gloucester, *whither it pleased God we came very seasonably; for the Governor had not above two or three Barrels of Powder left; yet had he managed his Business with so much Judgment and Courage, that the Enemy, not knowing of such Want, had but small Hopes of attaining their Desires. We now stay here only for the Relieving of* Gloucester *with Victual*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Victual and other Provisions, of which there is an extraordinary Scarcity.

That which I must press you earnestly with at this Time is, first, *That there be a sudden Provision of eight or ten thousand Pounds to be sent to that Garrison, without which there will be an Impossibility of Maintaining it this Winter; the Discontent of the inferior Officers and common Soldiers being very great, for want of their Pay and Arrear; they, at this Time, justly expecting rather Reward for their good Service, than Want of what is due.*

The second, *That the thousand Foot, which the Parliament is already engaged, by Promise, to send, may speedily march hither; without which they will not be able to fetch any Provisions from the Country; but the Enemy will be Master to the very Gates.*

The third, *That Sir* William Waller *may be speedily sent down into these Parts, which is the only Means to preserve those Friends you have here; for my own Army is in such extream Necessity, for want of Pay, being now in an Enemy's Country, and at this Time within four or five Miles of the King's Army, where no Provisions can be had but for ready Money; and so little Hopes I have of a Supply from you, that, unless we can presently fight, we must be immediately necessitated to draw into some other Place which may be nearer to Supplies, and have a more free Intercourse with* London.

Your assured Friend,

Tewkesbury, Sept. 10, 1643.

ESSEX.

After reading this Letter, and that from Col. *Massey*, the Commons passed the following *Votes:*

1. 'That Col. *Massey* shall have 1000 *l.* bestowed upon him, as a Reward and an Acknowledgement of his Service, whereof 500 *l.* to be paid in present; and that it be recommended especially

cially to the Committee for Advance of Monies, to take care that the reſt of the 1000 *l.* be paid with all convenient Speed; and that the Lord-General be deſired to prefer him to ſome Place of Honour and Profit.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

2. 'That the Arrears of the Garriſon of *Glouceſter* ſhall be forthwith paid, upon Account made; and that the Money in Mr. *Stephens*'s Hands ſhall be made 4000 *l.* and that the Officers and Soldiers of that Garriſon ſhall have a Month's Pay beſtowed upon them, as a Reward of their Service; and the Committee for Advance of Money are to provide theſe Sums with all Speed.

3. 'That it be referred to the Committee of Safety to take Order for the ſending of the 1000 Men, the Troops of Horſe, the Piſtols and other Proviſions, as deſired by Col. *Maſſey*'s Letter.

4. 'That a public Thankſgiving be held, on the next Lord's Day, in all the Churches of *London* and *Weſtminſter*, and the Pariſhes within the Bills of Mortality; and that the Lord Mayor of *London* and the Juſtices of the Peace for *Weſtminſter*, do give Directions accordingly.

A Thankſgiving Day appointed on that Occaſion;

5. 'That a Letter be ſent by both Houſes to the Lord-General, acknowledging the great Service he has done, in the Conducting of his Army in the difficult March to the Relief of *Glouceſter*; and to give him Thanks for the ſame; another to Col. *Maſſey*; and a third to the Mayor and Townſmen of *Glouceſter* to the ſame Purpoſe; alſo a Reward of 20 *l.* was *voted* to the Meſſenger of this important News.'

And a Vote of Thanks, &c. to the Officers, Mayor, and Townſmen.

To all which, the next Day, the Lords gave their Concurrence.

Thus ended the Siege of *Glouceſter*, the moſt unfortunate Step the King could have taken; for, after it, his Affairs went backwards, in every Motion, till they ended in his own Ruin.

Sept. 18. This Day the famous Inſtrument, called *The Solemn League and Covenant*, was de-

'bated

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

bated in the House of Lords. It was brought up out of *Scotland* by the Commissioners sent last to the General Assembly of Divines, at *Westminster*, and presented to the *English* Parliament for their Approbation, and was carried thro' both Houses with small Opposition. The Lords, particularly, *ordered* a Committee of their House to join with one of the Commons, and consult with the *Scots* Commissioners about the Manner of taking of it in both Kingdoms. The Form of this Test runs thus: *

The Scots Solemn League and Covenant agreed to by the English Parliament.

'WE Noblemen, Barons, Knights, Gentlemen, Citizens, Burgesses, Ministers of the Gospel, and Commons of all Sorts, in the Kingdoms of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, by the Providence of God living under one King, and being of one Reformed Religion, having before our Eyes the Glory of God, and the Advancement of the Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, the Honour and Happiness of the King's Majesty and his Posterity, and the true Public Liberty, Safety, and Peace of the Kingdoms, wherein every one's private Condition is included; and calling to mind the treacherous and bloody Plots, Conspiracies, Attempts, and Practices of the Enemies of God, against the true Religion, and Professors thereof, in all Places, especially in these three Kingdoms, ever since the Reformation of Religion, and how much their

* From the original Edition, published by *Edward Husbands*, *Sept.* 22. 1643. In the Title Page it is called, *A solemn* League *and* Covenant, *for Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happiness of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the three Kingdoms of* England, Scotland, *and* Ireland.

After which follow these Texts of Scripture, which the Commons ordered to be printed in the Title.

Jer. l. 5. *Come let us join ourselves to the Lord in a perpetual Covenant that shall not be forgotten.*

Prov. xxv. 5. *Take away the Wicked from before the King, and his Throne shall be established in Righteousness.*

2 Chron. xv. 15. *And all Judah rejoiced at the Oath, for they had sworn with all their Heart, and sought him with their whole Desire, and he was found of them; and the Lord gave them Rest round about.*

'their Rage, Power, and Presumption, are of late, 'and at this Time, increased and exercised; 'whereof the deplorable Estate of the Church and 'Kingdom of *Ireland*, the distressed Estate of the 'Church and Kingdom of *England*, and the dan-'gerous Estate of the Church and Kingdom of '*Scotland*, are at present public Testimonies; 'we have now at last, (after other Means of Sup-'plication, Remonstrance, Protestations, and Suf-'ferings) for the Preservation of ourselves and our 'Religion from utter Ruin and Destruction, ac-'cording to the commendable Practice of these 'Kingdoms in former Times, and the Example 'of God's People in other Nations, after mature 'Deliberation, resolved and determined to enter 'into a *mutual* and *solemn League* and *Covenant*; 'wherein we all subscribe, and each one of us for 'himself, with our Hands lifted up to the Most 'High God, do swear,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'1. That we shall sincerely, really, and con-'stantly, through the Grace of God, endeavour, 'in our several Places and Callings, the Preserva-'tion of the Reformed Religion in the Church of '*Scotland*, in Doctrine, Worship, Discipline, and 'Government, according to the Word of God, 'and the Example of the best Reformed Churches; 'and we shall endeavour to bring the Churches of 'God, in the three Kingdoms, to the nearest Con-'junction and Uniformity in Religion, Confession 'of Faith, Form of Church-Government, Direc-'tory for Worship and Catechizing; that we, and 'our Posterity after us, may, as Brethren, live in 'Faith and Love, and the Lord may delight to 'dwell in the Midst of us.

'2. That we shall in like Manner, without re-'spect of Persons, endeavour the Extirpation of 'Popery, Prelacy, (that is, Church-Government 'by Archbishops, Bishops, their Chancellors and 'Commissaries, Deans, Deans and Chapters, 'Archdeacons, and all other Ecclesiastical Offi-'cers depending on that Hierarchy) Superstition, 'Heresy, Schism, Profaneness, and whatsoever

'shall

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'shall be found to be contrary to sound Doctrine 'and the Power of Godliness; lest we partake 'in other Mens Sins, and thereby be in Danger to 'receive of their Plagues; and that the Lord may 'be one, and his Name one in the three Kingdoms.

'3. We shall, with the same Sincerity, Reality, and Constancy, in our several Vocations, endeavour, with our Estates and Lives, mutually 'to preserve the Rights and Privileges of the 'Parliaments, and the Liberties of the Kingdoms; 'and to preserve and defend the Kings Majesty's 'Person and Authority, in the Preservation and 'Defence of the true Religion and Liberties of 'the Kingdoms, that the World may bear witness 'with our Consciences of our Loyalty, and that 'we have no Thoughts or Intentions to diminish 'his Majesty's just Power and Greatness.

'4. We shall also, with all Faithfulness, endeavour the Discovery of all such as have been, 'or shall be, Incendiaries, Malignants, or evil 'Instruments, by hindering the Reformation of 'Religion, dividing the King from his People, or 'one of the Kingdoms from another, or making 'any Faction or Parties amongst the People, contrary to this *League* and *Covenant*, that they may 'be brought to public Trial, and receive condign 'Punishment, as the Degree of their Offences 'shall require or deserve, or the Supream Judicatories of both Kingdoms respectively, or others 'having Power from them for that Effect, shall 'judge convenient.

'5. And whereas the Happiness of a blessed 'Peace between these Kingdoms, denied in former Times to our Progenitors, is, by the good 'Providence of God, granted unto us, and hath 'been lately concluded and settled by both Parliaments, we shall each one of us, according to our 'Places and Interests, endeavour that they may remain conjoined in a firm Peace and Union to all 'Posterity; and that Justice may be done upon 'the wilful Opposers thereof, in manner expressed 'in the precedent Article.

'6. We

'6. We shall also, according to our Places and 'Callings, in this common Cause of Religion, 'Liberty, and Peace of the Kingdoms, assist and 'defend all those that enter into this *League* and '*Covenant*, in the maintaining and pursuing there-'of; and shall not suffer ourselves, directly or in-'directly, by whatsoever Combination, Persua-'sion, or Terror, to be divided and withdrawn 'from this blessed Union and Conjunction, whe-'ther to make Defection to the contrary Part, or 'to give ourselves to a detestable Indifferency or 'Neutrality in this Cause which so much concern-'eth the Glory of God, the Good of the King-'doms, and Honour of the King; but shall, all 'the Days of our Lives, zealously and constantly 'continue therein, against all Opposition, and 'promote the same, according to our Power, against 'all Lets and Impediments whatsoever; and what 'we are not able ourselves to suppress or overcome, 'we shall reveal and make known, that it may 'be timely prevented or removed: All which we 'shall do as in the Sight of God.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'And because these Kingdoms are guilty of ma-'ny Sins and Provocations against God and his 'Son Jesus Christ, as is too manifest by our pre-'sent Distresses and Dangers, the Fruits thereof, 'we profess and declare, before God and the World, 'our unfeigned Desire to be humbled for our own 'Sins, and for the Sins of these Kingdoms; espe-'cially, that we have not, as we ought, valued the 'inestimable Benefit of the Gospel; that we have 'not laboured for the Purity and Power thereof; 'and that we have not endeavoured to receive 'Christ in our Hearts, nor to walk worthy of him 'in our Lives, which are the Causes of other Sins 'and Transgressions, so much abounding amongst 'us; and our true and unfeigned Purpose, Desire, 'and Endeavour for ourselves, and all others un-'der our Power and Charge, both in Public and 'Private, in all Duties we owe to God and Man, 'to amend our Lives, and each one to go before 'another in the Example of a real Reformation,

'that

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'that the Lord may turn away his Wrath and 'heavy Indignation, and eſtabliſh theſe Churches 'and Kingdoms in Truth and Peace. And this '*Covenant* we make in the Preſence of Almighty 'God, the Searcher of all Hearts, with a true 'Intention to perform the ſame, as we ſhall an-'ſwer at that great Day when the Secrets of all 'Hearts ſhall be diſcloſed; moſt humbly beſeech-'ing the Lord to ſtrengthen us by his Holy Spirit 'for this End, and to bleſs our Deſires and Pro-'ceedings with ſuch Succeſs, as may bring Deli-'verance and Safety to his People, and Encou-'ragement to the Chriſtian Churches groaning un-'der, or in Danger of, the Yoke of Anti-Chri-'ſtian Tyranny, to join in the ſame, or like *Aſſo-'ciation* and *Covenant*, to the Glory of God, the 'Enlargement of the Kingdom of Jeſus Chriſt, 'and the Peace and Tranquility of all Chriſtian 'Kingdoms and Common-wealths.'

The Commons deſire the Aſſembly of Divines Opinion thereon, in point of Conſcience.

Before this *Covenant* was wholly agreed to by both Houſes, the Commons having referred it, as a Caſe of Conſcience, to the Aſſembly of Divines at *Weſtminſter* for their Opinion of the Matter; theſe Godly and Learned Miniſters of the Goſpel of Peace appeared before the Houſe, and expreſſed themſelves as follows:

'That they had, after a particular Seeking of God for his ſpecial Direction in this Buſineſs, fully debated and conſidered of it, in all its ſeveral Particulars: That they did approve of the ſaid *Covenant*, and judged it lawful, in Point of Conſcience, to be taken: That they did humbly adviſe, that the following Explications ſhould be ſubjoined to the *Covenant*, viz.

1. 'By the Clauſe in the *firſt Article* of the *Covenant*, *According to the Word of God*, they underſtood, *So far as we do, or ſhall, in our Conſciences, conceive the ſame to be according to the Will of God.*

2. '*By Prelacy*, in the *ſecond Article*, they underſtood, *Church-Government by Archbiſhops, Bi-*

Bishops, their Chancellors, Commissaries, Deans, Deans and Chapters, Archdeacons, and other Ecclesiastical Officers, depending upon the Hierarchy. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'The Prolocutor made a pious Speech after the Delivery of these Opinions; in which he desired that, in the taking of this *Covenant*, the People might be thoroughly informed of the Grounds, Reasons, and Consequences of it, being a Matter of so vast Importance: Concluding with the Prayers of the Assembly, *That God would be pleased to return in Mercy to his People, and pitch his Tents over, and about, them.*'

Matters being thus settled *in Foro Conscientiæ*, this new *Oath* went smoothly down: It was first taken by all the Lords and Commons, then in Town; all the Officers in their Army were strictly enjoined to do the same; and, afterwards, it was ordered to be taken throughout the Kingdom.

Sept. 23. This Day a Conference was held between the two Houses, at which the Commons presented to the Lords a Letter of Advice they had received from the Earl of *Essex*'s Secretary, dated from *Reading* the Day before. This Letter was to inform the Parliament of a Battle between the two Armies, but is not enter'd in the *Journals*. It was fought on the 20th of *September*, near *Newbury*, in *Berkshire*, and is related at large by *Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, *&c.* Here both Sides again claim'd the Victory, as in the first Battle at *Edgehill*. The Parliament, particularly, made themselves sure of it, and ordered a Committee of both Houses to send to their Lord-General and the Army forthwith, to let them know, How great Value and Esteem the Houses had for his Excellency's Conduct, and the great Service done by them all, with the Blessing of God; to acquaint him also, That they were using all Endeavours to supply the Army, and sending additional Forces, in order to take this Opportunity for the prosecuting and perfecting of the Work. They also sent a Committee into the City, to inform them of this great Victory, and the

The Battle of Newbury.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

the Advantages that might be hoped for from it: To urge the Citizens to send a Reinforcement of Men, with a Supply of Money and Provisions; and to use all Diligence to hinder any such from being sent to the King's Army: Likewise to order a Day of Thanksgiving, within *London* and *Westminster*, and the Liberties thereof, for the great Success of their Lord-General.

For which the Parliament order a Day of Thanksgiving.

The Manner of taking the Covenant by both Houses.

Sept. 25. This Day having been appointed by Parliament, for their taking the *Solemn League* and *Covenant*: Both Houses, with the Assembly of Divines, and *Scots* Commissioners, met at St. *Margaret*'s, *Westminster*, for that Purpose. It appears, by the *Commons Journals*, that an *Order* was made, by them, for printing a Narrative of the whole *Proceedings* and *Manner* of taking this *Covenant*, together with the *Prayers*, *Exhortations*, and *Psalms* used upon that Occasion. But as this Piece, published by Authority, never yet fell into our Hands, we shall content ourselves with giving Mr. *Whitlocke*'s and Lord *Clarendon*'s Account of the Ceremonial.——The former tells us*; That

'Mr. *White*, one of the Assembly, prayed an Hour to prepare them for taking the *Covenant*; then Mr. *Nye*, in the Pulpit, made some Observations touching the *Covenant*, shewing the Warrant of it from Scripture, the Examples of it since the Creation, and the Benefit to the Church. Mr. *Henderson*, one of the *Scots* Commissioners, concluded in a *Declaration* of what the *Scots* had done, and the Good they had received, by such *Covenants*; and then he shewed the Prevalency of ill Counsels about the King, and the Resolutions of the States of *Scotland* to assist the Parliament of *England*. Next Mr. *Nye*, in the Pulpit, read the *Covenant*, and all present held up their Hands, in Testimony of their Assent to it. The Divines of the Assembly, and the *Scots* Commissioners, subscribed it: And then Dr. *Gouge*, in the Pulpit, pray'd for a Blessing upon it. Afterwards the Members of

* *Memorials*, p. 70.

of Parliament, in their respective Houses, subscribed their Names in a Parchment Roll, where the *Covenant* was written.'——Thus far Mr. *Whitlocke*. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Lord *Clarendon*'s Account of this Matter runs thus †: 'The Lords and Commons, and their Assembly of Divines, met together at the Church, with great Solemnity, to take the *Covenant*, on the 25th Day of *September*; a double Holyday, by the Earl of *Essex*'s Return to *London*, and this Religious Exercise.

'There two or three of their Divines went up into the Pulpit successively, not to preach, but to pray; others, according to their several Gifts, to make Orations upon the Work of the Day. They were by them told, 'That this *Oath* was such, 'and, in the Matter and Consequence of it, of 'such Concernment, as it was truly worthy of 'them, yea of those Kingdoms, yea of all the 'Kingdoms of the World: That it could be no 'other but the Result and Answer of such Prayers 'and Tears, of such Sincerity and Sufferings, that 'three Kingdoms should be thus born, or rather 'new born, in a Day: That they were entering 'upon a Work of the greatest Moment and Con-'cernment to themselves, and to their Posterities 'after them, that ever was undertaken by any of 'them, or any of their Fore-fathers before them: 'That it was a Duty of the first Commandment, 'and therefore of the highest and noblest Order and 'Rank of Duties; therefore must come forth, at-'tended with choicest Graces, Fear, Humility, and 'in the greatest Simplicity and Plainness of Spirit, 'and Respect of those with whom they covenant-'ed: That it was to advance the Kingdom of 'Christ here upon Earth, and make *Jerusalem* once 'more the Praise of the whole Earth, notwith-'standing all the Contradictions of Men.'

'As soon as this Solemnity was over, Mr. *Henderson*, one of the Ecclesiastical Commissioners from *Scotland*, magnified what they had done,

 and

† History, Vol. III. p. 372, 376.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

and assured them, 'of great Success after it, by the 'Experience of that Nation, who, from their Union 'in the first *Covenant*, found nothing hard they pro- 'posed to themselves; and told them, That were 'that *Covenant* now painted upon the Wall within 'the *Pope*'s Palace, it would doubtless put him in- 'to *Belshazzar*'s quaking Condition;' with many such high Expressions, as can hardly be conceived without the View of the Records and Registry that is kept of them.'

Several Lords then in Town, the Earl of *Northumberland* for one, did not appear at this Ceremony; many Members of the Commons were also absent, and sent their Excuses, next Day, for ill Health, or otherwise; but took it afterwards*.

Ordinance for sequestring the Revenue of the whole Royal Family.

Sept. 26. An *Ordinance* was agreed to by both Houses for an absolute Sequestration of the King's Revenue, with those of the Queen's and Prince of *Wales*, and seizing them for the Use of the Parliament; to be printed and published all over the Kingdom.

Sept. 28. The Earl of *Essex*, being come up to Town, was complemented by the Speakers of both Houses, on his late Victory; and this Day he presented to the Lords several Colours taken, at the late Battle at *Newbury*, from the King's Army; one of which had the Picture of the House of Lords, with two Heads upon each End of it, and this Motto, UT EXTRA SIC INTUS. Another was a Cavalier in pursuit of a Round-head; the Word of the Round-head, QUARTER; the Cavalier's, QUI SEQUITUR VINCIT.

A Cessation of Arms with the Irish Rebels agreed to by the King.

About this Time the Parliament being alarmed with the News of a *Cessation* of Arms with the Rebels in *Ireland*, agreed to by the Council of State in that Kingdom, several *Votes* were passed, and a *Declaration* framed against it. The whole of this Proceeding, with the *Articles* of *Cessation* which

* Their Names (being in Number 228) are all set down in *Rushworth*'s *Collections*, p. 480. and in *Husbands*, p. 426.

which were agreed on, may be seen in *Rushworth*; but we shall content ourselves with the Form of the *Declaration* only, since it seems to sum up all that can be said about this Matter.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

A DECLARATION *of the* LORDS *and* COMMONS, *assembled in Parliament, against the intended* CESSATION, *or* TREATY, *with the* Irish Rebels.

The Parliament's Declaration against it.

'AS it is evident to all the World, that this late horrid Rebellion of the Papists in *Ireland*, did, without any Colour or Pretext of Provocation, professedly and boldly aim at the Destruction of the Protestant Religion, the Rejecting of the Laws of *England*, and the Extirpation of the *British* Inhabitants out of that Kingdom: So it is no less manifest, that this Parliament of *England* (to whom his Majesty hath left the managing of the War against those Rebels) hath taken the Troubles of *Ireland* to Heart, with that Resentment and Compassion as may evidence their Zeal to Religion, their Love to their distress'd Country-men, and Brethren there, in these Times, when the like *Jesuitical* Practices have cast *England* into woful Distractions and an unnatural War; notwithstanding which the reducing of *Ireland* hath still been a chief Part of the Care of this Parliament: And God hath been pleased to bless our Endeavours with such Success, as that those furious, blood-thirsty Papists have been stopped in the Career of their Cruelty; some Part of the Protestant Blood, which at first was spilt like Water upon the Ground, hath been revenged; their Massacres, Burning, and Famishings, have, by a divine Retaliation, been repaid into their Bosom; and the Protestant Party hath been erected to that Condition of Strength and Hope, that their Enemies are constrained (distrusting their Forces) to have Recourse to their Craft and Policies; and therefore by their subtile Agents at Court, and their active Instruments elsewhere, have been endea-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'vouring now, of a long Time, to make our Armies in *Ireland* disaffected to the Parliament; 'what by Occasion of their Wants not so readily 'supplyed as their Need required, what by amu-'sing them with these unhappy Differences fallen 'in here between King and People; labouring, 'by these Means, to divide those Forces into Fac-'tions, to the end the main Work they have in 'Hand might be neglected; which is the Prose-'cuting of the War against the Rebels, so far 'brought low in some Parts of *Ireland*, that if they 'can be deprived of the Benefit of this Harvest, 'they are not likely to see the next Summer.

'Now the Rebels finding, that notwithstand-'ing the Distractions here occasioning the Slow-'ness and Scarceness of Supplies, yet they them-'selves are in a far worse Condition, being in 'Want of most Things necessary, not only for 'the maintaining of a War, but even of Life; '(the Judgment of God being remarkable upon 'them in this, that as their bloody and treache-'rous Religion made them inhumanly cruel in 'shedding the Protestants Blood; so now the Fa-'mine amongst many of them hath made them un-'naturally, and Cannibal-like, eat and feed one up-'on another) therefore, that they may have Time 'to expect from their Friends abroad new Supplies 'both of Victuals and Ammunition, and may, 'without Molestation, reap the Fruit of this Har-'vest, they have laboured a Treaty for a *Cessation*; 'which Project of theirs doth no less aim at the 'Overthrow of the Remainder of the Protestants 'in that Kingdom, than their treacherous Taking 'of Arms at first did intend the Destruction of them 'all; for their Cessation and Hostility, their War 'and Peace, are alike to be esteemed of, and with 'those that neither in Peace nor War keep any 'Faith, it is best to be in perpetual Defiance: 'Therefore the Lords and Commons in Parlia-'ment assembled, according to their continued 'Care of that Kingdom of *Ireland*, do, in a special 'Manner, take into their Consideration the Con-

'dition

'dition thereof, upon this Occasion of an intended *Cessation*; and so much the rather, because it is feared that the Protestant Forces, through Want of Provisions for their Armies, may at last, if not relieved, be persuaded to admit of this Course, in hope thereby to procure some Means for their Subsisting; as also because there is too much Ground to suspect that, if this *Cessation* should be agreed unto, they might have Opportunity to join with the Popish Party here for their greater Strengthening; and though it were to have no Influence upon this Kingdom, yet the evil Consequences of it are so many and pernicious to *Ireland*, that this Parliament would betray the Trust reposed in them, if they did not declare against this *Cessation*, and use all Means in Time to make it prove abortive: And therefore they desire it may be observed and taken Notice of,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'*First*, From whence the Counsel and Design of this *Cessation* ariseth, even from the Rebels and Papists themselves for their own Preservation; for soon after they had missed of their Intent, to make themselves absolute Masters of that Kingdom of *Ireland* by their treacherous Surprizes; and seeing that this Kingdom did, with most Christian and generous Resolutions, undertake the Charges of the War for the Relief and Recovery of *Ireland*, Propositions were brought over from the Rebels by the Lords *Dillon* and *Taafe*, at which Time they were intercepted and restrained by Order of the House of Commons. After that they had the Boldness, even while their Hands were still imbrued in the Protestants Blood, to petition his Majesty that their Demands might be heard; and, for this Purpose, they obtained a Commission to be sent over into *Ireland* to divers Persons of Quality (whereof some where Papists) to hear, receive, and transmit to his Majesty their Demands, which was done accordingly; and one Mr. *Burke*, a notorious pragmatick *Irish* Papist, was the chief Sollicitor in this Business. After this, the just revenging God giving daily Success to Hand-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'fuls of the Proteſtants Forces againſt their great 'Numbers; ſo that, by a wonderful Bleſſing from 'Heaven, they were in moſt Parts put to the worſt; 'then did they begin to ſet on Foot an Overture 'for a *Ceſſation* of Arms; concerning which, what 'Going and Coming hath been between the Court 'and the Rebels is very well known; and what 'Meetings and Treaties have been held about it 'in *Ireland*, by Warrant of his Majeſty's ample 'Commiſſion ſent to that Effect; and what Re-'ception and Countenance moſt pragmatick Papiſts 'negociating the Buſineſs, have found at Court; 'and that thoſe of the State in *Dublin*, who had 'ſo much Religion and Honeſty as to diſſuade the '*Ceſſation*, were firſt diſcountenanced, and at laſt 'put out of their Places and reſtrained to Priſon, 'as Sir *William Parſons* one of the Lords Juſtices 'there, Sir *John Temple* Maſter of the Rolls, Sir '*Adam Loftus* Vice-Treaſurer of *Ireland* and 'Treaſurer at War, and Sir *Robert Meredith* one 'alſo of the Council-Table.

'*Secondly*, The Lords and Commons deſire it 'may be obſerved, That, during all theſe Paſſages 'and Negotiations, the Houſes of Parliament were 'never acquainted by the States of *Ireland* with this '*Treaty* of a *Ceſſation*, much leſs was their Ad-'vice or Counſel demanded; notwithſtanding that 'the Care and Managing of the War was devolved 'on them, both by Act of Parliament, and by his 'Majeſty's Commiſſion under the Great Seal, *To* '*adviſe, order, and diſpoſe of all Things concerning* '*the Government and Defence of that Kingdom.* 'But the Wants of the Army were often repre-'ſented and complained of; whereby, with much 'Craft, a Ground was preparing for the Pretext 'wherewith now they would cover the Counſels 'of this *Ceſſation*, as if nothing had drawn it on, 'but the extream Wants of their Armies; whereas 'it is evident, that the Reports of ſuch a *Treaty* 'have been, in a great Part, the Cauſe of their 'Wants; for thereby the Adventurers were diſ-'heartned, Contributions were ſtopped, and by

'the

'the Admittance to Court of the Negotiators of 'this *Cessation*, their wicked Counsels have had 'that Influence, as to procure the intercepting of 'much Provisions which were sent for *Ireland*; so 'that Ships going for *Ireland* with Victuals, and 'others coming from thence with Commodities 'to exchange for Victuals, have been taken, not 'only by *Dunkirkers*, having his Majesty's War-'rant, but also by *English* Ships, commanded by 'Sir *John Pennington*, under his Majesty. And 'moreover, the Parliament Messengers, sent in-'to several Counties with the *Ordinance* of *Janu-'ary* last for Loans and Contributions, have been 'taken and imprisoned; their Money taken from 'them, and not one Penny, either Loan or Con-'tribution, hath been suffered to be sent in for *Ire-'land*, from those Counties which were under the 'Power of the King's Army; while in the mean 'Time the Houses of Parliament, by their Ordi-'nances, Declarations, and Sollicitations to the 'City of *London*, and the Counties free from the 'Terror of the King's Forces, were still procu-'ring no contemptible Aid and Relief for the Di-'stresses of *Ireland*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'*Thirdly*, As the Lords and Commons have 'Reason to declare against this Plot and Design 'of a *Cessation* of Arms, as being treated and car-'ried on without their Advice; so also because of 'the great Prejudice which will thereby redound 'to the Protestant Religion, and the Encourage-'ment and Advancement which it will give to the 'Practice of Popery; when these Rebellious Pa-'pists shall, by this Agreement, continue and set 'up with more Freedom their Idolatrous Worship, 'their Popish Superstitions, and Romish Abomi-'nations, in all the Places of their Command; to 'the Dishonouring of God, the Grieving of all true 'Protestant Hearts, the Dispensing with the Laws 'of the Crown of *England*, and to the Pro-'voking of the Wrath of a jealous God; as if both 'Kingdoms had not smarted enough already for 'this Sin of too much conniving at, and tolerating

'of

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'of, Anti-Christian Idolatry, under Pretext of 'civil Contracts and politic Agreements.

'*Fourthly*, In the fourth Place, they desire it 'may be observed, that this *Cessation* will prove 'dishonourable to the public Faith of this King-'dom; it will elude and make null the Acts and 'Ordinances of Parliament, made for the for-'feiting of the Rebels Land; at the passing of which 'Acts, it was represented, that such a Course would 'drive the Rebels to Despair; and it proves so, but 'otherways than was meant; for, despairing of 'their Force and Courage, they go about to over-'come us with their Craft.

'*Lastly*, What shall become of the many poor 'exiled Protestants, turned out of their Estates by 'this Rebellion, who must now continue begging 'their Bread, while the Rebels shall enjoy their 'Lands and Houses? And who shall secure the rest 'of the Protestants, that either by their own Cou-'rage, Industry, and great Charges, have kept 'their Possessions, or by the Success of our Ar-'mies have been restored? Can there be any As-'surance gotten from a perfidious Enemy, of a '*Cessation* from Treachery and Breach of Agree-'ment, when they shall see a fit Time and Op-'portunity? These and many other Considerations 'being well weighed, it will appear evidently that 'this Design of a *Cessation* is a deep Plot laid by 'the Rebels, and really invented for their own 'Safety, and falsly pretended to be for the Benefit 'of our Armies.

'And whereas the Lords and Commons have 'no certain Information that the *Treaty* is con-'cluded, but are informed by several Letters that 'all the Protestants, as well Inhabitants as Sol-'diers in that Kingdom, are resolved to withstand 'that Proceeding; and to adventure on the greatest 'Extremities, rather than have any Sort of Peace 'with that Generation, who have so cruelly, in 'Time of Peace, murdered many Thousands of 'our Country-men, and laboured to extirpate the 'Protestant Religion from amongst them: So they 'do

'do believe, that these Rumours of a *Cessation* 'were first contrived by the Enemies of our Reli- 'gion and Peace; and, by their Practices, the *Treaty* 'was carried on with much Subtilty and Sollicita- 'tion; thereby to stop the sending of Supplies from 'thence to our Armies, and for the cooling of the 'Affections of those who have already shewed their 'Zeal to the Weal of *Ireland*. And therefore the 'only Means to defeat this their Policy, and pre- 'vent the Evils intended by it, is to settle a Course 'whereby the Armies of *Ireland* may be at least 'fenced against Hunger and Cold: For which Pur- 'pose it is desired, That all those who are well- 'affected to the Protestant Religion, either in that 'or this Kingdom, and all those who, by their 'Adventures already made, have embarked their 'particular Interests with the Public of that King- 'dom, and do desire a good Return of their En- 'gagements, would join their Endeavours for 'obviating of that Necessity, which may be made 'a strong Argument to inforce a destructive *Cessa-* '*tion* of Arms; and that they would not, through 'too much Suspicion and Jealousy of it, forbear 'the providing of Supplies, and so occasion that 'Inconvenience which they ought by all Means 'to prevent; for by so doing they will lose all their 'former Pains and Charges; and the with-holding 'of Provisions now will gain Credit to that Ca- 'lumny laid against this Kingdom, of neglecting 'the Armies of *Ireland*; and, by the continuing 'of Supplies, these Forces will be encouraged to 'continue the War, and so crown both their 'Work and ours. And, lastly, the Rebels seeing 'Assistance against them still flowing from hence, 'must needs be out of Hope of prosecuting, or 'concluding, this their Design. The Cry of much 'Protestant Blood, the great Indigency of many 'ruined Families, the Danger of our Religion al- 'most exiled out of that Kingdom, calls for this 'last Act of Piety, Charity, Justice, and Policy from 'us; which being resolved on, Letters are to be 'dispatched to the several Parts of that Kingdom,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'to

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'to encourage the Commanders and Soldiers upon 'the aforesaid Reasons and Assurances, that they 'may not hearken to such an unjust and deceitful 'Counsel; and as, by their prosecuting of the War, 'through God's Blessing, they have successfully 'resisted the Rebels Cruelty; so they may, upon 'this Occasion, beware they be not over-reached 'by their Craft.

'All which the Lords and Commons do earnest-'ly desire may be seriously taken to Heart by all 'the Kingdom; and that from those other Encou-'ragements, mentioned at large in the *Ordinance* 'of the fourteenth of *July* last*, and such as now 'are offered, a Course may be taken, where-'by such a constant weekly Contribution may be 'settled, as will supply to the Armies in *Ireland* 'the meer Necessities of Nature; which may be 'more punctually and seasonably transmitted unto 'the several Parts of that Kingdom, according to 'their respective Wants, that so the Benefit and 'Honour of so pious a Work happily begun, and 'successfully hitherto carried on, may not be lost 'when so little remains to be done; and that the 'Saving of a Kingdom, the Re-establishing of so 'many Protestant Churches, the Repossessing of 'so many thousand Christians into their Estates, 'may not be deserted and let fall to the Ground, 'for a little more Pains and Cost.'

The rest of this Month was employed, by the Parliament, in soliciting Loans of Money from the City of *London*, for the Payment of their Army. And the *Scots* having sent Word that they were ready to come into *England*, *Propositions* were ordered to be offered to the City, for the speedy raising of 50,000 *l.* to enable them to begin their March.

October

* By this *Ordinance* (which is at large in *Husband's Collections*, p. 233.) the Adventurers of *Ireland* were intitled to a double Proportion of Lands of what was given by the *Act* passed for that Purpose, in the Beginning of this Parliament.

October. There is nothing material enter'd in the *Journals* of either House till the eighth of this Month, when a remarkable Affair came on before the Lords. The *French* King had sent over an Ambassador Extraordinary, in order to compose the Differences between the Parliament and, so near a Relation to him as, the King of *England*. The Houses being informed, That this Ambassador came in an amicable Way, or, as the *Journals* express it, *with good Affections*, ordered a Deputation of Lords and Commons to go down to *Gravesend*; to welcome him on his Arrival, and wait upon him to his Lodgings at *Somerset-House*, which was fitted up for that Purpose.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

An Ambassador comes from France, as a Mediator between the King and Parliament.

Soon after this Ambassador's Arrival, Mr. *Walter Montague*, who followed him out of *France*, in his Retinue, was arrested at *Rochester*; and, by the Commons, committed Prisoner to the *Tower* *. A Motion was also made, That the Letters which he had brought over with him, sealed with the Arms of *France*, and directed to both their Majesties of *England*, should be opened: But that passed in the Negative. On the Imprisonment of this Gentleman, the Ambassador address'd the following haughty Memorial to the House of Lords. It was originally in *French*, and was translated on Purpose to be read in that House, and enter'd in their *Journals*; but it is so lamely done there, as scarcely to be made any Sense of; and we are obliged to the *Journals* of the Commons for the Original, of which we have attempted the following Translation†.

His Remonstrance to the Lords, on account of the arresting Mr. Montague in his Retinue.

'MY Lord the Prince of *Harcourt*, Peer of 'France, and Master of the Horse to the 'Most Christian King, Ambassador Extraordinary 'to

* This Mr. *Montague* and Sir *Kenelm Digby* had been employed, by the Queen, to solicit Contributions, from the *English Catholics*, towards supporting the War against the *Scots* in 1639. —— This Affair we took some Notice of in our Ninth Volume, p. 173, and 202.

† The Original runs thus in the *Commons Journals*:
*Monseigneur le Prince d'*Harcourt, *Pair et Grand Escuyer de* France, *Ambassadeur Extraordinaire vers le Roy de la* Grande Bretagne,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

'to the King of *Great Britain*, being informed that 'Mr. *Walter Montague* left *Paris* since his Excel-'lency, and came over into *England*, from the 'Queen, disguised amongst the Retinue of Mon-'sieur *De Gressy*, hath been arrested at *Rochester*; 'and tho' he was charged with the Care of her 'Majesty's Letters, for their Majesties of *Great* '*Britain*, was committed, nevertheless, Prisoner 'to the *Tower* of *London:* His Excellency declares 'to the Houses of Parliament, that he knew no-'thing of his Person, nor of his Disguise, neither did 'Monsieur *De Gressy*; but, for the Respect and 'Consideration of her Majesty's Letters, which 'make it appear that the said Mr. *Montague* had 'the Honour to belong to her, and she avoweth 'him; the said Ambassador demandeth, in the 'Name of her Majesty, and intreats them, in his 'own, that Mr. *Montague* may be put into his 'Hands, with all the Letters he was Bearer of; 'to avoid the Consequences that the just Complaint 'of such a Detention may produce.'

After this is enter'd, what is, in the *Lords Journals*, call'd the Sense of that House, on the reading this Paper, *viz.*

'That this *Walter Montague*, being a Renegado, and a Man banished the Kingdom, for the Mischief he did here; for him to be demanded of the two Houses of Parliament, in so high a Manner as this, by an Ambassador that pretends he comes

tagne, *ayant appris que M. de* Montague *party de* Paris *depuis luy, pour venir en* Angleterre *de la Part de la Reyne, se seroit jetté desguisé dans la Suitte de Monsieur de* Gresly *sans en estre conneu: Qu'a* Rochester *il auroit esté arresté; et bien que trouvé chargé de Lettres de la Reine pour leurs Majestez de la* Grande Bretagne, *il auroit, neantmoins, esté conduict Prisonnier en la Tour de* Londres: *Monseigneur declare à Messieurs du Parlement, qu' il n'a eu aucune Connoissance de sa Personne, ny de son Desguisement, non plus que le dit Sieur de* Gresly; *mais, pour le Respect et Consideration des Lettres de la Reyne, qui font voir que le dit Sieur de* Montague *a l'Honneur d'estre à elle, et d'en estre advoué, il demande de la part de sa Majesté, et les prie de la sienne, qu' ils luy remettent le dit Sieur de* Montague *entre les Mains, ensemble les Lettres dont il estoit Porteur, à fin d'evviter les Consequences, qui pourroient arriver de la juste Plainte d'une telle Detention.*

comes to endeavour to procure Peace; and giving himself so high a Title, and treating the two Houses of Parliament so low; is a Thing of so extraordinary a Nature, that, though the Houses desire to maintain a good Correspondency with *France*, yet this Kingdom needs not fear any ill Consequence that may follow upon this Business; but hope that God will bless them and protect them, as he hath hitherto done.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

It was also ordered to have a Conference with the other House, on the Subject of this Paper, and the Lord-General *Essex* to deliver the Sense of this House to the Commons concerning it. The Lord-General hereupon acquainted the Lords, That it was reported the *French* Ambassador, lately come, had brought many Attendants along with him, several of whom were conceived to be Officers and Commanders; and that if they should go to the King with him, it was likely they would not return. And it being probable that before the Ambassador goes, he would apply to his Lordship for a Safe-Conduct, he desired to know what he should do in this Case. Whereupon the House *ordered*, That, when the Ambassador sends to his Lordship for a Safe-Conduct, for himself and Followers to go to the King, his Lordship shall desire to see a List of all those he intends to take with him.

Oct. 9. At a Conference between the two Houses, it was agreed that the *Answer* to the *French* Ambassador's *Message* should be drawn up by a Committee; which being done, it was reported, read, and agreed to, and was in these Words:

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament have considered of the *Message* in Writing, delivered to the Earl of *Pembroke*, and by him presented unto them, from the Prince *D'Harcourt*, Ambassador Extraordinary from the *French* King; by which he complains that Mr. *Walter Mon-*

The Parliament justify their Conduct therein.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

and other Goods of some Masters of Colleges, so that there will be no Means of Subsistance left to any of the Members of the said Colleges, though never so innocent.

May it please your Honours, in tender Compassion to the sad Condition of the poor University, to grant unto us a Freedom from this Sequestration; and that the Fact of some few particular Men, which was, also, by them meant only as an Acknowledgment of their Duty to his Majesty, to whom some of them are obliged as to their Royal Founder, and others as his sworn Chaplains, may not redound to the Depriving of the Members of the several Colleges of all Possibility to continue in this University.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, *&c.*

RA. EXON*, *Vice-Chancellor.*

The Lords ordered that this *Petition* should be communicated to the House of Commons, at a Conference, that some Course might be taken for their Relief; but we hear no more of it in either House.

A Misunderstanding between the Parliament's two Generals, Essex and Waller, reconciled.

The Earl of *Essex* and Sir *William Waller*, the two Generals for the Parliament, had long differed in their respective Commands; and it was now run so high, that, this Day, the Earl made it his Request to both Houses, That he might have Leave to resign his Commission, and go beyond the Sea, in regard that the Commission granted to Sir *William Waller* was inconsistent with his own; and in respect to the many Discouragements he had received since his being General. The Lords, conceiving this to be a Business which concerned the present Safety of the whole Kingdom, resolved to have a Conference with the Commons about it; and

* Dr. *Ralph Brownrigge*, nominat (see the Bishoprick of *Exeter* by the King, upon the Translation of Bishop *Hall* to *Norwich*.—See Vol. X. p. 146.

and to declare, that the Sense of this House is, That the Commission to Sir *William Waller* be delivered up, being inconsistent with that to the Lord-General, from both Houses; whereby it was *voted*, That all Commissions should be granted by the Lord-General, and be under his Command, being necessary for the present Affairs and the Safety of the Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

The House of Commons was before-hand apprised of this Matter, and, at the same Time, sent a Message to the Lords, to let them know, That Sir *William Waller* had offered to give up his last Commission; and that they were of Opinion the best Way to discover the Conveniency or Inconveniency of it, was, to appoint a Committee to go to the Lord-General, with Power to consider of, and advise with his Excellency, what Course was fittest for settling this Business the most for the Safety of the Kingdom. A Committee of both Houses was immediately appointed to wait upon the Lord-General, on this Affair, each House, tho' late, resolving to sit till their Return; after which the Lords received the following *Votes* from the Commons:

'The Lords and Commons do declare, That, by virtue of their last Commission, Sir *William Waller* is under the Command of the Lord-General, and is bound to obey him, notwithstanding any thing in his Commission; and Sir *William Waller*, being present at this Debate, did declare, That he ever had been, and is, willing and ready to obey his Excellency the Lord-General's Commands. And,

'Whereas, by the Words of the last Commission to Sir *William Waller*, it is mentioned, That he was to receive his Instructions from both Houses of Parliament, it is this Day *ordered*, by the Lords and Commons, That Sir *William Waller* shall, from Time to Time, receive and observe such Instructions as the Lord-General shall give him.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

Kingdom, his Majesty's Authority in Parliament, and the Being thereof, and the Preservation of the Administration of the Justice of this Kingdom; and perceiving, by these Mischiefs, how absolutely necessary it is to have the Great Seal attending the Parliament, for the Reasons aforesaid, after a mature Debate, this Question was put, Whether a Great Seal of *England* shall be forthwith made to attend the Parliament for Dispatch of the Affairs of the Parliament and the Kingdom? it passed affirmatively. And accordingly,

The Lords give their Consent thereto.

The next Day the Lords sent a Message to the Commons, to acquaint them with their Concurrence in the *Vote* for making a new Great Seal of *England*.

We took Notice in the Proceedings of *July* last, that the Lords having refused their Consent to the *Vote* of the Commons for making a new Great Seal, the latter gave Orders for making one; the Form of which was, a Representation of the House of Commons, the Members sitting, on one Side; and the Arms of *England* and *Ireland*, on the other. But the Lords having now given their Consent, another Great Seal was ordered to be made in the very same Form and Manner as the King's.

October 16. A Letter from the Earl of *Manchester*, another of the Parliament's Generals, was read in the House of Lords; which contained an Account of a Victory he had obtained against the King's Forces in *Lincolnshire*; the Circumstances of which were as follows:

Letter from the Earl of Manchester, at Horncastle.

My Lords,

I Hold it my Duty to give your Lordships an Account of the Advantage that God hath been pleased to give unto those Forces, whereof you have been pleased to honour me with the Command: Upon Wednesday *last, being the* 12*th of* October, *I drew up the whole Body of Horse and Foot before the Castle of* Bolingbroke; *having had, the Night*

bet-

before, through some Neglect of the Yorkshire *Horse who kept the Out-Guards, some of our Horse put to run great Hazard; yet they behaved themselves very well, and got off with the Loss of only one Colour. After I was drawn into a Body, Word was brought unto me that the Enemy was advancing towards me with eighty Troops of Horse: Upon this Intelligence, I thought it my Duty not to quit the Place where I was, unless it was by marching to meet them, which I did; and when my Horse were drawn into as good Order as we could put them, and the Enemy was drawn very near to them, the Foot and Artillery marched up as fast as they could after the Horse, but came not so near as to give any Help; only they did dishearten the Enemy much, by the Confession of the Prisoners which we took, and made them charge the Horse sooner and more confusedly than otherwise they would have done.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

I must give the Horse under my Command their due Praise, that they charged very gallantly. Col. Cromwell *charged in the Van with my Regiment and his own, and behaved himself with Resolution and Honour;* Sir Thomas Fairfax *(who is a Person that exceeds any Expressions as a Commendation of his Resolution and Valour) was to second the first Body of Horse that charged, and he performed what he was commanded with Readiness and Success. I may truly say that, after the second Charge, our Men had little else to do but to pursue a flying Enemy; which they did for many Miles. What Loss truly the Enemy had, punctually, I cannot yet speak; only this I can say, divers Men of Quality lay dead upon the Place, and divers that rode away fell dead from off their Horses in the Town, some Miles off from the Place where we fought; I have sent* 800 *Prisoners to* Boston. *There were killed upon the Place about* 300 *as near as we can guess; and every Day the Horse-Guards are bringing in Prisoners, whom they find scattered about the Country.*

I am now intending to march forwards towards Gainsborough, *and shall do my best to make a Diversion*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

version for the Relief of Hull, *if I can in respect of the Time of the Year.*

I shall now beseech your Lordships, that the Glory and the Honour of this Defeat may be ascribed unto God; for truly it is only due unto him.

My Lords, I should have been abler to have done Service, if the Number of Foot and Horse out of the several Counties had been made good unto me; but I shall not neglect my Duty, and shall beg this Favour from your Lordships, that you would esteem me worthy of your good Opinion, as

Your Lordships

Most humble Servant,

MANCHESTER.

Horncastle, October 12, 1643.

P. S. *I cannot hear there were killed on our Side above twenty, and hurt about sixty.*

The Manner of presenting the Lord Mayor-Elect of London to the House of Lords.

After the reading of this Letter, a new Lord-Mayor of *London* was presented to the House of Lords for their Approbation. As this was the second Time any such Ceremony had been performed there, it will not be improper to give the whole of it from their *Journal*; observing, at the same Time, That it shews what a perfect Harmony and good Understanding there was between the Parliament and City of *London*.

'Sir *John Woolaston*, Knight, Lord Mayor Elect of the City of *London*, was presented to this House by the Recorder of *London* and most of the Alderman and Sheriffs of the said City; and the Recorder made a Speech to this House shewing, That, according to their Charter and Custom of the said City, the Lord Mayor Elect was presented to be approved by the Lord-Keeper, in Right of his Majesty; but in the Absence of the Lord Keeper they humbly desire that their Lordships would please to give their Approbation of him, and order that he may be sworn at the accustomed Day by some

ſome of the Barons of the *Exchequer*; they alſo made Expreſſion of the Faithfulneſs and Readineſs of the City to protect the Parliament with their Lives and Fortunes.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

Hereupon the Houſe commanded their Speaker to declare,

'The Lords do conceive, That, in the Abſence of his Majeſty, his Great Council of Peers is the moſt proper Power for the City of *London* and your Lordſhip to addreſs yourſelves unto, for an Approbation of that Choice the City hath made of you for their Lord-Mayor; whoſe Duty and Loyalty to the King and Kingdom hath well appeared already concerning the ſaid City; and my Lords are very well pleaſed that the City of *London* hath made Choice of your Lordſhip to govern the ſaid City, eſpecially in theſe Times of Trouble and Danger; recommending, in his Majeſty's Abſence, unto you, that your Care may be great to prevent all Tumults and Diſorders that may grow in the ſaid City, and to ſuppreſs all Factions that may appear there to their Diſquiet, or the Danger of this Kingdom.

'And it is alſo *ordered* by the Lords in Parliament, upon the Preſenting the Lord Mayor Elect of *London*, this Day, to the Houſe, That the Barons of the *Exchequer* that are, or ſhall be, in or near *London*, ſhall be perſonally preſent on the 30th of this Inſtant *October*, in the *Exchequer-Court*, although the Term ſhould be then adjourned; and then adminiſter unto the ſaid Lord Mayor Elect the uſual Oath that hath formerly been adminiſtered to his Predeceſſors, the Lord Mayors of the ſaid City of *London*.

'And becauſe of the Expreſſions of the Recorder *, of the great Affection of the City to this Houſe, their Lordſhips thought fit to appoint a Committee to draw up a ſpecial Return of Thanks for the ſame; and the Houſe appointed the

* *John Glynne*, Eſq; ſo appointed by Parliament on the Removal of Sir *Thomas Gardiner* for his Adherence to the King.

An. 10. Car. I. 1645. October.

the Earl of *Sarum*, Lord Viſcount *Say* and *Sele*, and the Lord *Wharton*, to draw up the ſame, who reported the Draught thereof to this Houſe, which was approved of; and the Lord Mayor Elect, Mr. Recorder, and the Aldermen and Sheriffs were called in, and the Speaker ſignified unto them,

'That my Lords have thought fit to call you 'in again to let you know, that they cannot but, 'with many Thanks, take Notice of the Expreſ- 'ſions of Mr. Recorder, in the Name of the 'whole City, of the Readineſs thereof to live no 'longer, than with a Deſire to live to declare their 'Affections to this Houſe and the Parliament; 'which their Lordſhips make no Doubt of, they 'having obſerved ſo many real Expreſſions, in 'theſe dangerous Times, of their Faithfulneſs and 'Aſſiſtance for the Safety of the Parliament and 'the Kingdom, that they ſuit fully with their Ex- 'preſſion now to this Houſe; and have been ſuch 'and ſo eminent, as no Time or Story can paral- 'lel: And as the Lords do acknowledge this with 'much Contentment, ſo they do again aſſure you 'that their Sitting here and conſtant Care ſhall be, 'as to endeavour and procure the Safety of Reli- 'gion, the Parliament, and Kingdom in general; 'ſo, in particular and in eſpecial Manner, the Safe- 'ty, Proſperity, Honour, and Advancement of 'your ſo well-deſerving and renowned City.'

The *Scots* Army, being now ready to enter this Kingdom, only ſtayed for the ſtipulated Sums, which had been agreed upon at *Edinburgh*, ſome Time before, by Commiſſioners on both Sides appointed for that Purpoſe. To this End the Commons ſent up an *Ordinance* this Day, to the Lords, which they had framed to haſten their March, which was readily agreed to by the latter. The Title thereof runs thus: *An* Ordinance *of the Lords and Commons in Parliament aſſembled, for the Repayment of all ſuch Sums of Money as are, or ſhall be, lent by any Perſon or Perſons, for the ſpeedy*

speedy bringing of our Brethren of Scotland *into this Realm, for our Assistance in this present War.* The Whole of it is too long and tedious to be recited: But the Preamble, declaring the Reasons of Parliament for so extraordinary a Step, is too remarkable to be omitted.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

An Ordinance for raising of Money for bringing the Scots Army into England;

'THE Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, taking into their serious Consideration the treacherous and bloody Plots, Conspiracies, Attempts, and Practices of the Enemies of God against the true Religion and Professors thereof in all Places, especially in the Kingdoms of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, ever since the Reformation of Religion; and how much their Rage, Power, and Presumption are of late, and at this Time, encreased and exercised, whereof the deplorable Estate of the Church and Kingdom of *Ireland*, the distempered Estate of this Church and Kingdom of *England*, and the dangerous Estate of the Church and Kingdom of *Scotland*, are present and public Testimonies; and finding that their *Supplications*, *Remonstrances*, *Protestations*, and *Treaties*, have nothing at all prevailed; but that the adverse Party doth still endeavour the Destruction of our Religion, Laws, and Liberties, by Force and open Violence; and finding that the said Popish and Jesuited Councils and Practices, which have brought the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland* into the lamentable Condition under which they now groan, to have, in the Intentions of the Authors and Contrivers of them, extended likewise into the Kingdom of *Scotland*: In this common Distraction and Danger of all the three Kingdoms, as an effectual Means of their Preservation, they have thought it necessary that all the well-affected to the true Protestant Religion and just Liberties of the Subjects in the three Kingdoms, should enter into a nearer Union and Association for the mutual Defence of each other; and, in pursuance thereof, a *solemn*

League

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

'*League* and *Covenant*, for Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happineſs of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the three Kingdoms, hath been agreed upon by the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*; which hath been already taken and ſubſcribed by the Members of both Houſes of the Parliament of *England*, the Members of the Aſſembly of Divines, and the Commiſſioners of the Aſſembly of the Church of *Scotland*; is now taking in the Cities of *London* and *Weſtminſter*; and is to be taken in all other Parts of this Kingdom, in the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and in the Realm of *Ireland*:

'And whereas each Perſon that hath taken, or ſhall take, the ſaid *Covenant*, is bound, according to his Place and Calling, in this common Cauſe of Religion, Liberty, and Peace of the Kingdoms, to aſſiſt and defend all thoſe that enter into the ſame, in the executing and purſuing thereof:

'And that it cannot be expected that the Contrivers and Authors of our preſent Troubles will, thereby, be any whit moved to deſiſt from their wicked Enterprizes, but rather that their Malice will be the more encreaſed; therefore, for the better reſiſting thereof, and the ſpeedier ſettling of a bleſſed Peace, there are likewiſe certain Articles agreed upon by the two Houſes of Parliament and the Kingdom of *Scotland*, whereby, amongſt other Things, our Brethren of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, for our Aſſiſtance in this preſent War, are ſpeedily to ſend an Army of 21,000 Horſe and Foot, and a Train of Artillery ſuitable, into this Kingdom.

'And whereas the Charge of levying, arming, and bringing thoſe Forces together furniſhed, as likewiſe the fitting the Train of Artillery, will neceſſarily require great Sums of Money, which our Brethren of *Scotland*, by reaſon of the many Charges that have lain upon them of late by their *Iriſh* Army and late Wars, are not able, at the preſent, to raiſe within that Kingdom; and ſo much

'much the rather, by reason that the Brotherly-Assistance Money is not yet paid unto them: We are, by these Articles, presently to pay unto them the Sum of 100,000 *l.* by way of Advance, towards the monthly Payments to be made to their Army, after such Time as they shall make their first Entrance into this Kingdom; and by these Articles our Brethren of *Scotland*, to manifest their Willingness, to their utmost Ability, to be helpful to the Kingdom in this common Cause, have agreed to give the Public Faith of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be jointly made use of with the Public Faith of the Kingdom of *England*, for the present taking up of 200,000 *l.* Sterling, in the Kingdom of *England* or elsewhere, for speedy Payment of the 100,000 *l.* Sterling as aforesaid, and towards satisfying, in good Proportion, the Arrears of the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*:

'Be it *ordained*, *&c.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

Some Time after this, the *Scots* finding that the Money from *England* did not come so soon as was expected, they sent a *Remonstrance* over, alledging, 'That they saw plainly, by the *Cessation* of Arms in *Ireland*, that the Protestant Religion was to be rooted out there, and the whole Force of the Rebels turned against the *Scots* Army in that Kingdom; which made the *Scots* take the *Covenant* unanimously; and they were resolved, their Eyes being now opened, to join with their Brethren of *England* in Defence and Preservation of Religion against the common Enemy.

'That they had named all their Officers and listed all their Soldiers; their Artillery and Ammunition was at *Leith*, and they were making Provisions of Victual, as far as they were able. But they confessed, nay they said they were not ashamed to confess their Want of Money; therefore they desired to have a speedy Supply, whereby they might be able to keep their Army together when it was in a Body. And whenever

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

'ever they ſhould have proper Notice, from Parliament, of the Agreements, they would be ready 'to march to their Rendezvous in forty-eight Hours 'Time. Laſtly, they deſired that the Towns, ſtipulated for, might be taken into Conſideration.'

Who publiſh a Proclamation, in the King's Name, for recruiting their Army.

It is neceſſary to be remembered in this Place, That about the Middle of *Auguſt*, the Eſtates of *Scotland* had publiſhed a **Proclamation* in the King's Name, requiring all Perſons, from ſixteen to ſixty, to appear in Arms, in ſupport and defence of the *Solemn League* and *Covenant*. This the King was ſo highly incenſed at, that, on the 16th of *September*, he wrote a Letter to the Council, ſetting forth, 'That he had, with great Amazement, ſeen 'a Paper, moſt impudently publiſhed without his 'Privity or Authority, tending to caſt the beloved 'People of his Native Kingdom into the like 'bloody Combuſtions and rebellious Violation of 'their Religion and Allegiance, as thoſe already 'in *England*: Forbidding all Obedience to the 'ſaid *Proclamation*, and all other Papers publiſh-'ed in his Name, which ſhould not immediately 'be warranted by Himſelf: And commanding this 'his *Letter* to be publiſhed, and alſo recorded in 'the Books of the Privy Council there.'—What Regard was paid to this will appear under the Proceedings of the next Month.

Proceedings againſt Baron Trevor, in the Caſe of Ship-Money.

Oct. 18. Sir *Thomas Trevor*, Knt. one of the Barons of the *Exchequer*, who had been concerned in the Buſineſs of *Ship-Money*, and impeached by the Houſe of Commons for the ſame, delivered in his Anſwer, this Day, to the Charge: Likewiſe a Petition to the Lords, acknowledging, That his Opinion and Judgment, in that Caſe, was given according to his Conſcience, without any Corruption or ſiniſter End whatſoever; which he then conceived to be, alſo, according to Law: But ſince the Parliament had declared it to be contrary to the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, he acknowledged

* This *Proclamation* at large, and the King's *Letter* are in *Ruſhworth*, Vol. V. p. 482.

ledged his Error of Judgment therein, and is most heartily sorry for the same; humbly submitting it, and whatsoever else he is charged withall by the said Impeachment, to their Lordships Judgment and favourable Consideration. It was *ordered* that this should be communicated to the House of Commons, and to acquaint them, that the Lords would give Judgment against Baron *Trevor* the next Morning.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

Accordingly, *October* 19, the Lords being in their Robes, and the Commons, with their Speaker, come up, and demanding Judgment as usual, the Speaker of the House of Lords pronounced the following Sentence:

His Sentence.

I. *That the said Sir* Thomas Trevor *should be fined in the Sum of* 6000 l. *to be forthwith paid and disposed of for the Service of the Kingdom*†.

II. *That he shall be imprisoned in the* Tower *of* London *during the Pleasure of this House.*

But, upon another Petition from the Baron, he was released from his Imprisonment the next Day, and continued to act in his Place.

The Judges being thus humbled, the Commons revived their Prosecution of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, with so much Vigour as, afterwards, to bring him to the Block.———Preparatory to this,

Abp. Laud's Trial.

Oct. 23. The Lords read the Articles of Impeachment, for High Treason, against him, which had been sent up by the Commons two Days before; and *ordered* that the Archbishop should have a Copy of the Articles sent him, and a proper Time assigned him to put in his Answer.

Nothing more occurs, worth our Notice, in *October*.

The Month of *November* begins with a Recital of the several *Articles*, to be agreed on between the Parliament of *England* and the Convention of the

† This corrects a Mistake of Lord *Clarendon*, who makes Sir *Thomas Trevor*'s Fine the same as Sir *Robert Berkeley*'s.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

the Estates of *Scotland*; which, upon reading *seriatim*, in the House of Lords, were severally agreed to: Particularly, to pay the *Scots* 100,000*l.* as soon as it could be raised, either upon their own Credit, or, on the Credit of both Kingdoms. But, we shall postpone these *Articles*, till they come to be fully concluded; and, in the *interim*, present the Reader with a Copy of some *Additional Instructions*, sent at the same Time, along with the said *Articles*, to the Parliament's Commissioners at *Edinburgh* *, which are not taken Notice of in the *Collections* of these Times.

Additional Instructions to the Parliament's Commissioners in Scotland.

I. 'YOU shall make known to our Brethren 'of *Scotland*, That the *Propositions* expressed in the Paper of the 25th of *August* last, 'sent from *Scotland*, concerning the Assistance desired by both Houses from that Kingdom, as also 'the *Proposition* concerning the settling a Garrison in *Berwick*, have been taken into Consideration by the two Houses; and have been, by 'them, agreed and consented unto, without any 'material or considerable Alterations.

II. You are, therefore, authorized and required, 'according to these *Votes* of the two Houses, 'herewith sent you, to agree and conclude, in the 'Name of both Houses, the said *Propositions*, and 'to perfect the respective *Treaties* in that Behalf, 'with all Expedition; and thereupon to hasten, 'all that possibly may be, the Assistance expected 'from that Kingdom; and to suffer no further 'Time to be lost in that Behalf, considering what 'Money for the present can be raised is now sent 'away to them; and no Diligence shall be wanting to procure and convey to them what remains, 'according to the *Treaty*, so far as our present 'Straits and Extremities will possibly permit.

III.

* In these *Additional Instructions*, the following Persons were appointed Commissioners, besides those named in the *First Instructions*, (p. 340 in this Volume) viz, *Robert Goodwyn*, *Richard Harwin*, *Bryan Stapylton*, and *Robert Fenwick*, Esqrs. *John Kendrick*, Alderman, and Mr. *Francis Allen*.

III. 'And whereas, by the said *Treaties*, seve- An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.
'ral Things are to be perform'd and done by the 'joint Advice of both Kingdoms, or their Com- 'missioners thereunto authorized, which cannot 'be so well transacted but by those that shall be 'upon the Place; you have, therefore, hereby full 'Power and Authority given you to come into 'this Kingdom with the *Scots* Army, and to advise, 'debate, and conclude with our Brethren of *Scot-* '*land*, or such as shall be authorized by them 'thereunto; and, by joint Advice with them, to 'put in Execution all such Matters and Things 'concerning the Well-ordering, Directing, Dispo- 'sal, and Accommodation of the Forces brought 'in and employed by them for our Assistance, as 'shall be found requisite and needful, from Time 'to Time, for the Prosecution of this Cause, and 'the Ends expressed in the *Covenant*, now solemn- 'ly sworn and enter'd into in both Nations, and 'in the *Propositions* now sent unto you; and you 'are to acquaint the two Houses with your Pro- 'ceedings and Conclusions in the same, from 'Time to Time, and to receive and observe such 'further Directions from them, as they shall think 'fit.

IV. 'You shall also take Care, and are here- 'by fully authorized, to sequester, in the Counties 'of *Nottingham*, *York*, Bishoprick of *Durham*, '*Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Westmoreland*, 'and in the Town and County of *Newcastle* upon '*Tyne*, in the City and County of the City of '*York*, in the Town and County of the Town of '*Nottingham*, in the Town and County of the 'Town of *Kingston* upon *Hull*, and in the Town 'and Port of *Berwick*, the Estates of such Per- 'sons as, by any *Ordinance* or *Ordinances* of Par- 'liament, are, or hath been, declared to be seque- 'strable, or shall hereafter be so declared; and to 'proceed therein as in your Directions you shall 'find to be most advantageous to the Public Ser- 'vice, to the Intent that the Profits arising there-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

upon, may be employed for and toward the Payment of the said Forces, and of such Forces of this Kingdom as are, or shall be, raised and employed by the two Houses of Parliament in the said Counties, Cities, and Towns; and otherwise for the defraying of such Charges as shall grow due for and by reason of their Assistance of us in this War: And you shall have Power to make Allowance to such Persons as shall be necessarily employed in the Execution of the Premises, as shall be meet; and shall, from Time to Time, give in an Account, in Writing, of your Proceedings in this Business, to both Houses: And all Lord-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieutenants, and other Officers and Ministers whatsoever, are hereby enjoined and required to be aiding and assisting to you herein, as in all Things else that shall concern the Good of this Service and the Public Interests of both Kingdoms, expressed in the *Covenant*.

V. 'And forasmuch as the two Houses do hold it of absolute Necessity, that Commissioners from the Kingdom of *Scotland* should be forthwith sent to reside in *London*, or elsewhere near the Parliament, with sufficient Power and Authority to treat and conclude of all such Things as shall be necessary for the Good of the three Kingdoms, in pursuance of the *Covenant* and of the late *Treaty*; with a further Power to send some of themselves, or any others by joint Consent of this Kingdom, to any the Parts beyond the Seas, for the procuring of Monies, or the Engagement of other States in the common Cause; you shall, therefore, with all Earnestness, press this Article, as that without which the whole Business is like to become very dilatory, if not wholly fruitless.

VI. 'You are likewise to advise with our Brethren of *Scotland*, of the Ways and Means whereby the Public Faith of that Kingdom may be engaged and made beneficial for the raising and discharging of the 200,000 *l.* to be advanced according to the *Treaty*.

VII. 'You

VII. 'You are likewise to make known to our 'Brethren of *Scotland* the *Votes* of both Houses 'concerning the *Cessation* of *Ireland*, lately con- 'cluded by Pretence of his Majesty's Authority; 'and that it is the *Resolution* of both Houses to 'oppose to the utmost, as long as God shall en- 'able them thereunto, the said *Cessation*; and to 'encourage, as far as lies in their Power, all those 'Forces, as well *Scots* as other *British* there, for 'the utter subduing of the Rebels, and Preven- 'tion of their setting up Popery in that Kingdom; 'and to this end they will speedily take Care to 'make Provision of Victuals, Cloaths, and other 'Necessaries, for the Subsistence of those Forces 'which they will send over, with all Speed, into 'that Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

VIII. 'You are also to consider with our Bre- 'thren of *Scotland* of the fittest and best Ways 'and Means for the ordering of the *Scots* and other '*British* Forces in *Ireland*, at the easiest Expence 'and Charge to both Kingdoms, and in such 'Manner as may best prosecute that War, and 'the Ends expressed in the *Covenant*; and to draw 'up the same in *Propositions* to be presented spee- 'dily to the Consideration of both Houses. And, 'in the mean Season, you are authorized to settle 'upon some Course with our Brethren of *Scotland*, 'by the joint Advice of the Commissioners of 'both Kingdoms, to manage that War and to 'prevent the present Evils; and speedily to make 'known to both Houses what you shall do here- 'in.

IX. 'You are also, for the Encouragement of the '*Scots* Army in *Ireland*, to let our Brethren know, 'that we will hasten away, with all Speed, the '60,000*l.* promised, the 10,000 Suits of Cloaths, 'and such other Necessaries as we shall be able to 'provide: And you are to treat and consider with 'our Brethren of *Scotland* of the Ways that lye 'in the Power of the two Houses, to give them 'Satisfaction for the Remainder of the Arrears

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

owing to the said Army, it being impossible, for the present, to pay them in Money.

X. 'You are to cause the Account of the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*, for Pay of the Officers and Soldiers, to be made up according to the Establishment of the *English* Army there, from the Time of each Regiment and Company's first Landing and Muster by Mr. *Kennedy*, untill the Day of Mr. *Clayton*'s Muster in *September*, 1642, and from thence according to Mr. *Clayton*'s Muster-Rolls, especially such as were taken this last Year; which Account is to be delivered to the Auditors for the Wars in *Ireland* to ingross, and to present the same to the Commons House of Parliament; and, for this end, the Clerk of the said House and the Auditor are to deliver you Certificates, under their Hands, of the Particulars of the said Establishment; and if any Doubts shall arise thereupon, you are hereby authorized, according to Right and Equity, to endeavour the Removal of the same, that the Account may have a final Determination.'

The Earl of Holland, who had joined the King at Oxford, comes back to the Parliament.

November 6. An Account was brought to the House of Lords, that the Earl of *Holland*, who had been with the King some Time, was taken by a Party of the Parliament's Forces: Hereupon he was ordered to be committed to the Custody of the Black Rod. But, upon Examination, it being found, that his Lordship had left the King and was returning to Parliament, he was set at Liberty. However, this Earl had a narrow Escape in the House of Commons; for a Motion for sending him to the *Tower* passed in the Negative, by only 59 against 58; as did another for his being made Prisoner elsewhere, by 59 against 56.—Mr. *Whitlocke* writes, That when his Lordship was examined he said, 'That when he heard of the *Cessation* in *Ireland*, his Conscience would not give him Leave to stay any longer with them at *Oxford*.'—But Lord *Clarendon* imputes the Earl's Re-

Return to the Parliament to the cold Reception he found at *Oxford*, 'Where he expected upon his first Appearance to have had his Key restored to him; to have been in the same Condition he was in the Bed-Chamber, and in the Council, and in the King's Grace and Countenance; for he thought nothing of former Miscarriages ought to be remembered; that all those were cancelled by the Merit of coming to the King Now, and bringing such considerable Persons with him, and disposing others to follow.' * An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Nov. 10. The Commons had framed an *Ordinance* relating to their new Great Seal, which the Lords were not over hasty to agree to; at last, on repeated *Messages* from the Commons about it, the Lords passed it this Day, with some few Alterations; to which the Commons having agreed, the same was *ordered* to be printed and published as follows:

An Ordinance for making a new Great Seal.

'WHereas the *Great Seal* of *England*, which, 'by the Laws of this Realm, ought to 'attend the Parliament, being the Supreme Court 'of Justice and Judicature within this Realm, for 'the Dispatch of the great and weighty Affairs of 'the Common-wealth, which is especially interest-'ed and concerned therein, was, above a Year last 'past; that is to say, the 22d Day of *May*, 1642, 'by the then Lord-Keeper thereof, *Edward* Lord '*Littleton*, then a Member and Speaker of the 'House of Peers in Parliament, contrary to the 'great Trust in him reposed, and Duty of his 'Place, secretly and perfidiously conveyed away 'from the Parliament into the King's Army, rai-'sed against the Parliament; the said Lord-Keeper 'departing therewith into the said Army, without 'the Leave or Privity of the said House; by 'Means whereof, great Mischiefs and Inconve-'niences have ensued to this Kingdom, and the 'Kingdom of *Ireland*:

* The Earls of *Bedford*, *Clare*, &c. of whom more hereafter.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'And whereas the ſaid *Great Seal* ought con-
'ſtantly to remain in the Hands and Cuſtody of one
'or more Officer or Officers, ſworn for that Ser-
'vice, and to be uſed and employed for the Weal
'and Safety of his Majeſty's People; which, not-
'withſtanding, hath been divers Times, ſince the
'Conveying away thereof as aforeſaid, put into the
'Hands of other Perſons not ſworn, and Popiſhly
'and dangerouſly affected, who have had the diſ-
'poſing and managing thereof at their own Wills
'and Pleaſures; and hath been traiterouſly and
'perniciouſly abuſed, to the Ruin and Deſtruction
'of the Parliament and Kingdom, by granting
'and iſſuing out divers illegal Commiſſions of Ar-
'ray, and other unlawful Commiſſions for raiſing
'of Forces againſt the Parliament; by iſſuing out
'moſt foul and ſcandalous Papers, under the
'Name and Title of Proclamations, againſt both
'Houſes of Parliament, and divers Members
'thereof, and others adhering to them, and pro-
'claiming them Traitors and Rebels; Commiſ-
'ſions of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, to proceed againſt
'divers of them as Traitors, and other Com-
'miſſions to ſeize and confiſcate their Eſtates, for
'no other Cauſe, but for doing their Duties and
'Services to the Common-wealth; as likewiſe
'by granting that horrid Commiſſion, for execu-
'ting of that moſt bloody and deteſtable Deſign
'of *Waller* and *Tompkins*, and others, for the
'Deſtruction of the Parliament, and City of *Lon-*
'*don*, and of the Army raiſed for their juſt De-
'fence; and (as if Maſſacres and Aſſaſſinations
'had been but light and venial Crimes) another
'Commiſſion hath been granted, under the ſame
'Seal, for a Ceſſation of Arms with the barbarous
'and bloody Rebels in *Ireland*, after the Effuſion
'of ſo much innocent Blood, and Slaughter of
'above 100,000 Proteſtants, Men, Women, and
'Children, by their mercileſs and bloody Hands;
'whereby a Ceſſation of Arms is accordingly
'concluded, and thoſe brutiſh Rebels thereby
'emboldened to prepare themſelves, not only for
'a

'a total Extirpation of the Proteſtants remaining there, but for a Conqueſt alſo of this Kingdom: And further, by granting of ſeveral Commiſſions, and Offices of Truſt and Command, to notorious Papiſts, who by the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, are made uncapable thereof; and by conferring of Honours and Dignities, and granting of Lands and Eſtates to divers exorbitant Delinquents, who ſtand legally impeached of High Treaſon and other high Crimes and Miſdemeanors in Parliament:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'All which, and many other unlawful and enormous Acts have paſſed under the ſaid *Great Seal*, ſince the Removal thereof from the Parliament, as aforeſaid: Which the Lords and Commons taking into their Conſideration, and finding all Ways and Means obſtructed for the procuring of any Redreſs from his Majeſty in the Premiſſes, notwithſtanding their long Hopes, and inceſſant Labours for the obtaining thereof, are bound, in Duty and of Neceſſity, to provide ſome ſpeedy Remedy for theſe inſupportable Miſchiefs:

'Be it therefore *declared* and *ordained* by the ſaid Lords and Commons aſſembled in Parliament, That as well all and every the ſaid Acts formerly mentioned, which have paſſed under the ſaid *Great Seal*, as alſo all Letters Patents and Grants of any Lands, Goods, or Eſtates, of any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever, for adhering to the Parliament; all Compoſitions or Grants of any Wardſhips, or Leaſes of any Wards, Lands, Liveries, *Primier Seiſins & Ouſter les Mains*, ſince the ſaid 22d Day of *May*, 1642, which have not, according to the due Courſe of Law, paſſed through the Court of Wards and Liveries, eſtabliſhed by Law: All Grants ſince the ſaid 22d of *May*, 1642, of any Honours, Dignities, Manors, Lands, Hereditaments, or other Thing whatſoever, to any Per-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'Person or Persons, which have voluntarily contributed, or shall voluntarily contribute, any Aid or Assistance to the Maintenance of the unnatural War raised against the Parliament; and all Pardons granted to any such Person or Persons; and all other Acts or Things whatsoever, contrary to, or in Derogation of, the Proceedings of both, or either Houses of Parliament, which have passed under the said *Great Seal*, since the Removal thereof from the Parliament, shall be, and are hereby *declared* to be, utterly Invalid, Void, and of none Effect, to all Intents and Purposes.

'And that all and every Act or Thing, which, after the Publication of this *Ordinance*, shall pass by, or under, the said *Great Seal*, or under any *Great Seal* of *England*, (other than what is hereby appointed and established) shall be utterly Void, Frustrate, and of none Effect; and every Person or Persons, which shall put the same in Use, or shall claim any Thing thereby, shall be held and adjudged a public Enemy of this State.

'And be it further *ordained* by the said Lords and Commons, That a *Great Seal* of *England*, already by them made and provided, shall be forthwith put in Use; and shall be, and is hereby authorized and established to be, of like Force, Power, and Validity, to all Intents and Purposes as any *Great Seal* of *England* hath been, or ought to be.

'And that it shall be put into the Hands and Custody of the Persons hereafter named, who are hereby *ordained* Commissioners for that Purpose; that is to say, *John* Earl of *Rutland*, and *Oliver* Earl of *Bolinghroke*, Members of the House of Peers; *Oliver St John*, Esq; his Majesty's Solicitor-General *, *John Wilde*, Serjeant

* The Parliament continued to give Mr. *St John* the Title of Solicitor-General, though his Majesty had long before revoked his Patent; and conferred that Office on Sir *Thomas Gardner*, who had been put out of his Place of Recorder of *London* by the Parliament on account of his taking Part with the King.

'jeant at Law, *Samuel Brown* and *Edmund Pri-* An. 19. Car. I.
'*deaux*, Esqrs. Members of the House of Com- 1643.
'mons; which said Persons, or any three or November.
'more of them, whereof one Member or more
'of the Lords House, also one Member or more
'of the House of Commons shall be present, shall
'have, and are hereby authorized to have, the
'keeping, ordering, and disposing thereof; as also
'all such and the like Power and Authority, as
'any Lord Chancellor, or Lord-Keeper, or Com-
'missioner of the *Great Seal*, for the Time being
'hath had, used, or ought to have.

Mr. *Whitlocke* informs us 'That the Earl of *Rutland*, appointed one of the Commissioners by the foregoing *Ordinance*, desired to be excused, as not understanding the Law, nor the Oath to be taken: Whereupon the Earl of *Kent*, (whom Lord *Clarendon* stiles a Man of far meaner Parts) readily accepted the Place.'

A few Days after the new Great Seal was carried up by the Speaker of the House of Commons, the whole House attending him, and delivered to the Speaker of the Lords House; who, in the Presence of both Houses, delivered it to the Commissioners; and they all took an Oath, to execute the Office of Keepers of the Great Seal of *England*, in all Things according to the Orders and Directions of both Houses of Parliament; the Speaker of the Peers swearing the two Lords, and Mr. *Brown* Clerk to the Parliament, the four Commoners. It was then carried to Mr. *Brown*'s House, in the *Old Palace*, and put into a Chest, with three different Locks; not to be opened but when three of the Commissioners were present.

Nov. 11. A Memorial was presented to the House of Lords, from the Ambassador of *France*, and read: It was in *French*, and the Purport of it was to make Proposals, in general, for an *Accommodation* between the King and Parliament, in the

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

the Name of the *French* King. The Lords having communicated this Memorial to the Commons, after a Day or two's Consideration, returned this Answer:

The Parliament's Answer to the French Ambassador's Proposal for an Accommodation.

'The Lords having received from the Prince 'D'*Harcourt*, Ambassador extraordinary in *England*, by the Earl of *Northumberland*, a Paper 'in *hæc Verba*, &c. and having communicated it 'to the Commons, both Houses, upon Consideration thereof, do think fit that this Answer shall 'be returned thereunto: That the Lords and 'Commons, assembled in the Parliament of *England*, will always, with due Respects, acknowledge such good Affection, as from the King his 'Master and the Queen his Mistress shall be, at 'any Time, expressed to the King and these Kingdoms: Professing that they desire nothing more 'than such a Peace, as may as well procure Honour and Happiness to the King, as the Preservation of the true Reformed Religion, the 'Privileges of Parliament, and the Liberty of the 'Subjects, in his Majesty's three Kingdoms, 'according to their late *Solemn League* and *Covenant*. And when the Prince *D'Harcourt* shall, 'from and in the Name of the King his Master, 'propose any Thing to the Lords and Commons, 'assembled in the Parliament of *England*, they 'will thereupon do that which shall be fit, and 'which shall justify their Proceedings to all the 'World; and that they had been forced to take 'up Arms for their own just and necessary Defence.'

The Archbishop of Canterbury pleads, Not Guilty.

Nov. 13. The Archbishop of *Canterbury* was brought to the Bar of the House of Lords, and required, by them, to give in his Answer to the Impeachment of the House of Commons against him. Which Answer was very short; for it only says, 'That all Exceptions to the said Articles of 'Impeachment to this Defendant saved, he saith 'he is not guilty of all or any the Matters charged 'by the said Impeachment, in such Manner and

'Form

'Form as are, by the ſaid Articles, charged a-'gainſt him.' The Archbiſhop then made a Speech, and was remanded to the *Tower*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Nov. 20. An *Ordinance*, very neceſſary at this Time, was agreed to by both Houſes, concerning the Preſervation of Records, *&c.* the Preamble to which was as follows:

An Ordinance for the Preſervation of Records, Manuſcripts, &c.

'Whereas by the ſeveral *Ordinances* of *Se-'queſtration*, &c. there have been, within the 'Cities of *London* and *Weſtminſter*, ſequeſtred and 'taken by Diſtreſs, amongſt other Goods, divers 'Manuſcripts, or written Books, Proceedings of 'Courts, Evidences of Lands, Rentals, Account-'Books, and other Kind of Writings and written 'Papers and Parchments; as alſo ſome whole 'Libraries, and choice Collections of printed 'Books of ſeveral Arts and Faculties; the Diſper-'ſing of which, by Sale and otherwiſe, may be 'much more diſadvantageous and prejudicial to 'the Public, both for the preſent and for Poſterity, 'and alſo to divers particular Perſons, well-affect-'ed to the Parliament, than the Benefit of their 'Sale can anywiſe recompence:

'Therefore the Lords and Commons do *ordain*, *&c.* *

An Affair happened, this Day alſo, in the Houſe of Commons, which fully ſhews the Miſeries the whole Kingdom was driven to, when the Capital of it had ſo large a Share. This will be beſt expreſſed by an Abſtract out of the *Journals* of the Commons themſelves, and needs no other Introduction.

A Remonſtrance from the City of London, of their great Wants and Neceſſities.

'The Houſe being informed, that divers of the Committee of the Militia of *London* were at the Door, and deſired to propound ſomething to the Houſe, they were called in: And Mr. Speaker, by Com-

* About this Time the Parliament appointed *William Lenthall*, Eſq; Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, to be Maſter of the Rolls, and *John Selden*, Eſq; Keeper of the Records in the *Tower*.

Whitlocke, p. 73.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Command of the House, acquainted them that they had Liberty to speak: Whereupon Alderman *Gibbs* spoke as follows:

'That they are of the Militia of *London*, and 'are sent by them to make known to this House, 'that the City of *London* is, at this Time, under 'two great Wants, and desire Leave to express 'them.

1. 'They are in great Want of Money, and 'desire you should know the Causes of it.

'It is not unknown that we have advanced great 'Sums, at several Times, being thereto sollicited 'by several Members of this House, both for this 'Kingdom and the Kingdom of *Ireland*; and 'have received several Securities for Repayment of 'them; as the Royal Subsidy, the Twentieth 'Part, the Weekly Assessments, and other En-'gagements; but, of all these, nor of any one of 'these, have we received any Benefit.

'We humbly recommend unto you the Re-'medy, That the Members of this Honourable 'House may be encouraged to make use of their 'Interests, in their several Counties, for the col-'lecting and bringing up those Monies, that we 'may be the better able to do you Service: The 'Want of it doth admit of great Inconvenience; 'for where the King's Party break in, they get 'the Money; and the State, in the mean time 'pays Use for it; and we are disenabled for the 'Want of it.

'Another Occasion of our great Wants is, those 'many Disbursements, at several Times, for our 'several Services, that we have made; and the 'many Provisions we have issued for Arms, Am-'munition, and Victuals, upon extreme Exigents, 'for my Lord-General's Army: We have like-'wise issued out great Engagements to our Army 'that went twice into *Kent* and *Gloucester*, and 'done those great Services: We have issued out 'great Sums of Money, to raise Forces under Sir '*William Waller*, when he was broken all to 'Pieces; and some to those Forces now abroad.

'When

'When our Accounts are settled, we shall then 'crave Leave to tender them unto you; whereupon, we hope, we shall receive Satisfaction; 'for, since we bear the Charge of the Kingdom, 'we should be repaid out of the Kingdom.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'Our Forces, now abroad, want Money; two 'Regiments of Horse, consisting of 14 Troops, 'and three Regiments of Foot, under the Com'mand of my Lord-General, have been abroad 'above a Month; besides three Regiments with 'Sir *William Waller*: Ten thousand Pounds for 'those with my Lord-General; and four or five 'thousand to those with Sir *William Waller*. 'They are Citizens, civilly bred, and cannot make 'use of those Means for their Supply, as other 'common Soldiers do, that are used to the War; 'and now are brought to those Necessities that 'they must come home. We have used our ut'most Endeavour to supply them; but, at present, 'we cannot help them. We have addressed our'selves to my Lord-General, hoping to have had 'some of the Monies that was going to my Lord'General, for the Payment of our Forces. My 'Lord-General declared he was not able to spare 'it, unless it be the three thousand Pounds allotted 'him for the Recruiting his Army; and what ill 'Consequence this may produce, I am sorry to 'mention.

2. 'You are not ignorant that, for these many 'Months past, my Lord-General hath wanted 'Recruiting; and so weak, that he hath not been 'able to do the Service of the Kingdom, or re'strain the Enemy from enlarging his Quarters. 'Consider our City Forces were raised for the 'Guard of the City, and are Tradesmen, and 'when they are abroad, their Plow lieth still at 'home; and, besides, they lose their Employ'ment; and you cannot be ignorant that, if the 'Course be continued, it will be a great Wasting 'of Men.

'For preventing whereof this Remedy is of'fered, That my Lord General's Army be spee-

dily

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'dily recruited; and that the City of *London* may 'be considered of as a Place that hath much ad- 'vanced, and is drawn dry: Our rich Men are 'gone, because the City is the Place of Taxes 'and Burdens: Trade is decayed, and our Shops 'shut up in a great Measure: Our Poor do much 'increase: We desire you, for future Taxes, that 'they may bear but their Proportion, and not be 'over-burdened. I should be loth to be misun- 'derstood, that any that hear me should think we 'begin to be discouraged in the Service of the 'Parliament: Though our Difficulties be great, 'nay, if far greater, we shall no ways alter our 'Resolutions; but, according to our *Covenant*, do 'our Endeavours. We are not able, neither are 'we willing, to bear those Reproaches cast upon us, 'who do alledge that we are a turbulent and fac- 'tious People, and seditious; all for War, and will 'admit of no Peace on any Terms. These are 'bitter Aspersions out of black Mouths and bitter 'Pens. We are not willing to anticipate, but 'wait upon the Great Council, so we are not 'willing to bear such Aspersions; for it is Peace 'we pray for and fight for; but such a Peace as is 'for the Glory of God, and Safety of Religion: 'And this we desire to live to see, and to die ra- 'ther than to outlive it; and do wait your Time 'to take such Opportunity, in these Things, as 'may stand with your great Occasions; and, till 'then, we remain your humble Servants. This 'one Word more we desire to leave with you, To 'supply us with Monies as may lead us out of these 'Difficulties.'

'The Aldermen and Citizens were again called in, and Mr. Speaker, by the Command of the House, acquainted them, 'That the House had considered of what they had propounded unto them; and found it to be full of Weight; and to deserve a sadder and further Consideration, than to give a sudden and particular Answer unto: They had and would distribute it into such Way of Proceedings, as might give them the speediest and clear-

clearest Satisfaction. The House hath likewise taken Notice, how, upon all Occasions, they have expressed their Affections to the Public; and how, at this Time, they have assured them of their constant Resolution to continue in the Defence of Religion, Liberty, and Privileges of Parliament. He is commanded to return them, and by them the whole Committee of the Militia and City, hearty Thanks for their true Love and Zeal to the Public; and to assure them, that, neither in the Desires that they have now propounded, nor in any thing else that may advance the Public Security, shall they want the Encouragement and Assistance of this House.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Nov. 25. Amongst some other Papers of less Note, sent from *Scotland*, were read, in the House of Lords, Copies of two Letters from the King to the Council of State in that Kingdom: The Purport of the former, which was occasioned by a *Proclamation* they had issued, in the King's Name, requiring all Persons from Sixteen to Sixty to appear in Arms in Defence of the *Solemn League* and *Covenant*, we have already given. The other, which may be called his Majesty's last Effort to stop the Advancing of the *Scots* Army farther into *England*, with the Council's *Answer* to it, are too interesting to bear any Abridgment; and we therefore give them as they stand in the *Lords Journals*. And first, the King's *Letter*, dated from *Oxford*, the 26th of *September*, 1643.

CHARLES *R.*

Right Trusty and Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors, &c. *we greet you well*,

'NO Industry could hitherto so far have prevailed with us to gain any Belief, that our *Scots* Subjects would countenance, much less assist, this bloody Rebellion in *England*; yet we know not how to understand the Levying of Forces, both Horse and Foot, within our Native Kingdom, and the Entering of our Town of

The King's Letter to the Scots Council of State, against marching their Army into England.

'*Ber-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'*Berwick* in an hostile Manner. You are particularly trusted by us and our Parliament (and solemnly sworn) to be faithful in the Discharge of your Trust of seeing the Articles of the late *Treaty* observed, which here are most grossly violated; therefore we require you, as you will be answerable to God, to us, and to our Parliament, to take a speedy and present Order for recalling and suppressing these Forces.

'Our most malicious Enemies must bear us Witness, how religiously we have observed these Articles on our Part; whereof if we had not been more tender than the Advisers of this Breach have been of the Public Faith, it is obvious to any how easily we could have secured that Town from all Rebels.

'We have likewise thought fit to take Notice of the present Preparation in that our Kingdom, of raising an Army, by a new Authority, to come into our Kingdom of *England*, under a Pretence of securing themselves from the Invasions of a Popish and Prelatical Army, falsely alledged to be upon the Borders; such Forces as we have there being only for protecting of our distressed Subjects of *Berwick* and the *Holy Island* from the Invasion of the Rebels by their Ships, and for no other End: Such then as shelter themselves under that Pretext will find, from these, but a slender Warrant before God, who knows the Integrity of our Heart; and how inviolably we intend to preserve all that we have granted unto that Kingdom, so long as they shall suffer themselves to be capable of our Protection and those Favours.

'Therefore we do require you not only to oppose and suppress all such unwarrantable Levies; but, by your public *Declarations*, to disabuse those Rebels in *England*, who endeavour to engage you in their Rebellions, and accept Assistance from you.

'In all which we look for your ready Obedience; and, expecting a present Account thereof, we bid you heartily farewell.'

Next

Next was read a Copy of the Privy Council of *Scotland*'s *Anſwer* to the King at *Oxford*, dated at *Edinburgh*, the 19th of *October*. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Moſt Sacred Sovereign,

'WE received your Majeſty's two Letters of the 16th and 26th of *September* laſt; and as we ſhall ever be ready, by our Example, and Authority which your Majeſty and Parliament hath committed to us, to render and procure ſubmiſs and ready Obedience to all your Majeſty's juſt Commands; ſo we cannot, out of the Senſe of our Duty and Truſt put upon us, but expreſs our unfeigned Grief and Sorrow, that any ſhould preſume to give ſuch ſiniſter Informations and hard Impreſſions to your Majeſty, of the General Aſſembly of the Kirk of God and three Eſtates of this Kingdom; to brand their Proceedings with ſo heavy Imputations, as the Violation of their Religion, Allegiance to your Majeſty, and Laws of this Kingdom; and procuring ſuch Commandments as cannot, without Violation of all theſe, be obtempered. The entering into a mutual *League* and *Covenant* was reſolved upon by the General Aſſembly and Convention of Eſtates, after a mature Deliberation, as a chief Means for Preſervation of Religion, your Majeſty's Honour and Happineſs, and the Peace and Safety of your Kingdoms; and being embraced, as it now is in *England*, was thought fit to be enjoined to be taken by all your Majeſty's Subjects; and is accordingly, before the Receipt of your Majeſty's Letters, ordained, by the Commiſſioners of the General Aſſembly and Committee of Eſtates, to be, with all religious Solemnities, ſworn and ſubſcribed by all your Majeſty's Subjects of this Kingdom; as your Majeſty may perceive by the ſeveral Acts prefixed to the *Covenant*, which we have herewith ſent to your Majeſty. Their Anſwer.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'And since the General Assembly and Convention of Estates have thought fit and ordained 'this *Covenant* to be entered into, and that all 'who do take the same do solemnly swear, That 'they have no other End before their Eyes, but 'the Glory of God, the Preservation of Religion, 'your Majesty's Honour, and the true public Liberties and Peace of these Kingdoms; it is our 'earnest Prayer, and would be our exceeding 'great Joy, that your Majesty, as Defender of 'the Faith, and Monarch of the three Kingdoms, 'would, to the Rejoicing of the People of God, 'and Terror to all the Enemies of Religion, and 'of your Majesty's Greatness and Happiness, join 'your Royal Consent and Authority, and be the 'chief Maintainer and Promoter of this *Covenant*.

'The *Proclamation* of the 18th of *August*, by 'the Convention of Estates, wants not the Warrant of your Majesty's Royal Authority; for the 'whole *Proclamations* and *Citations* given out by 'any of your Majesty's Judicatories of this Kingdom, are, and ever have been, by the Laws 'and inviolable Practice thereof, emitted in your 'Majesty's Name; and if all the *Proclamations*, 'not immediately warranted by your Majesty's 'Self, shall be disobeyed, there can be no Obedience given here to your Majesty's Laws, which 'is the surest Rule of Obedience.

'And as the Estates of this your Majesty's 'Kingdom, during the Time of the late Convention, from the Apprehension of imminent Dangers to Religion, your Majesty's Person, and 'Peace of this Kingdom, thought then fit to put 'this Kingdom into a Posture of Defence, so doth 'the late *Cessation* in *Ireland*; whereby the Popish 'Rebels, (who are termed in the said *Cessation*, 'your Majesty's Catholic Subjects) who have massacred many Thousand Protestant Subjects there, 'are authorized to provide themselves with all 'Sorts of Arms and Ammunition, not only in 'your Majesty's Kingdoms, but also in all other

'King-

'Kingdoms and States with whom your Majesty 'is in League; and to prosecute all your Majesty's 'Protestant Subjects who shall not embrace the '*Cessation* offered, which is another just Ground 'to all your Majesty's Protestant Subjects, to join 'the more speedily and heartily in this mutual '*League* and *Covenant*, for the Defence of the Pro-'testant Religion, your Majesty's Honour, and for 'their own Safety: And as, by the Duty of our 'Place, we are obliged to this Freedom; so we 'are confident that your Majesty, in your Royal 'Wisdom, will, according to the Loyalty and Sin-'cerity of our Intentions, favourably construct 'that we cannot record nor publish these your 'Majesty's Letters; as that which would but 'grieve the Hearts of your good Subjects, and 'prove most disadvantageous to your Majesty's 'Service; which we shall ever study to advance, 'with that Affection and Fidelity which be-'cometh us.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Nothing else material occurring in this Month, we proceed to *December*.

The Assembly of Divines, sitting at *Westminster*, had made many Orders of Synod, which they presented to both Houses for their Approbation: These are, in some Measure, foreign to our Purpose, and too tedious to bear Recital. But as a Specimen of the Purity of their Intentions, and their earnest Endeavours towards reforming both the Religion and Morals of a wicked Age, take the following Extract from the *Lords Journals*.

December 1. The House was informed that some Divines were ready at the Door, to offer something to this House, from the Assembly; hereupon the Lords *ordered* they should be called in, and Dr. *Burgesse*, Mr. *Calamy*, Mr. *Obadiah Sedgewick*, and Mr. *Chambers*, presented to the House a *Petition*, which was read as followeth:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled in Parliament,

The humble MESSAGE and PETITION of the *Assembly* of *Divines*.

Petition from the Assembly of Divines, to appoint Godly Magistrates, &c.

THE Assembly of Divines, in all Humility and Discharge of their Duty to God and to this Honourable House, do inform your Lordships of the sad Complaints brought unto them from many Godly and Reverend Divines in and about London, concerning the daily Increase and Growth of all Manner of outrageous and intolerable Abominations; such as Drunkenness, Swearing, Uncleanness, and other crying Sins, in very many Places in this Kingdom, for Want of Godly and Zealous Magistrates to repress the same; which cannot but highly provoke the Lord to more Wrath against this Kingdom, in this Day of his Wrath already broken out upon his People, and render fruitless all your pious Endeavours for the Reformation and Weal of this Kingdom, unless it be effectually and speedily cured.

The Assembly, therefore, most humbly prayeth, That, according to your great Wisdom and Zeal for the Public, there may be a speedy appointing and settling of some Able, Godly, Prudent Magistrates, that may reside in all Places of the Kingdom where your Wisdom shall find it necessary; to give a speedy Stop to those high Provocations of Almighty God, and the most dangerous Supplanters of all our Hopes of Good from the Parliament or the Assembly.

Moreover, the Assembly having receiv'd a Paper, in the Behalf of some Godly and Hopeful Students of the University of Oxford, *with Request to recommend it to the Honourable Houses of Parliament; the Assembly, in all humble wise, presenteth the same to this most Honourable House, conceiving it worthy of your noble Thoughts and Favour, yet not presuming to interpose their Sense; and albeit they apprehend it to be a Business of extraordinary Consequence, for which much might be said, they lay all at your Lordships Feet.*

Lastly,

Lastly, *The Assembly having divers weighty Business imposed on them by one or both the Honourable Houses of Parliament, which do occasion extraordinary Labour to the Scribes, and lay upon them more Work than they are able to dispatch; the Assembly prayeth, That the Honourable Houses of Parliament would be pleased to add Mr.* John Wallis, *a Judicious and Godly young Man, to be an Amanuensis and Assistant to the Scribes in the Assembly, in this public Service.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

All which the Assembly most humbly submitteth to the Wisdom and Prudence of your Lordships, incessantly importuning the Throne of Grace to pour down richly and daily the choicest of his Graces upon your Honours, and to follow all your noble Endeavours with a Blessing to the King's Majesty, the Church, Kingdom, and yourselves,

HENRY ROBOROUGH, ADONIRAM BYFIELD, } Scribes.

Dec. 4. The Parliament had been greatly embarrassed with the Prince *D'Harcourt*, ever since his coming over in quality of a Mediator on the Part of the *French* King: And the House of Commons insisting on some Credentials being presented to either House, before they treated with him, the Matter was suspended for some Time. The Lords, indeed, seemed willing to relax this new assum'd Piece of Sovereignty, and only desired the Ambassador to sign any Memorial or Proposal to them with his Name. This occasioned a Conference between the two Houses, when a Committee was proposed, by the Lords, to sit and find out an Expedient, how the *French* Ambassador might make his Addresses to Parliament by subscribing his Name: But it was objected to by the Commons, and for these Reasons:

A Conference concerning the Manner of treating with the French Ambassador.

1st. 'Because the House of Commons do conceive, the two Houses cannot, as yet, take Notice of any Thing that hath proceeded from the Prince *D'Harcourt*, as a Person qualified from

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

the *French* King to treat with the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*; or that he can give Assurance that the *French* King will be obliged unto what he shall propound unto the two Houses: And untill such Time, the House of Commons do not think it agreeable to the Honour of the Houses, or safe for the Proceedings of Parliament, to appoint any Committee to consider of the Manner or Way of receiving what shall be propounded by the Prince *D'Harcourt*.

'The *French* Agent, Monsieur *De Boisinon*, lately sent from the *French* King to the Privy Council of *Scotland*, did first deliver in his Letters of Credence, before he presented that which he had to propound from the *French* King his Master.

2*dly*, 'If the Prince *D'Harcourt* have any Thing to propound from the *French* King to the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*, the House of Commons do conceive, that the Houses have done nothing to barr or hinder the Prince *D'Harcourt* from the usual and fitting Ways of Address to them, and such as are honourable for him: Because

1. 'He may apply himself to the Speaker of either or both Houses of Parliament, by himself, or such Persons as he shall intrust to that Purpose, to desire Audience, in the Name of the King his Master, for what he hath to propound from the *French* King to both or either Houses of the Parliament of *England*.

2. 'Or else, what he hath to propound from the King his Master to the Houses, he may direct either to the Houses themselves, or their Speakers, attested under his Hand; as is expected from the Ambassadors of *England*, and is practised by them in their Negotiations with foreign States. It is that also which the King himself useth in his Messages to the two Houses: And it is that which the *French* Agent, Monsieur *De Boisinon*, hath lately done to the Privy Council of *Scotland*; and that which

which the Miniſters of foreign States have done, and do, to the Parliament, upon Occaſion.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Next was read a Copy of the *French* King's Letter, ſent by Monſieur *De Boiſinon*, Agent to the *French* King, to the Council of *Scotland*, tranſlated into *Engliſh*.

The French King's Letter to the Council of Scotland,

Moſt Dear and Great Friends,

THere hath been, from all Times, Alliances between the Kings our Predeceſſors, and thoſe of Scotland, *which have been obſerved ſo ſacredly and faithfully, that the Faithfulneſs of the one and the other Nation hath been acknowledged and publiſhed as a Miracle to all the People of the World. We have been raiſed to the Command of the firſt and moſt famous Monarchy of* Europe, *and we would conſerve the Friendſhip of the moſt valorous Nation that inhabits it; and, to give Teſtimony hereof, bear Part in their Affairs. You have deputed unto us, with the Conſent of the King of* Great Britain, *Monſignor the Earl of* Lothian; *who, being returned ſatisfyed, we ſent you Monſieur* De Boiſinon, *by the Advice of the Queen Regent, our moſt honoured Lady and Mother, to carry you the Aſſurance of the Continuance of our Affection.*

He hath ſome Matters to propound to you; we pray you to receive Credence, in all which he ſhall ſay to you in our Behalf, and to apply yourſelves to give us Satisfaction therein, as our moſt true and moſt antient Allies. It is that which we promiſe ourſelf from your Prudence, and that you will not be failing to your own Intereſts; which ſhall ever be to us in ſingular Eſteem, ſo long as you have, for your Aim, the Obedience and Service of the King your Maſter. Thus we pray God to keep you, moſt Dear and Great Friends, in his moſt holy and divine Protection.

Written at Paris *the* 24*th of* September, 1643.

Sic Subſcribitur

LOUIS.

The

An. 19. Car. I. 1643.

The PROPOSITIONS *of Monsieur* De Boisinon *to the Council of* Scotland.

December.

And his Agent's Propositions to them.

'THAT, according to the Instructions which 'the Lords and Council of *Scotland* have 'given to the Earl of *Lothian*, their Deputy, with 'the Consent of the King of *Great Britain*, the said 'Lords, as far as their Power extends, should con-'firm the antient Alliances of *France* and *Scotland*.

'That, for this Effect, the *Scots* do not, di-'rectly nor indirectly, enter with Arms into *Eng-'land*, be it under Pretence to serve the King of '*Great Britain*, or of Religion, without express 'Commission from the King their Master; and, for 'as much as this Article presses the Most Christian 'King, to give a speedy and punctual Answer,

'That the Lords and Council of *Scotland* would 'have no Regard to the Difference of Religion in 'those who do inroll or shall be inrolled there to 'serve, according to the Example of the Most 'Christian King to such as serve in *France*; and be-'cause the Churches of *Scotland* have determined, 'in their Assembly, the contrary, that the Coun-'cil of *Scotland* would grant out an Order to re-'call the same.

'Monsieur *De Boisinon* hath Command from 'the King, his Master, to make yet some further '*Propositions*; but as these are the principal, and 'those which regard the holding fast, or breaking 'off, the Alliance of the two Kingdoms of *France* 'and *Scotland*, he is ordered to receive an Answer, 'in the first Place, to these.

PETER DE BOISINON.

The ANSWER *of the Council of* Scotland *to the* PROPOSITIONS, *which Monsieur* De Boisinon *hath made to them, from the Most Christian King.*

Their Answer.

'TO the *first*; When the Council of *Scotland* 'shall receive from the Earl of *Lothian* an 'Account of his Proceedings in his Employment in '*France*, they will, according to their Power,

'give

'give such a respectful Answer, as may shew their 'Willingness to renew and entertain the antient 'Alliance betwixt the Kingdoms of *Scotland* and '*France*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

'To the *second Article* they can give no Answer, 'seeing the Conserving of the Peace between the 'two Kingdoms is committed, by his Majesty and 'Estates of Parliament, to a Committee appointed 'for that Effect; and the late Convention of E-'states, having also received the *Propositions* from 'the Commissioners of both Houses of the Parlia-'ment of *England*, for the further securing of the 'Religion and Peace of their Kingdom, have in-'trusted the Consideration thereof to a Commit-'tee of their own Members; who the Council are 'confident will proceed in these Affairs as beco-'meth them, in Duty and Conscience towards 'God, in Loyalty to the King, and in respect of 'the Good of the Kingdom.

'To the *third Article*; since the National As-'sembly of the Church of *Scotland* is independent, 'what hath been concluded by them cannot be re-'called by the Council.

'As the Council hath answered the principal '*Propositions* according to their Power, and in such 'Sort as can give no just Occasion of Offence to 'the *French* King; being willing, inviolably, to 'keep the Amity which hath been so religiously 'observed these many Years; they hope that 'those who have the Charge of the *French* King 'and his Affairs in his Nonage, will be better ad-'vised than to make the Particulars any Occasion 'of Breach with his antient Allies, whom his Royal 'Predecessors, in their greatest Difficulties, hath 'found to be the readiest and surest Friends.

'So that when any other *Propositions* shall be 'made to them by Monsieur *De Boisinon*, they will 'return such an Answer thereunto as appertaineth.'

But to return to the further Progress of the War.

Dec. 5. The Lord-General *Essex* informed the Lords, That he had received Advice from Sir *Wil-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

William Waller, acquainting him the King was advancing to *Basing*, which Place Sir *William* had besieged. That the Parliament's Army under Sir *William* was very weak, and desired them to consider of a speedy Way, both to recruit and maintain it. Referred to a Conference.

The Earl of Warwick appointed Lord High-Admiral of England, by the Parliament.

The Lords and Commons having made an *Ordinance* for constituting *Robert* Earl of *Warwick* Lord High-Admiral of *England*: This Day, *Dec.* 9, his Lordship moved in the House, That the Lords would take it into their present Consideration, how to make Provision of Flesh, Ammunition, and other Necessaries, for setting forth the next Year's Navy: That this was the Month proper for such Provision, or else it would be impossible to get the Navy fitted out in Time: That, upon Advice, it was thought fit to have, at least, 46 Ships to guard the Seas; and 60,000*l.* was required to be presently advanced for Provisions, *&c.* as appeared by an Estimate made for that Purpose.

It is certain by this, that the Parliament was under a Dread that *France*, or some other foreign Power, would exert themselves in the King's Favour, which made them agree to equip such a Fleet to prevent it. It may not be amiss to give here the Estimate, to inform the present Age of the Expence thought necessary for such an Equipment in the last.

The CERTIFICATE *and* ESTIMATE *of the Charge of the Fleet, sent to the Lord-Admiral from the Commissioners of the Navy.*

An Estimate of the Charge of the Fleet.

'ACcording to your Lordship's Order, we 'have seriously debated what Number of 'Men are requisite for a Fleet for the next Year's 'Service; and do humbly conceive there cannot 'be less than 5000 allotted for the Service of the 'Fleet, if the State resolve to keep the Seas in 'Safety.

'These

'These 5000 Men will supply 46 Sail of Ships, 'viz.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

2 of the second Rank,
9 of the third Rank,
20 of the fourth Rank,
10 of the fifth Rank, and
5 of the sixth Rank.

'Of these 46 Ships there are 26 of his Majesty's that may be fitted for the Service, the rest, 'viz. 20, must be taken up in the River from the 'Merchants.

'We also conceive that those 46 Sail of Ships 'may be distributed thus:

10 to the *West*,
16 for *Ireland* and the *Severn*,
12 for the *Downs*, and
8 for the Coasts of *Scotland*, according to the Parliament's Agreement.

'We do also conceive that 3000 Men, in 30 'of his Majesty's and the Merchant Ships, will be 'a competent Winter Guard for the next Year.

'If your Lordship shall resolve to fix upon this 'Number of Men and Ships, for the next Year's 'Service, we humbly desire your Lordship to re-'present to the House the State of the whole Navy 'for this and the next Year's Service, in the Heads 'following, *viz.*

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
For the Charge of 5000 Men in 26 of his Majesty's and 20 Merchant Ships, for eight Months Service in the Year 1644 ——— ———	130,000	0	0
For the Charge of 3000 Men, in 30 Ships, for the next Winter's Guards, for five Months —— ——	60,000	0	0
For the ordinary Expence of the whole Navy, in Harbour, for the Year 1644 ———	18,000	0	0
Carried over	208,000	0	0

For

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
Brought over	208,000	0	0
For the Charge of the extraordinary and ordinary Expence of the next Year's Service, in the Office of the Ordnance, *per* Estimation —— ——	20,000	0	0
For the Victuals of 4000 Men, for six Months, in 40 Ships, supposed to be set at Sea, as Reprizals, according to a late *Ordinance* —— ——	24,000	0	0
For the Payment of the Ordinary for this Year's Winter Guard, now at Sea, the Freight of sundry Merchant Men already discharged, and for divers other Provisions due to sundry Men in this and the last Year's Service, the Sum of —— ——	40,000	0	0
Total	292,000	0	0

'Which said Sum of 292,000*l.* we desire may 'be settled out of the Revenues of the Customs 'and Excise, to be paid to the Treasurer of the 'Navy, before your Lordships proceed in the 'Service.

'We are confident little or nothing can be a-'bated with Safety; yet if the Houses shall not 'think fit to allow so great a Number of Men or 'Ships, we desire your Lordships that whatsoever 'they shall think fit to order, the Money may, in 'the first Place, be assigned to be paid into the 'Treasurer of the Navy before the Service be un-'dertaken; for we are not able to wade any fur-'ther in the Service, unless our Credit be pre-'served by current Payments.

'The Payment of the aforesaid Sum of 292,000*l.* 'may be seasonably supplied as followeth:

For

For Victuals and Stores for the Summer's Fleet —— —	50,000	0	0	An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.
For Victuals of Merchant Ships supposed to be set forth as Reprizals —— ——	10,000	0	0	

'The rest as the Service may require, and the 'State shall be enabled.

'We have propounded the Business of the Victuals to Mr. *Alcock*, who absolutely refuseth it by 'way of Contract, but yet offers his Endeavours 'in it by way of Account; provided he may be 'enabled with Monies to proceed chearfully therein, and have some other able Men joined with 'him in the Management of that Service. We 'believe we shall not be able to get any Men to 'undertake the Business by Contract, and therefore desire your Lordship to send unto Mr. *Alcock*, 'and settle the Business upon him as your Lordship shall think fit, that the Service may not suffer for Want of settling that Office; all which 'we leave to your Lordships Wisdoms, and remain, at your Lordships Command,

December 5, 1643.

RICHARD CARNLEY,
JOHN MORRIS,
JOHN HOLLAND.

The Earl of *Warwick* moved, That a Conference might be had presently with the House of Commons, to communicate this Estimate to them, and desire that some Course may be speedily taken to procure Monies and other Provisions, that no Time be lost to expedite this Business. This was done accordingly.

Dec. 11. Some *Orders*, made by the House of Commons this Day, give us Occasion to mention the Death of Mr. *Pym*, one of the most active Members that ever sat in that House: And the Respect they shewed to his Memory, is without a Precedent in the whole Course of these Inquiries. For we find, in the *Journals*, 'That a Committee, there named, was appointed to consider

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

The Death of Mr. Pym, to whose Memory the Commons order a Monument to be erected;

sider of the Estate of Mr. *Pym*, deceased, and to offer what they think fit to be done in Consideration of it to the House; likewise to take Care to prepare a Monument for him, at the Charge of the Common-Wealth. It was also ordered, that the Body of Mr. *Pym* be interred in *Westminster-Abbey*, without any Charge for breaking open the Ground there; and that the Speaker, with the whole House, do accompany his Body to the Interment.'

Mr. *Whitlocke* says, That Mr. *Pym* died the latter End of *May*. The Proceedings of Parliament since that Date, as well as the above-recited *Orders*, evidently prove this to be a Mistake: This *Memorialist* ascribes Mr. *Pym*'s Death, chiefly, to his excessive Fatigue in the Service of Parliament.*——Lord *Clarendon* says, He died of the *Morbus Pediculosus*; and, after the highest Commendation of his Abilities, and the heaviest Censure of his Actions, concludes with saying, 'That as, during his Sickness, he was a very sad Spectacle, so that none were admitted to him who had not concurred with him, it is not known what his last Thoughts and Considerations were.†—— But Mr. *Rushworth* says, 'The Report of his dying of the Distemper beforementioned was not true; and that, for public Satisfaction therein, his dead Body was for some Time exposed to, and viewed by, many Hundreds of People: The true natural Cause of his Death seeming to be the great Pains he took, joined with a competent old Age, and, at best, but an infirm Constitution.' He also gives us a long *Declaration* of Mr. *Pym*'s, setting forth the Grounds and Reasons of his Conduct in Parliament; which he had caused to be printed and published some Time before his Decease. ‡

By some subsequent *Orders*, it appears that Mr. *Pym* died greatly in Debt, though possessed of the Place of Lieutenant of the Ordnance; for, *Jan.* 13, we find the Commons referred it to the

* *Memorials*, p. 66.—† *Clarendon*, Vol. III. 8vo. p. 462.—‡ *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 376.

the aforesaid Committee to consider of some other Way for a Recompence to the Posterity of Mr *Pym*, and Payment of those Debts he had contracted for the Service of the Common-Wealth, than they had yet thought on; and to use all Diligence to find out some fit Return, answerable to the Memory and Merit of so great a Man. Accordingly, afterwards, the whole House undertook to pay the Debts of Mr. *Pym*, not exceeding 10,000*l.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

And vote 10,000 l. for Payment of his Debts.

This Digression, upon so unprecedented an Instance, the Reader will excuse: Proceed we now with the Thread of our History.

Dec. 12. In the Business of this Day, amongst the Lords, we find this Entry, 'It was moved that this House should declare it, as their Opinion, that no Member of either House of Parliament might be admitted to execute any Place of Profit; and a Committee of seven Lords were ordered to draw up an *Order*, and word it to that Sense.' These withdrawing, soon returned with such an *Order*; and then the Question was put, Whether that Paper, now read, should be entered as the *Opinion* and *Resolution* of this House? Which passed in the Affirmative.

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, 'That the *Opinion* and *Resolution* of this House is, from henceforth, not to admit the Members of either House of Parliament into any Place or Office, excepting such Places of great Trust as are to be executed by Persons of Eminency and known Integrity, and are necessary for the Government and Safety of the Kingdom.

But another Question being put, Whether this shall be drawn up into an *Ordinance?* it passed in the Negative. Thus this Political Test was quashed for this Time, but 'tis probable it gave Rise to the famous *Self-denying Ordinance* afterwards.

The Earl of *Holland*'s Return to the Parliament has been mentioned before; and this Day, *Dec.* 16, a remarkable Letter of his, by way of Petition to

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

to the Lords, was read, containing the Motives that induced this unsteady Nobleman to change Sides; which he did so often, that, at last, he fell a Sacrifice to his own Instability.

To my LORDS the PEERS,

The HUMBLE PETITION of HENRY Earl of HOLLAND.

My Lords,

The Earl of Holland's Petition to Parliament, upon his revolting from the King.

I Have already, by your Favours, received a Degree of Liberty; and do hope that, upon this my humble Request, it may be fully granted me, with the Discharge of the late Sequestration, that yet rests upon the little Remainder of my Fortune; it not being the tenth Part of what I have lost since the Parliament began.

My Lords, I have not made any Use of that which I conceived would have given me a very assured Protection here, viz. *the Invitation and Persuasion of our General to return; in whom I conceived a Power very full and natural to invite and to persuade any, both how to add to this and lessen the other Side; which is done, in some Measure, in every Person of the least Consideration. This, I am very confident his Excellency will avow in my Particular; the Inquiry of which I leave to your Lordships Wisdom, and likewise all which concerns me, both in Honour and Fortune, to your Goodness.*

HOLLAND.

The Speaker was ordered to write to the Lord-General, to desire him to inform this House what he knows concerning the Earl of *Holland*'s Return, and what Invitation he received from him. In the mean Time the Earl was allowed to go into the Country, for a few Days, with the Lord-Admiral. And, soon after, on the Receipt of a satisfactory Answer from the Lord-General, as to what the Earl had advanced, he was *ordered*, by the Lords, to have full Liberty, and his Sequestration taken off: But in the House of Commons the

the Question being put, Whether he was guilty of deserting the Parliament? it was carried in the Negative, only by 75 against 60.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Dec. 20. A Conference was held between the two Houses, wherein the Lords communicated some Letters they had received from the Lord-General *Essex*. As these and such-like Letters are the most authentic History of the Times, we shall make no Apology for the Number of them. And first the *Letter* from the Earl of *Essex* to the Speaker of the House of Peers:

Letters from the Earl of Essex and the Committee of Safety, relating to the Parliament's Army.

My Lord,

I Received a Letter *from the Committee of Safety, the* 14*th of this Instant, concerning the removing of my Army towards Sir* William Waller's *Quarters; to which I returned an* Answer *of the Inconveniences that might follow that Advice, both which* Letters *I herewith send you. This Day I received another to the same Purpose, which your Lordship will now receive, and perceive therein that it is reported that Prince* Rupert *is marching that Way; which the Committee, in their great and constant Care to the Public, have very affectionately acquainted me with; apprehending, that if any thing might befall those Forces with Sir* William Waller, *I might lie under an undeserved Censure by common Detractors.*

I thought it my Duty to acquaint both the Houses with all these Letters; *and, withall, with my Opinion of those Inconveniences that might follow my Removal at this Time; and that the Army cannot now march, having so many Men out in Parties about* Newport-Pagnell, *every Company in each Regiment being thereby divided. Out of the Relief which I am promised, within five or six Days to be sent hither, the* Newport *Men, when they come back, will expect their Pay, having been so long without, and done so good Service; and the rest of the Officers also being in so great Want, as your Lordships may perceive by the inclosed Copy of another*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Letter *of mine to the Committee of Safety: So that, if the Forces be taken from hence, it is impossible to secure* Bedfordshire, Hertfordshire, *and* Essex *from the Enemy; there being a very long Line to keep, and my Lord of* Manchester *having but* 500 *Horse here, and most of the Remainder of his Horse being in* Lincolnshire, *and also the greatest Part of his Foot, as yet.*

I likewise conceive Sir William Waller *cannot be in any great Danger, having the Benefit of so safe a Place as* Farnham, *now fortified, that the Enemy, especially in this Season of the Year, will not be able to do him Harm; besides, the Addition of Strength I sent him is so considerable, being near* 600 *Horse, and so well commanded, that I hold them able to encounter with* 1000 *of the Enemy's.*

My Lord, I am to crave your Pardon for this long Diversion from your great Affairs, by these inclosed Papers; but the Tenderness of my Honour, and my Fidelity to the Parliament, which I value above myself, emboldens me to it. I am,

My Lord,

St. Alban's, Dec. 18. 1643.

Your Lordship's Servant,

ESSEX.

The COMMITTEE of SAFETY's *Letter* to the Earl of ESSEX referred to in the foregoing.

May it please your Excellency,

WE understood by your Lordship's Letter *the last Night to Sir* Philip Stapylton, *that your Excellency had designed Col.* Behre *to march with* 500 *Horse towards the Relief of Sir* William Waller. *We conceive his being with Sir* William Waller *at this Time with so many Horse, will be of so great Use to the Public, that we desire your Excellency to hasten him thither with what Speed you possibly may.*

We hear that most of the King's Forces about Towcester *are removed* Southward, *to join with the*

the Lord Hopton; *which, if your Excellency find to be so, we humbly offer unto your most serious Consideration, whether it will not be necessary for your Lordship to remove your Quarters nearer to* Farnham, *or to send some Foot speedily thither to Sir* William Waller; *or, otherwise, he will not be able to prosecute this great Advantage which he hath now gotten; for the King's Forces increase in* Hampshire *and* Sussex, *and divers new Regiments are raising there, which would prove very prejudicial to the Public, unless presently prevented; which we hope your Lordship, in your Wisdom, will find a Way to remedy, seeing the Safety of this Place and the whole Kingdom is so much concern'd in it.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

We desire your Lordship's Answer *by this Express, that we may frame our Resolutions accordingly. We remain*

Your Lordship's

Most affectionate,

Dec. 14, 1643.

and most humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND,
PEMBROKE *and* MONTGOMERY,
WILLIAM PIERPOINT,
ARTH. HASLERIG,
H. VANE,
ANTH. NICHOLS.

The Earl's ANSWER.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

ALthough the Horse are extreamly behind for want of Pay, and want both Horses and Arms, yet I hope to have 500 *Horse ready to march upon* Saturday *Morning, with Col.* Behre, *towards Sir* William Waller; *and, for that Purpose, have stopped giving him Commission to be Commissary-General of the Horse, because he may receive his Directions from Sir* William Waller *during such Time as I can spare him there.*

To the second Part of your Lordships Letter; I have often inform'd your Lordships, both by Letters and also by Word of Mouth, That I have not one

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

whole Company amongst the Foot, they being divided, Half here, and Half at Newport; *and, till that Garrison be furnished, cannot take them away, unless your Lordships Pleasure be to quit* Newport *and those Parts, which would be absolute Ruin to all these Counties; so that, unless the Parliament command it, I do not chuse to give Way unto it; and besides, they will be presently in such Want of Money, that, without there be an Order taken for their Pay till the* Ordinance *begins, I shall hardly be able to keep them together any where, much less to recruit them.*

When I was last in London, *the Foot being drawn into Arms, it was spread amongst them, That the Reason of their Drawing into the Field, was to take out a Party to send to Sir* William Waller; *upon which there was a Mutiny amongst them, with a Resolution, That whose Lot soever it should be to march, the rest would oppose it.*

I hoped now, that I have spared so great a Strength of Horse from these Parts, there will be a Care taken for the Supply of Horse and Arms; most of the Horsemen being on Foot, the strongest Troops sent away, and divers of the Counties not having sent in the Numbers of Horse they promised; especially Middlesex, *from whence I have had but* 55 *of* 200.

The Enemy are fortifying at Greenland, *near* Henley, *which will be a great Prejudice both to the River and* Windsor; *but, by reason of my sending off those Horse, I shall not be able to do that to them which I intended. I thought fit to acquaint your Lordships with it, lest it should be laid to me hereafter as a Neglect.*

Your Lordships Servant,

St. Alban's, Dec. 14. 1643.

ESSEX.

The COMMITTEE of SAFETY's second *Letter* to the Earl of ESSEX.

May it please your Excellency,

WE have received several Advertisements, that Prince Rupert, *with* 6000 *Horse and Foot, is on his March from* Oxon *towards Sir* William Waller;

Waller; *so that we doubt, unless some considerable Force be presently sent to his Assistance, he may be suddenly distressed, and run the Hazard of the Loss of his Brigade, which will endanger* Kent *and that Association: We therefore humbly offer our Advice to your Excellency, to march forthwith to* Windsor, *or some other Place near Sir* William Waller's *Quarters, for the securing him and his Forces from that Power and Strength, which is now drawing thither under the Command of Prince* Rupert. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

We shall not fail to do our utmost Endeavours for advancing Money for the Payment of your Excellency's Army, and conveying it to the Place which your Excellency shall appoint, in your March, so soon as we shall hear from your Excellency.

And we farther offer it to your Excellency's Consideration, whether you think not fit to send a Dispatch to the Earl of Manchester, *to draw up his Forces towards* Newport-Pagnell, *for the securing thereof and the Parts adjacent. These Things are recommended to your Lordship by*

Your Excellency's

Most affectionate Friends,

Westminster, Dec. 18. 1643.

and humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND, BOLINGBROKE,
WARWICK, DENZIL HOLLES,
SAY *and* SELE, ANTHO. NICHOLS.

The other *Letter* from the Earl of ESSEX to the COMMITTEE of SAFETY, mentioned in his Lordship's *Letter* to the Speaker, was in these Words:

My Lords and Gentlemen,

According to your Directions, I have sent your Lordships this Commission, which you'll please to send to Sir Thomas Fairfax, *hoping, by this Time, he is upon his March.*

There is hardly Money left to pay a Messenger; for of the last 23,000 l. *which was sent down for Re-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Recruits, 700 l. *went for the Garrison of* Aylesbury, *besides the better Part of* 200 l. *more sent thither since, to make up the Fortnight's Pay: All the Horse and Foot here, and at* Newport, *are paid compleat for fourteen Days, and a Week's Pay for the Foot at* St. Alban's, *from the Serjeant downwards.*

Yesterday there was a great Mutiny of 3 *or* 400 *gathered together, threatening to pillage the Town; but my Coming presently dispersed them, otherwise great Mischief would have been done, it being Market-Day.*

I have likewise another Week's Pay for the Foot, from the Sergeants downwards, for To-morrow, which is all the Money that is left, tho' I have paid nothing else but what bleeding Necessity compelled me to, of which I am ready to give an Account; having not been able to relieve divers, whereof some are Captains of my own Regiment, that, thro' Sickness and Hurts, are ready to perish; and how the other Officers will do for Want of Pay, I know not.

The Train of Artillery, who have done real and faithful Services to the State, are grown to that Necessity, as you may perceive by the Petition * *inclosed, that if there be not Pay provided for them by the latter End of this Week, both for those here and those that come from* Newport, *I shall never be able to keep them together without plundering the Country.*

Col. Behre *is gone with the Horse, though they have been long without Pay; and if the Horse in Sir* William Waller's *Brigade be paid, and they unpaid, I fear the Issue; though, otherwise, I never saw Men better contented with so little Pay as the Horse have generally been.*

My humble Desire is, That if there be no Pay like to come to me by the latter End of this Week, I may know so; I not being able to stay amongst them to hear the crying Necessity of the hungry Soldiers. I have likewise sent your Lordships Sir William Brereton's *Letter* *, *that you may take it into your*

* We do not meet with this *Letter*, or *Petition* above referred to in the *Journals*.

your further Care, I not being able to spare any out of this Army. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Your Lordships Servant,

Dec. 17. 1643.

ESSEX.

The *Votes* passed by the Lords, after reading the foregoing *Letters*, to which the Commons, also, agreed, were, That they approved of the Counsel given to the Lord-General by the Committee of Safety; and that he be desired to pursue it: That Letters should be written to him and the rest, to that Effect; and a Committee of both Houses was appointed to draw them up accordingly.

The same Day, in the Afternoon, Copies of these Letters, so ordered, were read in the House of Lords, and, afterwards, approved by both Houses, as follows:

Our very good Lord,

And the Answers of both Houses.

WE are commanded, by both Houses, to acquaint your Lordship, That they have received your Letter of the 18th present, with the enclosed Copies of Letters between the Committee of Safety and your Excellency; and having well weighed the Grounds expressed in the Letters from the Committee of Safety to your Lordship, and taking into Consideration how necessary it is that the Passages should be secured, where the Forces of the Enemy may break into Surrey, Middlesex, *and* Kent, *they have thought fit to approve of the Advice given to your Lordship by the Committee of Safety, for the speedy drawing your Lordship's Forces towards* Windsor, *or those Parts; especially seeing Sir* William Waller *is now marched towards* Arundel *with all his Forces, and left only a Garrison in* Farnham-Castle; *and that Sir* Ralph Hopton *(as the Houses are informed) hath drawn all the Forces he can make towards* Basing. *And to the end that the Counties, where your Lordship's Army is now quartered, may not be exposed to Danger, by the*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

the breaking in of the Enemy's Forces upon your Lordſhip's marching from thence, the two Houſes have written a Letter (a Copy whereof they ſend your Lordſhip here encloſed) to the Earl of Mancheſter, *in purſuance of the Advice lately given your Lordſhip by the Committee of Safety, and the Directions from your Lordſhip in that Behalf, for to draw up ſpeedily the Forces under his Lordſhip's Command, for the Security of thoſe Counties. The Houſes have likewiſe ſent another Letter (the Copy whereof is here encloſed) unto the Committee of the Militia of* Hertfordſhire, *for the ſpeedy ſending into* Newport-Pagnell *the Forces intended for that Garriſon: And therefore we are ordered by both Houſes, to deſire your Lordſhip that,* Newport-Pagnell *being ſecured, your Lordſhip do purſue the Advice given your Excellency by the Committee of Safety, for the drawing your Forces towards* Windſor, *or thoſe Parts; which will be, as they conceive, of the greateſt Security to this City, and the Counties moſt threatened and ſubject to Danger. And ſo we bid your Lordſhip heartily farewell, being*

Your Lordſhip's affectionate

Weſtminſter, Dec. 20. 1643.

Friends and Servants,

WHARTON,
Speaker of the Houſe of Peers *pro Tempore.*

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the Commons Houſe in Parliament.

The *Letter* to the Earl of MANCHESTER, mentioned as encloſed in the foregoing.

Our very good Lord,

WE are commanded, by the Houſes, to ſend this Diſpatch unto your Lordſhip, in purſuance of what you have already received from the Committee of

of Safety, and likewise, we doubt not, will receive from his Excellency; that accordingly your Lordship will, with your Forces, march towards Newport-Pagnell, *or such other Place as his Excellency shall judge most convenient for the securing those Parts; which, upon his Removal to oppose the great Forces which are gathering together to break in upon the Coast of* Sussex *or* Surrey, *will else be left naked, and give an Inlet to any Attempt of the Enemy for the invading us on that Side; both these, being equally mischievous, must be equally provided for; and we do not doubt of your Lordship's Readiness to do any Thing which may conduce to the Public Good; nor are many Words needful to incite you to it, the very Proposal of it being sufficient.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

This being all we have in Charge from the Houses, nothing remains, but that we are,

Your Lordship's

Westminster, Dec. 20, 1642.

most affectionate

Friends and Servants,

Sign'd by the Speakers of both Houses as the foregoing.

The *Letter* from the PARLIAMENT to the COMMITTEE of MILITIA for *Hertfordshire*, above referred to.

Gentlemen,

WE are commanded, by both Houses of Parliament, to require you, forthwith to dispatch such of your Forces to Newport-Pagnell, *as may secure that Garrison; that my Lord-General may be enabled to march away* Westward, *the Enemy having drawn most of their Forces that Way; and therefore the Houses do presume your Care hath been such, that your Forces are already there, or upon their March, they having given you all the Assistance you desired to enable you thereunto, by passing the*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

the several Ordinances *you presented to them; yet, lest there should be any retarding of Business, so much importing the Public Safety, they thought fit to quicken you by this Express: And so, not doubting of your Care herein, we rest,*

Gentlemen,

Dec. 22. 1643.

Your Friends and Servants.

Sign'd by the Speakers as before.

Dec. 22. A Letter from Sir *William Waller* was read in the House of Lords; but, as there is *no Date* to it, we suppose, only, that it came from the Siege before *Basinghouse*.

A Letter from Sir William Waller,

My Lords,

According to your Commands, I advanced the last Lord's Day, from Farnham *towards this Place. I could not reach that Night past* Hallemore: *The next Day I marched to* Cowdrey; *where we understanding there were four Troops of Horse and* 100 *Foot, I resolved to give them the good Night; and, to that End, I dispatched away two Regiments of Horse to lay the Passages round; but they were too nimble for me, and escaped hither, where I overtook them on* Tuesday *Night. The next Morning, after we had taken a View, and found out a Place where we might flank their Line with our* Ordnance, *we fell on upon the* North *Side of the Works; and we did so scour a weedy Hill in the Park, on the* West *Side of the Pond, with our Pieces, that we made it too hot for them; which gave such Courage to our Men, that, with the same Breath, they assaulted an Intrenchment newly cast up, and which was very strong: It was drawn from the Town Gate down to the aforesaid Pond near the Hill. At the same Time we fell on a narrow Passage by the Mill, where they had likewise a double Work, and very strong; but in a short Time, by the good Hand of God, we forced both; and entered the Town with our Horse and Foot, not-*

notwithstanding a brave Sally made by their Horse. We beat them into the Castle, and entered the first Gate with them, the second they made good and barricaded, and they are there welcome to stay. I am resolved to block them up, for I know they are in a necessitous Condition. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

God hath been pleased to bless me hitherto with a gracious Success, his Great and Holy Name be praised for it; but truly, my Lords, I am very weak in Foot, and my Horse so hackny'd out, that they are ready to lie down under us. I expect Col. Behre *and Col.* Morley *here this Day.*

Dec. 25. Being *Christmas-Day*, is the first Time that we find the Houses sat to do Business on it. The Commons having sent Word to the Lords, That they intended such a Thing, their Lordships readily followed so pious an Example.

A *Letter* from the Earl of *Manchester*, dated from *Cambridge*, *Dec.* 22, was presented to the House of Lords this Day, and read in these Words: It was directed to the Lord *Wharton*.

My Lord,

I Have received your Lordship's Letter *from the House of Peers; I shall beseech your Lordship to offer my Service to the House, and to let them know that, according to the Lord-General's Orders, I have commanded* 600 *Foot to march to* Newport-Pagnell. *I have likewise sent a Regiment of Foot to lie at* Bedford, *with five Troops of Horse and two Troops of Dragoons. The greatest Part of the rest of the Forces, that is under my Command, is yet in* Lincolnshire; *and, at this present, engaged against* Gainsborough. From the Earl of Manchester.

I have no particular Direction from my Lord-General, whither to march with the rest that I have with me; which, at this present, do guard St. Neot's, Huntingdon, *and the Town of* Cambridge.

I am ready to my utmost, to be serviceable to the Houses, but am in some Trouble, because I have no par-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

particular Orders; seeing that the Letters from the House doth refer me to his Excellency's Orders and Directions. I am,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

E. MANCHESTER.

This Letter was referred to the Committee of Safety; and the Lord *Wharton* acquainted the House that he had received another Letter from the Lord-General, to desire him to inform the House, that the Reason he had not given Directions to the Earl of *Manchester* for disposing of his Forces, was, because he knew he was upon a Design at *Gainsborough*.

Dec. 30. The Commons ordered the Commissioners of their new Great Seal to bring in an *Ordinance* for the appointing and authorizing Sheriffs to execute their Offices, in the different Counties of *England*, for the Year ensuing: To consider of the Sheriffs Oath, and for taking off from them the Charges usually incident to such Places; and to enable them to go out of their Counties upon the Service of the Common-wealth.

Then the House proceeded to nominate all the High Sheriffs in *England*, whose Names are enter'd in their *Journal*; and also ordered, That the Commissioners of the Great Seal be desired forthwith to pass the several respective Patents for the Gentlemen, nominated and appointed by both Houses to be High Sheriffs of Counties, according to their several Nominations and Appointments. Thus was the King stripp'd of that antient Branch of the Royal Prerogative, in every County where the Parliament could command: And as he at the same Time nominated his own Sheriffs, this, alone, must breed the utmost Confusion in the Kingdom.

The same Day the Earl of *Northumberland*, from the Committee of Safety, reported their Opinion

pinion of Sir *William Waller*'s Letter, requiring a Supply of Men to withstand the Forces under *Hopton* *; that the Garrison of *Newport Pagnel* being now settled, the best Way would be to send to the Lord-General to draw his Forces into those Parts, that so he might be in a Place convenient to assist Sir *William Waller* upon all Occasions.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

This was agreed to, and the following Letter was ordered to be drawn up for that Purpose:

May it please your Excellency,

THere is Advertisement come from Sir William Waller, *giving Notice of the Preparation the Enemy makes to relieve* Arundel Castle, *and the Necessity there is of his present Supply; the Mischief which will else follow upon the whole Kingdom is easily foreseen. It is therefore desired that your Excellency will, forthwith, remove that Way with your Army, to* Windsor, *or to such other Place as you shall judge convenient; leaving* Newport-Pagnell *as well secured as the present Occasion will permit. Both Houses conceive it so absolutely necessary, that any Delay will be dangerous. This being all we have in charge to recommend to your Excellency's Care and your Zeal for the Public Service, we take our Leave, and rest*

And from the Committee of Safety.

Your Excellency's humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND, BOLINGBROKE,
WARWICK, DENZIL HOLLES,
SAY *and* SELE, ANTHO. NICHOLS.

Another Letter, and a very extraordinary one, was also read this Day in the House of Lords, from the Earl of *Bedford*; who, with the Earls of *Clare* and *Holland*, had deserted the Parliament, and

* Sir *Ralph Hopton*, Knight of the *Bath*, whom the King had created a Peer, by the Title of Baron *Hopton* of *Stratton*, the 4th of *September*, 1643: And by this coarse Expression of barely *Hopton* in the *Lords Journals*, it looks as if that House did not chuse to allow his Title, the Patent being pass'd since the Lord-keeper *Littleton* left the Parliament; or it might be so express'd in Sir *William Waller*'s Letter, who probably had not yet forgot his own Defeat in the *West*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Hereupon the Lords *ordered* that, for the present, the Earl of *Bedford* should stand committed to the safe Custody of the Gentleman-Usher attending that House; there to remain untill their Pleasure be further signified.

After all these, several Papers were read, which came from the Parliament's Commissioners in *Scotland*, relating to the *Treaty* then just concluded with that Kingdom, concerning the *Solemn League* and *Covenant*, and the Assistance demanded in pursuance of the Ends expressed therein: The *Articles* of which had been sent up by the Commons with their Approbation of them, and were referred by the Lords, to a Committee then appointed for that Purpose; and are as follows:

Articles between the English and Scots Parliaments concerning the latter's marching their Army into England.

'WHereas the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*, out of a just and deep Sense of the great and imminent Danger of the true Protestant Religion, in regard of the great Forces of Papists, Prelates, Malignants, and their Adherents, raised and employed against the constant Professors thereof in *England* and *Ireland*, thought fit to send their Commissioners unto the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to treat with the Convention of Estates and General Assembly there, concerning such Things as might tend to the Preservation of Religion, and the mutual Good of both Nations: And, to that end, to desire a more near and strict Union betwixt the two Kingdoms; and the Assistance of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, by a considerable Strength to be raised and sent by them into the Kingdom of *England*:

'And whereas, upon a Consultation held betwixt the Commissioners of the Parliament of *England*, and the Committees of the Convention of Estates and General Assembly, no Means was thought so expedient to accomplish and strengthen the Union, as for both Nations to enter into a *Solemn League* and *Covenant*, and a Form thereof to be drawn and presented to the two Houses

'of

'of the Parliament of *England*, the Convention 'of Estates, and General Assembly, of *Scotland*; 'which hath accordingly been done, and received 'their Approbation:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

'And whereas the Particulars, concerning the 'Assistance desired by the two Houses of the Par- 'liament of *England*, from their Brethren of *Scot- 'land*, were delivered in by the *English* Commis- 'sioners, *August* 19, to the Convention of Estates; 'who did thereupon give Power to their Commit- 'tee to consider and debate farther with the *En- 'glish* Commissioners, of what other *Propositions* 'might be added or concluded; whereby the As- 'sistance desired might be made more effectual and 'beneficial:

'And, in pursuance thereof, these *Propositions* 'following were considered of, and debated by the 'Committee and Commissioners aforesaid, to be 'certified, with all convenient Speed, to the two 'Houses of the Parliament of *England*, and the 'Convention of Estates of *Scotland*, by their re- 'spective Committees and Commissioners, to be 'respectively taken into their Consideration, and 'proceeded with as they shall find Cause: Which 'being accordingly done, and these ensuing *Pro- 'positions* approved, agreed, and concluded of by 'the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*, 'and the Committee of the Estates of *Scotland* 'respectively, and Power by them given to their 'respective Committees and Commissioners, to a- 'gree and conclude the same, as may appear by 'the *Votes* of both Houses, dated the 1st of *No- 'vember*, and the *Order* of the Committee, bear- 'ing Date the 17th of *November*: We the said 'Commissioners and Committees, according to 'their *Votes* and *Orders*, do formally conclude and 'agree upon these *Articles* following; and, in 'Confirmation thereof, do mutually subscribe the 'same.

I. 'It is agreed and concluded, That the *Co- 'venant* represented to the Convention of Estates

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

'and General Assembly of *Scotland*, and sent to 'both Houses of the Parliament of *England*, in 'the same Form as it is now returned from the 'two Houses of the Parliament of *England* to their 'Brethren of *Scotland*, and allowed by the Com-'mittee of Estates and Commissioners of the Ge-'neral Assembly, be sworn and subscribed by both 'Kingdoms, as a most near Tie and Conjunction 'between them, for their mutual Defence against 'the Papists and Prelatical Faction, and their Ad-'herents, in both Kingdoms, and for Pursuance 'of the Ends expressed in the said *Covenant*.

II. 'That an Army to this Purpose shall be le-'vied forthwith, consisting of 18,000 Foot effec-'tive, 2000 Horse, and 1000 Dragoons effec-'tive, with a suitable Train of Artillery, to be 'ready at some general Rendezvous, near the Bor-'ders of *England*, to march into *England* for the 'Purposes aforesaid, with all convenient Speed: 'The said Horse and Foot to be well and com-'pleatly armed, and provided with Victuals and 'Pay for forty Days; and the said Train of Ar-'tillery to be fitted in all Points ready to march.

III. 'That the Army be commanded by a Ge-'neral appointed by the Estates of *Scotland*, and 'subject to such Resolutions and Directions as are 'and shall be agreed and concluded on mutually 'between the two Kingdoms, or by Committees 'appointed by them in that Behalf, for Pursuance 'of the Ends before-mentioned

IV. 'That the Charge of Levying, Arm-'ing, and bringing the said Forces together 'furnished, as also the fitting the Train of Ar-'tillery in Readiness to march, be computed and 'set down, according to the same Rates, as if the 'Kingdom of *Scotland* were to raise the said Ar-'my for themselves and their own Affairs: All 'which, for the present, is to be done by the 'Kingdom of *Scotland* upon Account, and the Ac-'count to be delivered to the Commissioners of the 'Kingdom of *England*; and when the Peace of

'the

'the two Kingdoms is settled, the same to be re- An. 19. Car. I.
'paid, or satisfied, to the Kingdom of *Scotland*. 1643.

V. 'That this Army be likewise paid, as if the December.
'Kingdom of *Scotland* were to employ the same
'for their own Occasions; and towards the de-
'fraying thereof (it not amounting to the full
'Month's Pay) shall be Monthly allowed and
'paid the Sum of 30,000 *l.* Sterling, by the Par-
'liament of *England*, out of the Estates and Re-
'venues of the Papists, Prelates, Malignants,
'and their Adherents, or otherwise. And in case
'the said 30,000 *l.* Monthly, or any Part thereof,
'be not paid at the Time when it shall become
'due and payable, the Kingdom of *England* shall
'give the Public Faith for the paying of the Re-
'mainder, unpaid, with all possible Speed, allow-
'ing the Rate of eight Pounds *per Cent.* till the
'Time of the Performance thereof. And in case
'that, notwithstanding the said Monthly Sum of
'30,000 *l.* paid as aforesaid, the States and King-
'dom of *Scotland* shall have just Cause to demand
'farther Satisfaction of their Brethren of *England*;
'they shall, for the Pains, Hazard, and Charges they
'have undergone in the same, by way of Brother-
'ly Assistance, have due Recompence made unto
'them by the Kingdom of *England*, when the
'Peace of both Kingdoms is settled; and that out
'of such Lands and Estates of the Papists, Prelates,
'Malignants, and their Adherents, as the two
'Houses of Parliament shall think fit; and for the
'Assurance thereof the Public Faith of the King-
'dom of *England* shall be given them.

VI. 'And to the end the said Army, in Man-
'ner aforesaid, may be enabled and prepared to
'march, the Kingdom of *England* is to pay, in
'ready Money, to their Brethren of *Scotland*, or
'such as shall have Power from the Estates of
'that Kingdom, the Sum of 100,000 *l.* Sterling,
'at *Leith* or *Edinburgh*, with all convenient Speed,
'by way of Advance before-hand; which is to be
'discounted back again unto the Kingdom of *Eng-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

'*land*, by the Kingdom of *Scotland*, upon the first 'Monthly Allowance, which shall grow due to the '*Scots* Army, from the Time they shall make 'their first Entrance into the Kingdom of *Eng*-'*land*.

VII. 'That the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to ma-'nifest their Willingness to their utmost Ability 'to be helpful to their Brethren of *England* in 'this common Cause, will give the Public Faith 'of the Kingdom of *Scotland* to be jointly made 'use of with the Public Faith of the Kingdom 'of *England*, for the present taking up 200,000*l.* 'Sterling, in the Kingdom of *England* or else-'where, for speedy Payment of the said 100,000*l.* 'Sterling as aforesaid, as also a considerable Sum 'for satisfying, in good Proportion, the Arrears of 'the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*.

VIII. 'That no *Cessation*, nor any *Pacification* 'or Agreement of Peace whatsoever, shall be 'made by either Kingdom, or the Armies of 'either Kingdom, without the mutual Advice and 'Consent of both Kingdoms, or their Committees 'in that Behalf appointed, who are to have full 'Power for the same; in case the Houses of the 'Parliament of *England*, or the Parliament or 'Convention of Estates of *Scotland*, shall not 'sit.

IX. 'That the Public Faith of the Kingdom of '*Scotland* shall be given to their Brethren of *Eng*-'*land*, that neither their Entrance into, nor their 'Continuance in, the Kingdom of *England*, shall be 'made use of to any other Ends than are expressed 'in the *Covenant*, and in the *Articles* of this *Trea*-'*ty*; and that all Matters of Difference, that shall 'happen to arise between the Subjects of the two 'Nations, shall be resolved and determined by 'the mutual Advice and Consent of both King-'doms, or by such Committees as for this Pur-'pose shall be by them appointed, with the same 'Power, as in the precedent Article.

X. 'That

'X. 'That in the ſame Manner, and upon 'the ſame Conditions, as the Kingdom of *Scot-* '*land* is now willing to aid and aſſiſt their Brethren 'of *England*, the Kingdom of *England* doth o- 'blige themſelves to aid and aſſiſt the Kingdom 'of *Scotland*, in the ſame or like Caſes of Straits 'and Extremities.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

'*Laſtly*, It is agreed and concluded, That du- 'ring the Time that the *Scots* Army ſhall be em- 'ployed as aforeſaid, for the Defence of the 'Kingdom of *Scotland* there ſhall be fitted out, 'as Men of War, eight Ships, whereof ſix ſhall 'be of Burden betwixt 120 and 200 Ton, the 'other betwixt 3 and 400 Ton, whereof two 'ſhall be in lieu of the two Ships appointed by 'the *Iriſh* Treaty; all which ſhall be maintained 'at the Charge of the Kingdom of *England*, to 'be employed for the Defence of the Coaſt of '*Scotland*, under ſuch Commanders as the Earl 'of *Warwick*, for the Time of his being Admi- 'ral, ſhall nominate, with the Approbation of 'the Committees of both Kingdoms; which Com- 'manders ſhall receive, from the ſaid Earl, ge- 'neral Inſtructions, that they do from Time to 'Time obſerve the Directions of the Commit- 'tees of both Kingdoms.'

Next follow the ſeveral *Declarations*, *&c.* of the Convention of Eſtates of *Scotland*, before and at their Army's entring into *England*, which, for Brevity's Sake, we paſs over with a Reference*; and ſhall only mention that, with the former Papers, came Receipts for 50,000 *l.* paid at *Edinburgh*, as Part of the 200,000 *l.* ſtipulated for; and that it was only demanded, That the Garriſon at *Berwick*, being now delivered up to the *Scots*, ſhould be paid from henceforth by them.

The King, to obviate as much as poſſible this Confederacy of the Parliaments of both King-

* *Ruſhworth*, Vol. V. p. 487, *et ultra*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

doms against him, issued a *Proclamation*, inviting all such Members of both Houses as had already left their Seats at *Westminster*, or were inclined to do so, to meet him at *Oxford*, and consult of the best Measures for his own Safety. So great a Number obeyed this Summons, that they, soon after, form'd a Convention or Anti-Parliament: But their Proceedings, which lasted three Months, and which, for Connection Sake, we shall give without the Intervention of any other Matters, are too many and various to be comprised in this Volume.

Which occasions the King to call a Convention of Members at Oxford.

The END of the TWELFTH VOLUME.